

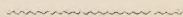
Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

COLLECTIONS

OF THE

MAINE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

VOL. III.



S. P. Public Library

PORTLAND:

PUBLISHED FOR THE SOCIETY.

1853.

x974.1

M284c³

446043

BROWN THURSTON, PRINTER, PORTLAND, ME.

CONTENTS.

By-Laws and Regulations,	Page 7
Members of the Society,	11
Officers of the Society,	14
Letter from J. W. Thornton,	15

ARTICLE.		PAGE.
I.	History of Scarborough,	1—237
II.	History of the Bunker Hill Monument,	239
III.	A Contribution to the History of Bath,	271
IV.	An Account of Popham's Colony at the Mouth of the Kennebec River, by Wm. Strachey, with an Intro- duction by Wm. S. Bartlett,	278
V.	Early Settlements of Sagadahock and on the Andros- coggin River,	311
VI.	Richard Wharton's Patent to land on the Androscog- gin, 1686, with the Depositions of John Reding, Francis Neale, Rich'd Collicut and Perepole, the Indian,	325
VII.	Petition of Richard Fry to Gov. Belcher and the Gen- eral Assembly of Massachusetts,	335
VIII.	Original Letter from Dr. Franklin, 1735,	339
IX.	Indian Troubles in Maine, 1702—1704,	342
X.	A Memorial to the Gov. &c., of Massachusetts, by Chief Justice Sewall, 1721,	351
XI.	John Gyles' Statement of the Number of Indians in each Tribe in 1726,	354
XII.	Indian Treaties,	359
	No. 1. 1717 at Georgetown, Maine,	361
	No. 2. 1726 at Falmouth, Maine,	377
	No. 3. 1727 at Falmouth, Maine,	407

BY-LAWS AND REGULATIONS
OF THE
MAINE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

BY-LAWS AND REGULATIONS.

ARTICLE 1. Those members of the Society, who shall reside in the State of Maine, shall be denominated *Resident Members*: all others *Corresponding Members*. *Resident Members* alone shall be required to contribute to the funds of the Society.

ART. 2. Each resident member shall pay *Ten Dollars* at the time of his admission, and *One Dollar* annually, to create a fund for the benefit of the institution.*

ART. 3. If any resident member shall neglect to pay his admission money for one year after being apprised of his election, the said election shall be considered void. And if any member shall neglect to pay his annual assessment for the space of two years after it becomes due, the Treasurer shall notify him of his neglect; and unless payment shall then be made, he shall no longer be considered a member of the Society. Each member at his election shall be furnished with a copy of the By-Laws and Regulations of the Society.

ART. 4. All elections of Officers and Members shall be made by ballot. No member shall nominate more than one candidate at the same meeting; and all nominations shall be made at a meeting previous to that at which the ballot is to be taken.—Provided nevertheless, that, at any annual meeting, at which not less than nine members are present, it shall be lawful to proceed forthwith to ballot for and elect any person member, who shall have been nominated at the same meeting, two thirds of the members present concurring in the vote to proceed to such election.

ART. 5. It shall be the duty of the President, and in his absence, of the Recording or Corresponding Secretary, to call occasional meetings of the Society, on the application in writing of the Standing Committee, or any five members.

* At the annual meeting, Sept. 1, 1852, the collection of the annual assessment of *one dollar* was suspended, until further order.

ART. 6. There shall be chosen at the annual meeting a President, Recording Secretary, Corresponding Secretary, a Treasurer, a Librarian, a Cabinet-Keeper, a Standing Committee of five, and, whenever it shall be thought proper, a Publishing Committee.

ART. 7. For the election of members, as well as for making alterations in, or additions to the By-Laws and Regulations of the Society, it shall be necessary that nine members be present, and that two-thirds vote in the affirmative, but for the transaction of other business, five members shall constitute a quorum.

ART. 8. The time and place of every meeting shall be published in at least two of the newspapers of the State.

STANDING COMMITTEE.

ART. 1. The Standing Committee shall regulate all the common expenses of the Society, and make the necessary purchases of such small articles as may be wanted, and shall have power to draw on the Treasurer to defray the expense.

ART. 2. They shall assist the Librarian and Cabinet-keeper, when it shall be necessary, in arranging and preserving the books, manuscripts &c. belonging to the Society.

ART. 3. They shall frequently inspect the Records, and inquire whether all the orders of the Society are carried into effect with promptitude and fidelity.

ART. 4. It shall be a part of their duty to inquire for, and take judicious measures, within the means of the Society, to procure books, manuscripts and articles of curiosity for the benefit of the Institution.

ART. 5. They shall prepare such business, as may deserve the attention of the Society.

THE LIBRARY AND MUSEUM.

ART. 1. At every annual meeting of the Society, a catalogue of the books, pamphlets, manuscripts, and maps shall be laid before the Society by the Librarian, and a catalogue of the curiosities by the Cabinet-keeper.

ART. 2. Once every year the Standing Committee shall report to the Society respecting the state of the Library and Museum.

ART. 3. No book shall be taken from the Library but with the knowledge of the Librarian, who shall make a record of the same. A member shall not have more than three books at a time without permission from the Society. No member shall retain a book more than eight weeks, without leave of the Standing Committee: nor without the same leave, be permitted, after leaving

it for this period, to return and receive it again, and after an interval of three months.

ART. 4. The Publishing Committee may make use of the Library without restriction.

ART. 5. Newspapers and maps may be taken from the Library only by the Publishing Committee.

ART. 6. Fines for not returning books according to the third article, shall be ten cents per week for every book less than an octavo; twenty cents for an octavo; thirty cents for a quarto; and forty cents for a folio.

ART. 7. All persons who take books from the Library shall be answerable for any injury to the same, which shall be estimated by the Standing Committee.

ART. 8. The privilege of using the Library shall be denied to those who are indebted to the Society for fines or assessments, and which are of longer standing than one month, provided they have received due notice of them from the Librarian or Standing Committee.

ART. 9. All pamphlets shall be bound, and such a catalogue be kept by the Librarian, as will render it easy for any member to find any pamphlet or manuscript in the Library he may wish to see.

ART. 10. Every present shall be duly acknowledged by the Standing Committee, and a particular account of it given at the next meeting after it shall have been received.

ART. 11. A printed ticket shall be pasted on the inside of the cover of each volume, signifying that it is the property of the Society, also the name of the donor, if it is a present.

PUBLICATIONS.

Each resident member shall take and pay for the publications of the Society at their cost.

DUTY OF THE PRESIDENT.

The President shall preside at all meetings of the Society, shall call special meetings of the Society, when the same may be necessary, and shall *ex officio* be one of the Standing Committee.

DUTY OF THE RECORDING SECRETARY.

The Recording Secretary shall *ex officio* be one of the Standing Committee. He shall fairly record, in a book kept for that purpose, all the votes of the Society. And he shall notify all meetings of the Society agreeably to the By-Laws.

DUTY OF THE TREASURER.

The Treasurer shall receive all monies belonging to the Society, and shall pay the same to the orders of the Standing Committee. He shall make and keep fair entries in a book to be kept for that purpose, of all monies received and paid by him; and at every annual meeting shall exhibit to the Society a statement of his accounts, and the funds of the Society; and shall deliver the monies on hand, books of account, and other property in his custody belonging to the corporation to his successor in office.

No person shall be eligible to the office of Treasurer for more than five years in succession, the operation of this rule to commence from January 27, 1829.

RESIDENT MEMBERS

OF THE

MAINE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Those marked * are dead, and the figures affixed indicate the year of their death.

When more than one town is affixed to the name, the former denotes the place of residence at the time of election, the latter the present residence.

*Abott John	Brunswick 1820.	*Cony Daniel	Augusta
*Abott William	Castine 1849	Crosby Wm. G.	Belfast
*Adams Joseph	Portland 1850	Cummings A sa	Portland
Allen Frederick	Gardiner	Cutter Wm.	Portland,
Allen William	Brunswick,		Brooklyn, N. Y
	Northampton, Ms.	*Dana Judah	Fryeburg 1843
*Ames Benjamin	Bath 1835	Dane Joseph	Kennebunk
Bailey Jeremiah	Wiscasset	Davies Charles S.	Portland
Balch Horatio G.	Lubec.	*Deane John G.	Ellsworth,
Balch John	Ellsworth		Portland, 1843
*Bond Thomas	Hallowell 1827	Downes George	Calais
Bourne Edw. E.	Kennebunk	Dunlap Robert P.	Brunswick
Bradbury J. W.	Augusta	Eastman Philip	Harrison,
*Bradley Saml. A.	Fryeburg 1844		Saco
*Bradley Samuel	Saco 1849	Ellingwood J. W.	Bath
*Bridge James	Augusta 1834	*Emerson Samuel	Kennebunk 1851
Brown Theo. S.	Vassalboro'	Evans George	Gardiner
	Bangor	Everett Ebenezer	Brunswick
*Chapin Stephen	Waterville 1844	*Fairfield John	Saco, 1847
*Chaplin Jeremiah	Waterville 1843	Fales Thomas F.	Brunswick
Clark William	Hallowell	Farley E. Wilder	Thomaston
Cleaveland Parker	Brunswick	Farrar Samuel	Bangor
Champlin James T	Waterville	Fessenden Samuel	Portland
*Cole Joseph G.	Paris 1851	*Fisher Jonathan	Blue Hill, 1847
Cole Jonathun	Hallowell	Folsom George	Saco, New York

Freeman Charles Limerick	*Mann Ariel	Hallowell
*Frothingham Wm. Belfast, 1852	McGaw Jacob	Bangor
*Fuller Henry W. Augusta, 1844	McIntire Rufus	Parsonsfield
Gardiner R. H. Gardiner	McKeen Joseph	Brunswick
Gardiner Frederick Bath	McKeen John	Brunswick
Granger Danl. T. Eastport	McKeen James	Topsham
Greenleaf Jonathan Wells	*Mellen Prentiss	Portland, 1840
New York	Merrick John	Hallowell
*Greenleaf Moses Williamsburg	*Newman Sam'l. P.	Brunswick 1842
Greenleaf Simeon Portland,	Nichols Ichabod	Portland
Cambridge, Mass.	*Nourse Peter	Ellsworth, 1840
Gillett Eliphalet Hallowell	*Orr Benjamin	Brunswick, 1828
*Gilman John T. Portland	Otis John	Hallowell
Goodenow Danl. Alfred	Packard Alpheus S.	Brunswick
Goodenow Wm. Portland	*Packard Hezekiah	Wiscasset,
Goodwin Daniel. R. Brunswick	Salem, Ms. 1849	
Groton Nathanl. Bath	Parris Albion K.	Portland
*Hasey Benj. Topsham, 1851	*Payson Edward	Portland, 1827
Haines Wm. P. Biddeford	Pierce Josiah	Gorham
Hathaway Joshua W. Ellsworth,	*Pond Sam'l M.	Bucksport
Bangor	Poor John A.	Portland
*Hayes Wm. A. So. Berwick, 1851	Porter Rufus K.	Machias
Hodgdon John Houlton	Potter Barrett	Portland
*Holmes John Alfred, 1843,	Preble Wm. P.	Portland
Portland	*Quinby Moses	Westbrook
Howard Joseph Portland	Randall Benj.	Bath
Hyde Zina Bath	Redington Asa Jr.	Waterville
Ilsley Isaac Portland	Augusta	
Ingalls Theodore Portland	*Rose Daniel	Thomaston
*Johnson Alfred Belfast, 1851	*Russell Edw'd	North Yarmouth
*Kavanah Edward, New Castle 1844	Portland, 1835	
Keeley George W. Waterville	Sabine Lorenzo	Eastport
*Kellogg Elijah Portland 1842	Framingham, Ms.	
Kellogg Elijah Harpswell	*Seaver Josiah	South Berwick
Kent Edward Bangor	Selden Calvin	Norridgewock
*K'ng William Bath 1852	Severance Luther	Augusta
*Lincoln Enoch Paris, 1830	*Sewall David	York 1825
Lincoln Isaac Brunswick	*Sewall Joseph	Bath 1852
Little Josiah S. Portland	Sewall Wm. B.	Portland
Longfellow Henry W. Cambridge Ms.	Kennebunk	
*Longfellow Stephen Portland, 1849	Shepley David	North Yarmouth
*Loomis Harvey Bangor 1825	Shepley Sam'l H.	North Yarmouth

Shepley Ether Portland	Vose Rich'd H. Augusta
Shepley Geo. F. Portland	Ware Ashur Portland
Sheldon David N. Waterville	*Warren Eben T. Hallowell
Simonton Putnam Portland	Quincy, Ill. 1829
Smith Samuel E. Wiscasset	*Wells Geo. W. Kennebunk 1843
*Stebbins Josiah Alna 1829	*Weston Jona' D. Eastport 1834.
Swallow Geo. C. Brunswick	Weston Nathan Augusta
Smyth Wm. Brunswick	Wheeler Amos D. Topsham
Southgate Wm. S. Scarborough	Whitman Levi Norway
Tappan Benj. Augusta	Williams Daniel Augusta
*Tappan Enoch S. Augusta.	Williams Reul "
Thacher Stephen Lubec	*Williamson Wm. D. Bangor 1846
Thacher Peter Machias	Willis William Portland
Thayer Solomon Lubec	*Wingate Joshua Portland 1843
Portland	Woodhull Richard Thomaston
Tenney John S. Norridgewock	Williamson Joseph Jr. Belfast
Thurston David Winthrop	Woods Leonard Jr. Brunswick
Upham Thomas C. Brunswick	Woodman Jabez C. Minot, Portland
*Vaughan Benj. Hallowell 1835	

CORRESPONDING MEMBERS.

Bartlett William S. Chelsea, Ms.	Johnston John Middletown, Conn.
*Bowdoin James Boston, Ms. 1834	Kip Wm. I. Albany, N. Y.
Chandler Peleg W. Boston, Ms.	Lawrence Wm. B. New York, N. Y.
Crabtree William Savannah, Ga.	Little Josiah Newburyport, Ms.
Cleaveland John P. Providence, R. I.	Logan Wm. E. Montreal, Canada.
Cooley Horace S. Springfield, Ms.	Pike John Rowley, Ms.
*Dearborn H. A. S. Roxbury, Ms. 1851.	*Ripley Eleazer W., N. Orleans, La.
Dewhurst Henry W. London, Eng.	Savage James Boston, Ms.
*Farmer John Concord, N. H.	Sibley John L. Cambridge, Ms.
Felch Alpheus Detroit, Mich.	Taft I. K. Savannah, Ga.
Frothingham John Montreal, L. C.	Thornton J. W. Boston, Ms.
*Gallatin Albert New York, N. Y.	Tuston Septimus Washington, D.C.
Graham Maj. I. D. U. S. Army.	Vattemare Alexandre Paris, France.
Greenleaf Patrick H. Boston, Ms.	Waldron Nath'l G. Portsmouth N.H.
Hale Samuel Somersworth, N. H.	*Winthrop Tho's L. Boston, Ms. 1841.
*Harris Thad M. Dorchester, Ms. 1842.	Winthrop Robert C. "
Jenks William Boston, Ms.	Wright Nath'l Cincinnati, O.
Jones George Savannah, Ga.	Woodman Cyrus Mineral Pt. Wis.
Jones Lot New York.	

OFFICERS OF THE SOCIETY.

Elected September 1, 1852.

ROBERT H. GARDINER, *President.*PARKER CLEAVELAND, *Corresponding Secretary.*WILLIAM WILLIS, *Recording Secretary.*JOHN MCKEEN, *Treasurer.*ALPHEUS S. PACKARD, *Librarian and Cabinet Keeper.*

WILLIAM WILLIS,	} <i>Publishing Committee.</i>
LEONARD WOODS, JR.	
ROBERT H. GARDINER,	
DANIEL R. GOODWIN,	
JOHN MCKEEN.	}
LEONARD WOODS, JR.,	} <i>Standing Committee.</i>
JOSIAH PIERCE,	
PARKER CLEAVELAND,	
WILLIAM WILLIS,	
ROBERT P. DUNLAP.	}

OFFICERS OF THE SOCIETY FROM ITS ORGANIZATION.

PRESIDENTS.

Albion K. Parris	1822.	Stephen Longfellow	1834.
William Allen	1822—1827.	Prentiss Mellen	1835—1840.
Ichabod Nichols	1828—1833.	Robert H. Gardiner	1846—

CORRESPONDING SECRETARIES.

Edward Russell	1822.	Samuel P. Newman	1823.
Ichabod Nichols	1822—1827.	Parker Cleaveland	1829—

RECORDING SECRETARIES.

Benjamin Hasey	1822.	Asa Cummings	1835.
Benjamin Tappan	1822—1827.	Joseph McKeen	1836—1845.
Stephen Longfellow	1828—1830.	William Willis	1846—
William Willis	1831—1834.		

TREASURERS.

Prentiss Mellen	1822—1830.	William B. Sewall	1835.
Albion K. Parris	1831—1832.	John McKeen	1836—
William Willis	1833—1834.		

LIBRARIANS AND CABINET KEEPERS.

Edward Payson	1822.	Henry W. Longfellow	1834.
Parker Cleaveland	1822—1828.	Alpheus S. Packard	1835—
Samuel P. Newman	1829—1833.		

Note to the History of Scarborough.

As our volume had nearly got through the press we received from our attentive correspondent and corresponding member, J. Wingate Thornton, Esq., of Boston, a very valuable communication relating to the founder and original patentee of Scarborough, Thomas Cammock, to which we cannot refuse a place. We give the communication entire.

{ 20 COURT ST., BOSTON,
{ MAY, 2D, 1853.

MY DEAR SIR—

The Rev. Dr. Wm. Jenks, showed me the following extract from *Morant's Essex*, Vol. 1, pp. 323, 408, and consents that I may copy them, which I hasten to do, as a valuable note for the forthcoming history of *Scarboro'*, as it relates to the noted Captain *Cammock*, the Founder of the town.

To the words, "here is a noted ferry, (South Fambridge, Rochford hundred, Essex,) at which a very bold love adventure is said to have happened," is added a note "F."

"F." "Mr. Malden, of Kayne, servant to the Earl of Warwick, gave this relation, which was taken in writing—'The Earl of Warwick going from Leighes to Rochford-Hall, was attended by Capt. Cammock, who courted his daughter: He carried her off upon a horse and came to Fambridge Ferry, where the Boat was on the other side, and the tide violent [of the river Crouch]; they found themselves pursued, and had no shift but to swim over: The Captain advised her not to venture; but she said she would live and die with him, and took the water. When they were half over, the Earl's servant came to the water-side, and his horse neighed; upon which the horse that carried the lovers turned round, and with much difficulty was brought to

keep his course. They rode to Malden, were wedded and bedded ; and the Earl said, seeing she had ventured her life for him, ‘ God bless ’em.’ ”

‘ Camocks is a capital mesuage and large brick house in the parish of Layer—Marney, Winstree hundred, Essex ; so named from its ancient owners, the Camock family.’ Of this family was Thomas, (son and heir of Robert Camock who died Mar. 1, 1585,) who md. first Ursula, dau’r of John Wyrley of Dodford in Northamptonshire ; and had by her 4 sons and 5 da’s. Living in the Earl of Warwick’s family, he ran away with his daughter Frances, (see p. 323,) and had by her 2 sons and 11 daughters. He lies buried in the chh. of all saints, Malden.”

Undoubtedly here is the pedigree of Cammock of Scarborough—gratifying enough to all Scarborough Antiquaries and Historians.

Yours faithfully,

J. WINGATE THORNTON.

TO WILLIAM WILLIS, ESQ.,
PORTLAND.

THE
HISTORY
OF
SCARBOROUGH,
FROM
1633 TO 1783.
BY
WILLIAM S. SOUTHGATE.

PREFATORY NOTE.

The compiler has met with the common difficulties in the preparation of these pages, which have hindered the progress of others in similar tasks. The loss of many valuable records, and the imperfectness of such as remain, prevent a full and connected narration of the history of any of the oldest towns of Maine. This account of Scarborough is as complete as any could be made under the circumstances. The ground work of it is derived from the manuscript notes of the Rev. Henry G. Storer, whose praiseworthy diligence for years past in collecting materials for the history of the town, has rendered the subsequent labor, one of enlargement and arrangement only. It is indeed to be regretted that one so thoroughly fitted for the task as he, did not complete what was so well begun. Whenever it was practicable his notes have been transferred in full to these pages. The additional matter has been derived chiefly from the Province Records, and other original sources. Much help has been had also from Mr. Willis' excellent history of Portland. In addition to the names of those gentlemen, whose kind assistance in the preparation of these pages is elsewhere acknowledged, the compiler may be allowed to mention here that of the obliging Register of Deeds for York County, Francis Bacon, Esq, a native of "old Scarborough." If the publication of this account shall serve to rescue from oblivion any facts worth preserving, its most important object will be gained.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

Occupation of Stratton's Island. John Stratton. Capt. Thomas Cammock. His Settlement. Henry Jocelyn. Richard Foxwell. Cammock's Character. Other Settlers. Ambrose Boaden. Settlement on Blue Point. Foxwell. Henry Watts. George Dearing. Nicholas Edgecomb. His family. William Smyth. Hilkiah Bailey. Edward Shaw. Settlement at Dunstan. Andrew and Arthur Alger. Indian Deed of Dunstan. Alger family. General Character of first settlers. Growth of the Black Point Settlement.

CHAPTER II.

Henry Jocelyn. Epitome of Early Province History. Jocelyn's Settlement at Piscataqua. Chief Agent for Mason and Gorges. Removal to Black Point. Marriage. Appointed Counsellor of New Somersetshire. Early Legislation on Temperance. Jocelyn a Counsellor of Maine. John Wilkinson, first Town Officer. Jocelyn, Deputy Governor of the Province. Cleeves' Political Intrig Rigby's Government. Jocelyn a Judge of Lygonia. Court at Black Point. Massachusetts' Claim to Maine. Submission of Kittery, &c. Jocelyn's non-submission and Arrest. Signs of Submission. Scarborough and Falmouth submit. Jocelyn and Watts, Commissioners. Jocelyn chosen Magistrate.

CHAPTER III.

First Court under Massachusetts. Jocelyn and Watts, Commissioners. Court at Scarborough. Jocelyn Deputy to General Court. Associate and Commissioner. Town Officers, 1660. Spirit of Disaffection. Jocelyn's refusal of the Associates' Oath. His and Shapleigh's protest. The Town refuses Massachusetts Authority. Submits. Jocelyn &c., presented for renouncing Massachusetts Authority. Gorges' Agent. The King's Commissioners. Their first Court. Moore. Batten. Winnock. Massachusetts orders resumption of jurisdiction. Appearance of Commissioners at York. Military Escort. Conference with Jocelyn. Account of the Usurpation. Discontent. Jordan. The King interposes. Province restored. Sold to Massachusetts. Character of Jocelyn.

CHAPTER IV.

Black Point. Settlers. Abraham Jocelyn. John Libby. Christopher Collins. Moses Collins and Sarah Mills, quakers, punished. James Robinson tried for suspected murder. Collins' Estate. Joseph Phippen. Jonas Bailey. Michael Maddiver. John Tenny. Andrew Brown. Samuel and Elias Oakman. Christopher Page of Stratton's Island. Giles Roberts. Richard Moore. Godfrey and William Shelden. Nathan Bedford. His Ordinary. Scottow suspected of his murder. Robinson. John and William Burrage. Dunstan Planters. John Palmer. John Ashton. Oakman. Blue Point Settlers. Others at Black Point. Character of the Settlers. Position of the Town.

CHAPTER V.

John Jocelyn at Black Point. His "Voyages." Notices of Cammock. First Adventure at Black Point. Cammock's House. Hurricane. Horned Snakes. The Sea Serpent and the Mermaid. John Hickford's Sow. Return to England. Second Visit. Arrival. Good Cheer. Wild Game. Fish. Shower of Ants. A fanciful Story. Descriptions of Natives. Tradition of the Flood. Character of People of Maine. Return to England.

CHAPTER VI.

The Saco Indians. Squando and Assacumbuit. Indians in Scarborough. Their Remains. Indian Name of the Town. Wickwarrawaske. Sagamore of Scarborough Uphannum. Indian Goodwill. King Phillip. Squando becomes hostile. Robert Nichols and wife killed. Death of the Algiers. The Alger Family. Parley with Squando and Dunstan. The Garrison on the Neck. Attack by Mugg. Parley with Jocelyn. Surrender. Names of Inhabitants in and about the Garrison. Re-occupation. Mugg's Treaty. Lieutenant Tippen at Black Point. Black Point Garrison besieged by Mugg. His Death. Capt. Benjamin Swett. Fight at Black Point. Defeat and Death. Peace.

CHAPTER VII.

Joshua Scottow. His Literary Labors. Purchases Land in Scarborough. Receives the Cammock Patent. Visits Scarborough with "the Boston Soldiers." His Journal 1675-76. Letters to Gendall, Wineoll, and Shelden. Accused of mismanagement. Tried and acquitted. Feeling of the townsmen against him. Their Petition to the Court. Scottow's subsequent conduct. Account of his Settlement at Black Point.

CHAPTER VIII.

Town Affairs. Roads and Ferries. Change of Government. President Danforth. Deed of the Town. The "Town Men." Proprietors of Scarborough. List of Estates 1691. Education. Scottow's Proposal for a Fortification. Proceedings thereon. Approach of War. Condition of the Town. Garrisons. Liquor traffic with the Indians. Commencement of Second Indian War. Death of Gendall.

Account of the late Death of Andrew Alger, Jr. Mr. Church at Dunstable. At Scarborough. Taken together with him to Boston. Council of War at Black Point. Distribution of Bibles. Retreat of our Garrison. Charles Frost's Letter. Peace.

CHAPTER IX.

Second Settlement. First Session. War of 1793. Perpetrator devastated. Spent time. Battle. Black Point attacked. Capt. John Larrabee's brave defence. Charles Pine. William Newberry. Wild Game. The Ferry Ordinance. Hunting Dogs. Associates. Cotton. Associates of Pine and Hennelwood. Clean halt—Death of the nation. Sports with the Indians. Associates of James Libby. Expedition to the Old Thomas. Westbrook. Black Point attacked. Death of Sergeant Church. Thomas and Anthony Larrabee. Death of Mrs. Deering. The Indians and French advances. Samuel Nicholas, Sen. & Jr. Wampan. Their Anticipations. Narragansett Expedition. Benjamin Larrabee's Adventure. Death of Ralle. Peace.

CHAPTER X.

Local Affairs. Jenner's Letter. Lechford's account of Maine. The Rev. John Thayer. Proceeding against Quakers. The Rev. Benjamin Blackman. The Rev. George Burroughs. The First Church. Its site. Controversy. Its Reference. Decision. Continued Opposition. Settled by the Court. The Rev. Hugh Campbell. The Rev. Hugh Henry. The Rev. Wm. Tompson. Organization of Black Point Church. House built. Division into Parishes. The Rev. George Whitefield. Death of Mr. Tompson. His funeral. The Rev. Th. Hill. Ward. The Rev. Thomas Pierce. Change to Presbyterianism. Death of Mr. Pierce. Return to Congregationalism. The Rev. Thomas Lancaster. The Rev. Thomas Jameson. Death of Father Lancaster. Dismissal of Mr. Jameson. The Rev. Daniel Sewall. The Rev. Albert W. Fisk. The Rev. William Tobey. The Rev. James Brown Thornton. Church built at Oak Hill. The Dunstan Parish. The Rev. Richard Elvins. Mr. King's Lines on "Parson Elvins' Old Man." Joseph Willard. The Rev. Benjamin Chadwick. The Rev. Nathan Tilton. The Rev. Moses Sawyer. The Methodist Society. The Rev. Asa Heath. Methodist Church at Dunstan. Jacob Cochran.

CHAPTER XI.

Organization of Town Government 1729. Proprietors. Highways. Mills. Schools. School Masters and Lumber. Dunstan and Black Point. Destructive Fire. Effects of Peace. Declaration of War. Appearance of the Indians. Death of Nathaniel Dresser. Charles Frost's Letter. Capture of Louisburg. Richard King and Gov. Shirley. Scarborough Soldiers. Commissary Prout. Garri- sons. Description of Vaughan's. Anecdote of Mrs. Plaisted. Peace Declared. War of 1754. Cession of Canada. Rejoicings. Distribution of the French Neutrals.

CHAPTER XII.

Prosperity. Statistics 1761. Settlement of Machias by Scarborough Men. Names &c. Murder of Mrs. Dearing. Death of the Murderer. Account of the "King Riot." Mr. King's Verses on it. Letter from one of the Rioters.

CHAPTER XIII.

Revolutionary Affairs. Revolutionary Spirit. Excise Bill. Convention at Falmouth. The King's Officers routed. Dr. Alden robbed. Mr. King and the Gorham Soldiers. Mr. King on Foreign Aid. Death of Mr. King. Gorham Patriotism. Mr. King's Plan for Relief. Lexington. Cambridge. Capt. Rice's Letters. Destruction of Falmouth. First Committee of Correspondence. Town Records. Suspected Tories. Famine. Proceedings of the Townsmen. Committee of Correspondence 1778. Appropriations for the Army. The Common Soldiers of the Revolution. Names of Scarborough Soldiers. Bagaduce. Capt. McDaniel's Newspaper. Reception of the news of Cornwallis surrender. Declaration of Peace.

CHAPTER XIV.

Biographical Notices. Andrews. Babb. Bacon. Banks. Berry. Boothby. Bragdon. Burnam. Calfe. Coolbroth. Dearing. Dresser. Elliot. Emerson. Fly. Fogg. Foss. Foster. Graffam. Hasty. Hearne. Harmon. Higgins. Hunniwell. Jewett. Jones. Jose. Kilborn. King. Kirkwood. Knight. Larabee. Libby. Leavitt. McLaughlin. McDaniel. McKenney. Milliken. Meserve. Moody. Moses. Moulton. Munson. Newbury. O'Brien. Pillsbury. Plummer. Prout. Ring. Seavey. Skillins. Southgate. Thompson. Tyler. Vaughan. Warren. Waterhouse. Watson. Westbrook. Winslow.

APPENDIX.

- A. Delivery of Possession—Cammock's Patent 1633.
- B. Cammock's Deed of Black Point &c., to Jocelyn.
- C. Lease, Jocelyn to Bartlett, 1663.
- D. Pres. Danforth's Deed of Scarborough 1684.
- E. Deposition of Peter Bass concerning Walter Gendall.
- F. Mr. Prout and Scarborough Soldiers.
- G. Richard King's Address to the Freemen of Scarborough 1769.

HISTORY OF SCARBOROUGH.

CHAPTER I.

FIRST SETTLEMENT AND SETTLERS.

EARLY in the seventeenth century the coast of Maine became a favorite resort of English fishermen. Fishing stages, and the huts of fishermen, were at that time frequently erected along the coast between the mouth of the Piscataqua and Monhegan Island. This range of coast had in those days a reputation, quite equal to that of any other place, for affording great quantities of excellent fish. The large number of vessels then engaged in the fisheries along our coast, and the statements of travelers, prove this. Prince asserts that as many as fifty sail of English fishing vessels were employed upon the New England coast in 1624; of which the greater part were upon the Maine coast. Christopher Levitt, in his "Voyage into New England begun in 1623 and ended in 1624," after describing Saco River, and another about six miles to the eastward (Scarborough River) adds; "There hath been more fish taken within two leagues of this place this year *than in any other in the land.*"

There were undoubtedly some out of the number of fishermen then resorting to these famous fishing grounds, who did not overlook the advantages for drying their fish by such places as Black Point Neck, and the neighboring Islands; places where they could easily procure the materials for their stages, and fish-houses, and where they could conveniently meet the

Indians and bargain with them for their furs. We have sufficient evidence that other Islands along the coast were early settled upon by those who obtained a livelihood by trading with the fisherman and the Indians. Monhegan Island was early inhabited by men of this class ; and in 1628 Walter Bagnall set up his trading house on Richmond's Island, where he continued until murdered by the natives in 1631 for his unjust dealings with them. It is only by supposing a like settlement with those to have been upon Stratton's Island, that we can explain certain facts connected with the early history of Scarborough. Stratton's Islands lie opposite Black Point, and are within the limits of this town. The larger of them is still called Stratton's Island ; the smaller has received within a few years the name Bluff Island.

But thus far it seems only probable that there might have been such a temporary occupation of that part of Scarborough before the time of the first permanent settlement. There is more satisfactory evidence that Stratton's Island was the part of the town first occupied by any European. In the Patent of Black Point granted to Cammock in 1631 these islands are styled "Stratton's Islands." It is evident from this that they were known by that name *in England* in the year 1631, and so long before, that the name had by that time become sufficiently established, and well known to need no description of the locality. It may be difficult to decide nearly what length of time is required in order to an island's becoming so generally known by the name of its inhabitants ; perhaps we can only conjecture respecting the date of the first occupation. Again, the name was not only applied to the islands, but also the adjacent mainland ; and that as late as 1641, when Cammock's settlement had been for some years called Black Point. This we learn from Rev. Thomas Jenner's letter to Gov. Winthrop, April 16th 1641, in which he writes : " I have been solicited both from the inhabitants of *Stratten's Plantation*, and from those of Caskoe

(Falmouth) to be a means to help each of them to a goodly minister ; wherefore I do make bold to intreat your worship to do your endeavors to furnish them both.”* Mr. Jenner was at that time settled in Saco, and doubtless in writing of Black Point used the name which he oftenest heard applied to that settlement. There being such fair proof that the islands opposite Scarborough, and belonging to it were severally known as “Stratton’s Islands” prior to 1631, and that ten years afterwards the name was in common use as applied to these islands, and also to the neighboring settlement ; finding also, as we shall presently show, that one John Stratton was an inhabitant in this vicinity as late as 1643, there is hardly room for doubt that this same Stratton dwelt upon the larger of these islands some years before 1633, and was consequently the first European settler within the limits of this town of whom any record is left.

Little is known concerning John Stratton, though much might properly enough be conjectured respecting his business in life, if we consider his situation on the island, and the character of those with whom he would there be brought in contact. Though there is no good reason for supposing him to have been another “Great Walt”† on a smaller island, yet we may reasonably suppose that he was engaged in like business with him, only honestly. The following, from the Records of the Commissioners’ Court held at Saco, March 25th 1636, is the only notice of the man to be found on the Province records. “It is petitioned per Mr. Ed : Godfrey that an attachment might bee of one Brass Kettell now in the hands of Mr. Ed : Godfrey weh were belonging to Mr. John Straten of a debt due now 3 yeares from Mr. Straten to him, sd Straten * * * * *

the sd Kettle to be answerable to the suit of Mr. Godfrey

* Hutchinson’s State Papers.

† Walter Bagnall of Richmond’s Island was commonly known in his day as “Great Walt.”

against next Court, to show cause for not pament or the
 * * * * * And even this curious record of his name
 is so fast fading out that the next transcriber of it from the old
 Record Book will scarcely be able to decipher so much of it as
 is here given. The most enduring record of this pioneer's
 name is the little island to which it has been transferred. In
 the original charter of the town of Wells, given by Thomas
 Gorges in 1643, mention is made of Stratton as one of the
 claimants against Sir Ferdinando Gorges of the land included
 in that charter. At that time Stratton was probably living at
 Salem, where he was settled in 1637.† The first legal propri-
 etor within the town was Capt. Thomas Cammock to whom
 the Council of Plymouth granted fifteen hundred acres between
 Black Point and Spurwink Rivers.

Cammock was a nephew of the Earl of Warwick, who was
 at that time one of the most efficient members of the Council.
 It was without doubt partly owing to the influence of his noble
 uncle that Cammock was made sole patentee of so valuable a
 tract of land ; yet it was not altogether on that account ; for he
 had been in the service of the Council two years, and had
 acquired no slight claim to such a reward of his fidelity. Cam-
 mock's Patent bears the date November 1, 1631, which was
 nearly two years after his arrival in New England. He left
 England early in 1630, and for three years after his arrival in
 this country was an agent at Piscataqua for Mason and Gorges.
 In the year 1633 Mason and Gorges granted Cammock a tract
 of land on the eastern bank of the Piscataqua extending half
 way to Agamenticus River. This grant was conveyed to him
 during the same year by Walter Neale acting Governor under
 Gorges, Mason and their associates. Three years afterwards
 Cammock conveyed this grant to James Treworthy. On the

* York Records.

† Felt's Annals of Salem.

23d of May 1633 delivery of possession was given him by Capt. Neale of the Black Point Patent.* Soon after Cammock's removal to this Patent, he was joined here by his former friend Henry Jocelyn who had also been an agent at Piscataqua. In 1640, immediately after the confirmation of Cammock's Patent by Gorges himself, Cammock made his will, by which he gave his real and personal estate to his "well-beloved friend" and companion, Henry Jocelyn, only reserving to himself five hundred acres to be disposed of at his death as he pleased; the remainder of his estate to become Jocelyn's immediately after his own and his wife's decease.† Jocelyn was at this time unmarried, and had resided with Cammock at Black Point since 1635; more will be said of him hereafter. Cammock died in the West Indies in September 1643, leaving his wife Margaret in the care of his tried friend Jocelyn, whom she soon afterwards married. Little is to be found relating to Cammock in any of the scanty records of the Province. Doubtless he was of a retiring disposition, not fond of political excitement, else we should hear more of the man whose connection by birth with one of the Lords of the Council, and by service with all of them, would have afforded him opportunities to distinguish himself in the frequent political contests of those days. Some with far less advantages than he possessed became leading men in the Province. He seems to have been contented to enjoy in quiet the beauties of his seaside home, and the company of such friends as the goodwife Margaret, and the brothers Henry and John Jocelyn. It is not known that he took part in the administration of public affairs more than once during his residence at Black Point; then he acted as one of the Commissioners for the Province of New Somersetshire in the year 1636. How long he continued in that office cannot

* For a copy of the original delivery now in the writer's possession see Appendix A.

† See Appendix B

now be known, as the records of New Somersetshire, if any were kept after 1637, have been lost. There is one trait of his character so marked that it deserves particular notice ; it is his constant watchfulness over his proper rights and privileges.

The records of some of the early provincial courts occasionally show how careful he was of his own rights, while they never bear evidence of his neglect of the rights of others. In an action brought before the first general court, of the Province in 1640, Richard Foxwell of Blue Point complains of Cammock for preventing him and others from fishing for bass and lobsters in Black Point River. To this complaint Cammock answered : " that by virtue of his Patent the Royaltie of fishing and fowling belongeth to him, and (is) not to be violently trespassed by force, and hath sustained greate damage by their fishing and cominge on his ground and otherwise. Though he never denyed any that came with leave or in a fayre way with acknowledgement, but thinketh it intrusion to be disfringed of his grant wch all Pattentees enjoy : for redresse referreth himselfe to the bench."* At the same Court Cammock enters a complaint against John Winter of Richmond's Island for sending " some of his servants to cut hay in the limitts of the plaintiffers Patent without his consent or knowledge." These slight notices afford a clue by which one may discover something of Cammock's character. It may seem at first that he was somewhat overbearing in his conduct towards his neighbors, who after all may not have intended to trespass upon his lawful rights ; but a second thought will convince one that a proprietor in those days could not be too carefully on his guard against trespassers, knowing by how slight a tenure men then held their possessions in this country. It is to be regretted that fuller accounts of Cammock are not to be found. To those interested in the history of the

* York Records.

settlement, which he founded it would be pleasing to know more of the life and character of the founder.

Of the persons who settled around Cammock at this time, a few names have escaped oblivion. One Stephen Laplante was a tenant of Cammock in 1645; and, as appears from Cammock's complaint against Winter, he had then begun to build himself a house on the lot hired of Cammock; and it appears from the same source that there were "others to whom the Plaintiff had appointed parts of land for which he was to have fees and rents." It seems that Winter claimed land on the eastern side of the Spurwink, though there is no evidence that he had any right there. Cammock's delivery of possession given in 1644, expressly declares the eastern bound of his grant to be the Spurwink; and according to Winter's own declaration in another action* that was the eastern boundary of Cammock's Patent, and the western boundary of the Trelawney Patent in which Winter was lawfully interested. Winter was hardly the man for a peaceable neighbor; and it is not surprising that he should at the same time be in trouble with his next neighbor on either side of the Trelawney Patent, Cammock at Black Point and Cleaves on Palmouth Neck. While Laplante was building on the land hired of Cammock near the Spurwink, Winter went to the place one day and warned him off the ground, telling him that he would pull down his house as soon as finished if he persisted in building there. There is no evidence that such neighborly interference deterred Cammock in the least from occupying his lands with such tenants as chose to settle upon them; for within a short time afterwards their houses were to be seen for a mile along the eastern side of the Spurwink. Ambrose Beaden was another of the early settlers under Cammock at Black Point. He had been captain and owner of the vessel in which Cammock came over from England, and had received

* Cleaves vs. Winter 1649.

from him, in part payment for the passage of himself and wife, a lot of land near the mouth of the Spurwink upon which he resided until 1675 the year of his death.* He was for many years the Spurwink ferryman, and was first appointed such by an order of the Court held at Spurwink at the house of Robert Jordan, July 12th 1658. The following from the records of that Court is the appointment showing the price of ferriage in those days. "Ordered yt Mr. Ambrose Boaden shall keepe the Ferry over Spurwink River to Mr. Robt. Jordan, to ferry passengers from thence as occasion serveth. In consideration whereof the said Boaden is to have 2 pence for every person he ferryeth or carrieth over in prsent pay and 3d for every such pson as hee bookes downe. Ambrose Boaden willingly attempts of this Ferry on ye Tearmes by the Court appoynted." He was also one of the Coroner's jury in the case of Charles Frost who was tried in 1646 for the murder of Warwick Head. This was the second trial for murder within the Province of Maine, and for twenty years the only one recorded.† There is nothing further recorded of Boaden's public services. In 1670 he became blind and remained so until his death in the Spring of 1675. For three years after Cammock's settlement at Black Point there was no other part of the town occupied by any but Indians. The majority of those who then came to settle here were men of small means, who being unable to become proprietors themselves were willing to settle as the tenants of Cammock ;

* This lot is now the Higgins farm at Black Point. The names of its several occupants from the time of Boaden to the present have been fortunately preserved. They are in the order of their succession. Ambrose Boaden, Ambrose Boaden, Jr, Nathan Bedford, Mr. Cauley, Robert Elliot, Roger Perry, David Young, Wm. Watson : The last two were only lessees of the farm, and the ownership passed from the heirs of Perry to Mr. Fergus Higgins, the great grandfather of the present occupant.

† The first was that of a woman who was tried and executed at Gorgeana (York) in 1644.

and thus for a few years the population of the town was entirely confined to his plantation.

The next principal settlement within the limits of Scarborough, was that of Blue Point, in 1636. The Council of Plymouth granted Thomas Lewis and Capt. Richard Bonython, a tract of land extending four miles by the sea on the eastern side of Saco River, and eight miles into the main land. This grant, which was made February 12, 1630, includes the present site of Saco village, and that part of Scarborough which was lately set over to Saco. It was one of the principal considerations moving the Council to bestow this patent, that the patentees had agreed to transport fifty persons within seven years, and settle them upon it. Amongst those brought over in fulfilment of this agreement, were Richard Foxwell and Henry Watts. The date of Foxwell's settlement at Blue Point is fixed at about 1636, by his declaration against Cammock before the General Court of 1640, in which he says, "*yt he hath for these foure yeares or thereabouts lived at Blacke-poynt in the right of Capt. Rich: Bonython, his father-in-law, who settled him there and gave him as much freedome and priviledge as by virtue of his Pattent he could, either for planting, fishing, fowleing or the like, wch was the maine cause of (his) settling there.*"* It will be noticed that Foxwell here speaks of himself as living at *Black Point*. A word here upon the names of the two earliest settlements will not be out of place. At that time, and for several years afterwards, all the country between Saco and Spurwink was styled Black Point. And for a long while after the name Blue Point had been applied to the western settlement, we occasionally find in the old records, persons mentioned as belonging to Black Point, whom we know to have belonged to Blue Point. If we bear in mind that Black Point is there spoken of as including Blue Point, such records will occasion

* York Records.

us no confusion. The origin of these names is not certainly known. It has been well conjectured that Black Point was first so called by the voyagers along this coast, from the color of its heavy forests of evergreen; and Jocelyn the traveller says that Blue Point was so named, not from any peculiar appearance, but merely to distinguish it from the opposite point.* Foxwell and Watts settled upon what is now known as Blue Point, supposing themselves to be within the limits of the Lewis and Bonython Patent; but when the bounds of that Patent were accurately measured, both these planters were found to be outside of it, and within the limits of what was then called Black Point. They both enjoyed the quiet possession of their lands for many years, taking no small part in the affairs of the town, and in those of the Province. On one occasion only does Foxwell appear to have been disturbed in his possession: that was in 1654, when John Bonython, his brother-in-law, who pretended to hold a claim to Foxwell's estate, went so far as to put down one of his buildings. Foxwell appealed to the Court; and the Judges, so far from supporting Bonython in his alleged claim, only adjudged him to pay for the damage done Mr. Foxwell, and for their own trouble in trying him. John Bonython was the only son of Capt. Richard, the Patentee, and was known throughout the length and breadth of this and the Massachusetts Province as an invincible rebel. None of their laws could be made to reach him. He thought nothing of being outlawed

* Hubbard in noticing the conflicting Patents and land titles of the Province, (*Indian Wars* p. 8) gives a curious explanation of the origin of these names. He says there were conflicting titles "enough to have maintained a greater number of *lawyers* than ever were the inhabitants, if the Grantees had been furnished with monies proportionable to their suits and controversies and their bounds and jurisdictions, *which sometimes they have been ready to decide with their swords*. Witness those fatal names imposed on such accounts upon some places belonging to those parts as Bloody Point, Black and Blue Point."

by the General Court; nor did he show any disposition to regard the authority of government, until Massachusetts also proclaimed him a rebel, and set a good price upon his head; then he submitted rather than lose his life. It was doubtless this troublesome character for whom a rhymer of those days intended the following epitaph:

“Here lies Bonythew, the Sagamore of Saco;
He lived a rogue, and died a knave, and went to Hobbowocko.”*

Mr. Foxwell continued to reside at Blue Point until the time of his death, which was in the latter part of the year 1676. He lived to the ripe old age of seventy-three years, more than forty of which were spent in carefully improving his estate at Blue Point, which was one of the largest and most valuable in town. Mr. Foxwell was not so active in the political contests of his day as some others of the principal townsmen, yet he bore no small share of public honors and duties. His first public service was as a member of the “General Assembly of Lygonia” in 1648. He also served as one of the Commissioners for the town in 1664 and 1668, and was “Clerk of the writs” for Scarborough during the years 1658 and 1665, and was again elected in 1668, but being contented with the superior office of Commissioner, he declined the clerkship. He appears to have been a quiet, peaceable man, and by no means desirous of office. His wealth, his honorable connection with the family of Capt. Bonython, and above all his many good qualities, enabled him to exert a considerable influence in the Province. John Jocelyn has recorded in his “Voyages to New England” the following

* Folsom’s Saco and Biddeford—Hobbowocko, as he is here styled, was the Satan of the Indians. John Jocelyn in his “Voyages” says of the Maine Indians: “They acknowledge a God whom they call Squantaw, but worship him they do not because (they say) he will do them no harm. But *Abbowocko*, or Cheepie, many times smites them with incurable diseases, scares them with his apparitions and panic terrors, by reason whereof they live in a wretched consternation worshipping the Devil for fear.”

singular story, which he had from the lips of Foxwell himself. "Foxwell having been to the eastward in a shallop, on his return he was overtaken by the night, and fearing to land on the barbarous shore, put off a little farther to sea. About midnight they were awakened by a loud voice from the shore calling 'Foxwell! Foxwell! come ashore!' three times. Upon the sands they saw a great fire and men and women hand in hand dancing round about it in a ring. After an hour or two they vanished, and as soon as the day appeared Foxwell put into a small cove and traced along the shore, where he found the footsteps of men, women and children *shod with shoes*, and an infinite number of brands' ends thrown up by the water; but neither Indians nor English could he meet with on the shore nor in the woods!" This incident savors much of fairy mythology. It was doubtless well for Foxwell that he did not answer the call by going ashore; else he might have found that Puck himself, the very ringleader of mischievous spirits had followed him over from England. But the Fairies never emigrated with the early settlers of this country, and therefore our explanation will not do. We will leave each reader of the story to solve its mystery for himself, only reminding him how true it has often proved to be, that, as Jocelyn remarks, "there are many stranger things in the world than are to be seen between London and Stanes." Of Foxwell's three sons, John, Richard, and Philip, only John left issue. He had one child, Nathaniel, at whose death the male branch of the family became extinct. Philip was one of the town's selectmen for the year 1681. He removed to Kittery in 1690, and died there the same year. Richard died in 1664. Our worthy settler's five daughters were all of them married, and many of their descendants live in this vicinity.*

* Of these daughters Esther married Thomas Rogers of Goose-fair in 1757, who left two sons, Richard and John. Lucretia married James Robinson of Blue Point, and removed to Newcastle, N. H. about 1676. Their children were four daughters, three of whom married. Susannah, the third

Mr. Henry Watts went from Saco to Blue Point in company with Mr. Foxwell in 1636, and established himself upon the plantation adjoining Foxwell's. Of Watts we know less than of some others of the first settlers. It is quite difficult to make out the whole character of any of them from the scanty materials now left us. If we can, by means of the few facts on record, get true impressions of the general character of each, we shall do well. But the attempt to judge them upon such slight evidence is full of danger; as will be apparent if one considers how improbable it is that men's *good* deeds will be discovered by perusing court records. We get an occasional glimpse of Watts throughout the earliest record of the Province; but generally under circumstances unfavorable for judging of his character. The first notice of him occurs in the proceedings of the court of September 15th, 1640, when he was presented with one Frethy for "carrying of bords" on the Sabbath. Watts, in common with many others of the planters seems to have had some trouble with Robert Jordan, the famous minister of Spurwink. Jordan

daughter, married John Ashton, of Blue Point, afterwards of Marblehead. Mary married George Norton, of York; Sarah, Joseph Curtis, Esq., of Kittery, High Sheriff &c., 1678; and their daughter Eunice married Richard Cutts of Kittery, by whom she had seven sons and three daughters.

It appears from the following interesting letter, copied from Vol. 29 of the Massachusetts Historical Collection, that Foxwell returned to England soon after his first arrival in this country, which was probably during 1630 :

PASCATAQUE, April 18, 1633.

"SIR: There arrived a fishing ship at Pascataque about the 15th of this present moneth wherein is one Richard Foxwell, who hath formerly lived in this cuntry—he bringeth nuse that there were tow (2) shipes making ready at Barnstaple whoe are to bring passengers and catell for to plant in the Bay he hath letters for Mr. Wearon and divers others at Dorchester which he intends to bring into the bay so soone as possible he can—likewise he heard from Mr. Alerton whoe was making ready at Bristol for to come for this cuntry—other nuse he bringeth not that I can heare of only Mr. Borowes purposeth to come for this cuntry from Lonon &c. &c."

WILLIAM KILTON."

For a transcript of the above, and for many other particulars relating to Foxwell, the writer is indebted to the kindness of J. Wingate Thornton, Esq. of Boston.

had somehow been the means of bringing about a temporary separation of Watts from his wife. Why or how this was done does not appear, but from the following record it seems to have been a transaction not altogether to Watts' liking. The Court was held November 7th, 1665, and the words of the record alluded to are these: "Mr. Henry Watts haveing some discourse with Mr. Jordan, in the presence of this Court, did utter these words, that such as the sayd Jordan was did much mischeefe as hee conceaved, haveing their discourse about keeping away Henery Watts his wife from him." Whether the worthy Recorder of the Court meant to sanction this as a true estimate of Jordan's character by preserving it on the records, may perhaps be doubted; but as there is no allusion to these words in any of the subsequent proceedings of the Court the object of the record is apparent. Jordan was at that time one of the Justices appointed by the King's Commissioners, and no doubt was trying his new authority upon his less distinguished neighbor. While George Cleeves of Falmouth held jurisdiction as deputy president of Lygonia, under Rigby, he endeavored to deprive the Blue Point planters of the privilege of holding their lands by titles procured from Bonython, and claimed the right to dispose of them by grants in the name of Rigby. There is no evidence that any of the planters there yielded to Cleeves, except Watts, who took a grant of one hundred acres adjoining his house. This method of acknowledging Rigby's government was adopted by Watts merely for the purpose of pacifying Cleeves; for there is no doubt that he could have retained his lands under Bonython's grant, as his neighbors did, but there is much doubt whether Cleeves would have allowed him the least quiet in his possessions.

In the year 1673, Watts sold one-half of the whole of his plantation, including the small grant from Cleeves, to Ralph Allison. At the same time he conveyed to Allison one half of his mill, "the whole to be maintained at equal cost." This mill

was one of the earliest built in the town, and was situated on "Foxwell's Brook" on the Western side of the Point. In his deed to Allison, Watts styles himself "of Black Point, alias Scarborough *in the village wee call COCKELL.*" The origin and meaning of this name have escaped our enquiries. It is evidently a village nickname, much like those frequently heard at the present day. Another record respecting Watts, affords a good illustration of the jealous care with which even the town Commissioners of those days guarded their official reputation. The Commissioners for Scarborough and Falmouth in 1659 were Jocelyn, Jordan, Cleeves, Neale, and Watts. The latter was so unfortunate as to offend the dignity of the others, and, notwithstanding he was himself a Commissioner, was presented at the next Court "for abuse of the Governor, and also for scandalizing the rest of the Commissioners by saying that they had sent scandalous letters into the Bay." The alledged scandal against the Commissioners is the last item in the presentment, but at the trial was considered of the first importance. So much for "freedom of speech" in Maine in the seventeenth century. A hundred similar illustrations of the same might be selected from the Records. Watts took an active part in the political affairs of the Province, and of the town. He held a long succession of public offices, in all of which he appears to have acquitted himself in a manner equally honorable to himself, and the town which he represented. He was a member of the General Assembly of the Province of Ligoniam held in 1648.* He was also a commissioner under Massachusetts, in 1658; commissioner and constable 1659; constable for Scarborough 1660; commissioner 1661 and 1662; and again chosen commis-

* The "Province of Ligoniam," so called, was within the Province of Maine. The origin of this novelty of a Province within a Province, and the confusion that arose from this double government, will be noticed hereafter. Ligoniam consisted of the settlements between Cape Porpoise and Casco, thus including Blue Point and Black Point.

sioner by the townsmen in 1664, but not allowed by the General Court.* He was evidently at this time suspected of disaffection towards the authority of Massachusetts ; hence his rejection by the Court, although he still retained the entire confidence of his fellow-townsmen. There is some uncertainty with regard to the time of Watts' death, and his age. In a brief notice of him in the history of Saco, he is said to have been living at Blue Point in the year 1684, being then upwards of eighty years of age. Upon what authority this is asserted we have not learned, but we find it incidently recorded upon one of the old York record books, that he was living in 1685 at the age of *seventy-one* years. If this be true he was not born until 1614, and was therefore eleven years younger than his friend Foxwell, with whom he was so long associated. We have discovered nothing respecting Watts' family, and know not that any of his children survived him.†

For a few years Foxwell and Watts were the only settlers upon Blue Point. The first planters who went to settle near them were George Dearing and Nicholas Edgecomb, who came in 1639, and were joined during the next year by William Smyth. Smyth affirms, in a deposition given in 1670, that when he went to live at Blue Point in 1640, there were then there four plantations, those of Richard Foxwell, Henry Watts, George Dearing, and Nicholas Edgecomb ; and that some time after came Hilkiah Bailey and Edward Shaw. There was also one Tristram Alger living there about the same time with these last. Of George Dearing we can find no account whatever.

*The duties of these early Commissioners were somewhat similar to those of our Justices of Peace. They constituted a Court for the trial of all causes under £50 ; and any one of them could determine as magistrate small causes whether civil or criminal.

† Folsom (History of Saco.) notices a John Watts of Falmouth 1721, whom he supposes to have been a son of our Planter ; but there is no such person mentioned in Willis' History of Portland, though there is frequent mention there of one *John Wass* who became an inhabitant of that town about 1716.

The Roger Dearing, who died here in 1676 was probably a son of George, and Roger Dearing who came from Kittery and settled here early in the next century, a grandson. Nicholas Edgecomb was a member of the younger branch of the noble family of Edgecomb, of Mount Edgecomb, England. Sir Richard Edgecomb received a grant from Gorges in 1637 of 8000 acres of land, which was for a long time after his death a subject of controversy. A descendant of Nicholas Edgecomb, probably his grandson, acted as agent for Lord Edgecomb of Mount Edgecomb, at the time when the claim of Sir Richard's heirs was first entered in the Massachusetts Book of Claims.* Mr. Edgecomb remained at Blue Point twenty years, and then removed to Saco. His plantation at Blue Point consisted of fifty acres which he rented of Capt. Richard Bonython. He was a man of good sense and fair abilities, but had not enjoyed, or at least had not improved, the common advantages of education. His failing in this respect accounts in a good degree for the small part he shared in the early government of the Province. His sons were Robert, John, and probably Michael and Christopher, who were living here in 1675. Robert was married to Rachel Gibbins of Saco, where he died in 1730 aged seventy four. John was one of the Selectmen of Saco in 1686. Of our townsman's daughters, Mary married George Page of Saco, and after his death John Ashton of Blue Point, afterwards of Marblehead, Massachusetts. The other daughter, Joanna, married a Puncheon of Boston.

William Smyth first settled at Blue Point in 1640. He afterwards removed to Black Point, where he resided at the time of his death. He and Foxwell were the appraisers of Capt. Cam-

* It is not a little remarkable that three of the earliest settlers of Scarborough were members of English families of high rank. Cammock, as we have seen, was nephew of the Earl of Warwick; Jocelyn, was son of Sir Thomas Jocelyn Kt; and Edgecomb was connected as above.

mock's estate in 1643. He had a brother Richard, and two sisters living in the city of Westchester, England, in the year 1661. It is very probable that our townsman was a native of the same city. He was a simple planter, taking no part in political affairs. He was born in England in the year 1587, and died at Black Point in March 1676, having passed the limit of threescore and ten by nearly another score of years. Richard Smyth, who was one of the witnesses to the delivery of Black Point to Cammock in 1633, was perhaps the brother of William who was living in Westchester in 1661. If so, he remained in the Province but a few years.

Hilkiah Bailey and Edward Shaw settled at Blue Point sometime after the other planters just noticed, yet before 1648 ; for Smyth's deposition above referred to, says, that they had been sometime there when Rigby's government commenced, which was in 1648. We know nothing further of Bailey, but suppose that he was the father of Jona Bailey who died at Blue Point in 1663, and whom we shall have occasion to notice hereafter. Shaw left at his death a son Richard, who lived a number of years on his father's estate at Blue Point, and then sold it in 1662 to John Howell.

We have now briefly noticed each of the principal planters who established the Blue Point settlement. While Capt. Cammock and his tenants at Black Point were mostly engaged in the fisheries, for which that place has ever afforded excellent advantages, the early settlers upon the other Point appear to have given particular attention to agriculture, and to have been chiefly occupied in the improvement of their estates. They were very appropriately styled *planters*. This distinction does not apply so well to the present inhabitants of the two Points ; though there still remain prosperous planters on the one, and successful fishermen on the other.

The third principal settlement within the town was that made at Dunstan about the year 1651, by the brothers Andrew and

Arthur Alger.* They bought a large tract of land of the Indians residing here, and retained their possession of it by virtue of their Indian title. Andrew Alger was living upon *Stratton's Island* as early as 1645, at which time he had a company of men there engaged in the fisheries. He afterwards removed to Saco, whence he came to this town about 1654, and settled with his brother Arthur upon their purchase. The terms upon which they bought this tract of more than a thousand acres, have been preserved in the declaration of one of the Indians concerned. This interesting document is here copied from the Records word for word.

"19th September, 1659. The declaration of Jane the Indean of Scarborough concerning lands. This aforesayd Jane alias Uphannum doth declare that her mother namely Nagaasqua the wife of Wackwarrawaskee Sagamore, and her brother namely Ugagoguskitt and herselfe namely Uphannum co-equally hath sould unto Andrew Alger, and to his brother Arthur Alger a Tract of Land beginning att the mouth of ye River called blew Poynt River, where the River doth part, and soe bounded up along with the River called Oawasscoage in Indean, and soe up three scoore poole above the falls, on the one side, and on the other side bounded up along with the northernmost River that Dreaneth by the great hill of Abram Jocelyns and goeth northward, bounding from the head yt River South West and soe to the aforesayd bounds namely three scoore Pooles above the Falls. This aforesayd Uphannum doth declare that her mother and brother and shee hath already in her hand received full satisfaction of the aforesayd Algers for the aforesd the Land from the beginning of the world to this day, provided on conditions that for tyme to come from yeare to yeare yearly, the aforesd Algers shall peaceably suffer Uphannum to plant in Andrew Algers field soe long as Uphann: and her mother Neguasqua doe both live, and alsoe one bushl: of corne for acknowledgment: every yeare soe long as they both shall live, Uphann: dothe declare that ye bargan was made in the yeare 1651: unto which shee dothe subscribe, the marke of Uphannum X't. In 1674 the indian "Jane" made a second acknowledgment of this sale, which is thus

* Sometimes written *Auger*; but an original power of attorney from Andrew to Arthur, now before me, and other original papers in my possession, have the name spelt *Alger*.

† York Records B. 2, page 114.

Recorded : " Note yt this sayle of ye Land Recorded in pa ; 114 : written expressed, sould to Andrew and Arthur Alger by these Indeans, was sould to ye sd Algers, them yr heyrs, executors, administrators and assigns forever, as is owned by Uphann : alia Jane this 27 : of May 1674 : In presence of

WILLIAM PHILLIPS
SETH FLETCHER."

That part of the town which lies back from the sea coast was at this time in the possession of the Indians. Their proprietorship seems to have been generally acknowledged by the first English settlers. The inland part of the town was left unoccupied, except by the Indians, until after the second settlement, when the excellent quality of the soil led many to settle in that part. The Algers gave their tract of land the name of *Dunsten* in remembrance of their native town in the County of Somersetshire England. Dunster soon became corrupted to "Dunston," and then to "Dunstan." This name, at first given to the whole tract purchased of the Indians, afterwards distinguished the settlement at the Landing, and still later was transferred to the village which now bears it. The houses of the Algers were near the present landing road where it turns towards the south, within a field now owned by Horatio Southgate. Arthur's house was on the northern side of the deep "run" that extends towards the marsh, and Andrew's was on the opposite side. Next to Andrew lived his son John Alger, and below him towards the landing were the houses of Andrew's three sons-in-law. The traces of Andrew Alger's cellar were distinctly visible but a few years since. In another chapter further account of the Algers may be found. We have now completed a brief sketch of the three earliest settlements within the town. The few facts which we have thus gathered, together with others, which a regard to brevity has induced us to omit, establish the respectable character of these early planters. Many of them were highly worthy men ; equal to the performance of all the duties arising from their various relations in life. The mercenary

motives which induced the first settlers of Maine to leave their native land, and the comforts of civilized life, to dwell amongst savages, have been repeatedly urged against them. But this has been done only by those who err in comparing the first settlers of Maine with the pilgrims; a comparison plainly unjust, since the pilgrims were exceptions to the general rule of emigration. The necessity, that existed in their case, did not affect the emigrants to Maine; of course their motives to immigration, could not be similar. But when fairly judged, many of the early settlers of Maine will be found to have been men worthy of profound esteem, and not mere needy adventurers. This part of the Province was not without its share of such estimable men.

The settlement at Black Point increased more rapidly than the other two, and soon became one of the most flourishing and important places on the coast. The general history of the town is for many years intimately connected with that settlement, and often belongs exclusively to it. The excellent situation both for farmers and fishermen, induced many to settle there in preference to any other part of the town. We have no means of ascertaining nearly the number of planters there until 1671, when, according to John Jocelyn, the number of dwelling houses was *fifty*.* If we allow six persons to each of these we shall learn nearly the true number of inhabitants. The growth of this settlement was very rapid for those days, and has by no means been equalled in the same place since that time. It was

* "Six miles to the eastward of Saco and 40 miles from Georgiana (York) is seated the town of Black Point, *consisting of about 50 dwelling houses*, and a magazine or *doganne scatteringly built*, they have a store of neat and horses, of sheep near upon 7 or 800, much arable and marsh salt and fresh, and a corn-mill. To the southward of the Point (upon which are stages for fishermen) lie two small islands; beyond the point north eastward runs the river of Spurwink" (Jocelyns Voyages p. 200

only thirty-eight years before 1671, that Cammock's house stood alone at Black Point. Few of the early settlements in the country attained so rapid a growth as this, and few can present so striking a contrast to their present condition.

CHAPTER II.

HENRY JOCEYLYN—HIS PUBLIC LIFE, ETC.

We have already noticed the arrival of Henry Jocelyn at Black Point in 1635. He was for forty years the principal man in the town, and one of the most distinguished inhabitants of the province. In order to a proper understanding of the circumstances under which he came, and of his situation and conduct while here, it will be necessary to take a cursory view of the affairs of the Province, both before and after 1635. A brief sketch of the origin and progress of the Province, with which Jocelyn was so long and so favorably connected, will prove to be no episode in the story of the town.* In the year 1620 the whole extent of territory between the fortieth and forty-eight degrees of north latitude stretching from the Atlantic to the Pacific, was placed at the disposal of the Council of Plymouth. The Council now acted independently of the Crown, and granted lands within the assigned limits to whom ever they pleased.—Among their grants was one in 1622, to Sir Ferdinando Gorges and John Mason, members of the Council, which extended from the Merrimac River to the Kennebec. The territory included in this grant received the name *Laconia*. During the next year the proprietors of *Laconia* sent out men to begin a settlement

* For a more complete survey of the Province affairs during this period, see Sullivan's or Williamson's Maine; or chapter 2 of Willis' Portland, which contains all the important matter of both in fewer words.

•

on the Piscataqua. In 1629 John Mason received a new patent of that part of Laconia lying west of the Piscataqua. This was the first division of the grant; and Mason named his share New Hampshire. The remainder of Laconia extending from the Piscataqua to the Kennebec was left to Gorges, who soon took a new charter of it under the name of New Somersetshire.

In 1635 Wm. Gorges, a nephew of Sir Ferdinando, was sent over as first Governor of Somersetshire. Soon after Gorges had received a patent of the eastern part of Laconia, the Plymouth Company returned their charter into the hands of King Charles the First. In 1639 the King confirmed Gorges' Patent, changing the name of the Province from New Somersetshire to Maine.* The powers confirmed upon Gorges by the King in the charter of Maine are said to exceed all ever before or since granted to a subject of Great Britain. The next year Thomas Gorges, a young lawyer, and cousin of Sir Ferdinando, came over as Governor of Maine, and held the first General Court of the Province at Saco, June 25th 1640. He was the First Governor of this territory after it received the name of Maine; and it is perhaps with reference to this fact that he has been called the "first Governor of Maine." He was not the first governor set over the territory, as Wm. Gorges preceded him in that capacity by five years. In this manner arose the government of the Province of Maine. Although Gorges had obtained the grant of Laconia, in conjunction with Mason in 1622, and Mason's share had been secured to him by a new charter from the Council of Plymouth, thus manifestly leaving the other portion to Gorges, yet the same Council in 1629 issued to sundry

* It is generally supposed that Province was so called in honor of the Queen Henrietta Maria, who is represented as having been the proprietor of the Province of Maine in France. This opinion, however, is incorrect; at least that part of it which assigns the French Province to Henrietta. It belonged exclusively to the crown; nor is it known that she had any interest in it at all.

citizens of London a grant including the greater part of Gorges' share of Laconia, and covering lands granted during the same year to the patentees of Saco and Biddeford. The cause of this singular proceeding on the part of the Council has never been discovered. It is generally attributed to their ignorance of the situation of this part of the country, of which the best informed in England at that time knew little. This strange grant of lands already held under former grants, was made to John Dy and others of London, and is distinguished by the name of the "Plough Patent;" and is supposed to have taken its name from the ship "Plough," in which the grantees, or persons sent by them, came over from England. The tract granted extended from Casco Bay to Cape Porpoise on the seaboard, and forty miles into the country; thus it fell wholly within the former grant to Mason and Gorges. It was styled the "Province of Lygonia." There is no satisfactory evidence that any of the original owners of the Plough Patent ever visited their new Province. It is even doubtful who they were. Gorges was not disturbed in his possessions and government of the territory by any of the proprietors of Lygonia until 1643, when it was sold to Alexander Rigby, a member of the famous Long Parliament. Rigby immediately claimed jurisdiction over the territory already occupied by the government of Gorges, and commissioned George Cleeves of Falmouth to act as his deputy in the Province. Gorges stoutly resisted the claim of Rigby, but with no better effect than was to be expected under existing circumstances; for Gorges was a royalist, Rigby was a republican, and the republicans were in the seat of power. It was indeed an unfavorable occasion for a royalist to urge even his just claims. Gorges died in 1647 leaving Rigby to proceed undisturbed in his plan of governing Lygonia. This he did by the establishment of a General Assembly of which Cleeves, the deputy president of the Providence, was the acting head. In

1650 Rigby died. And now the distracted province that had suffered so much from these contests about itself enjoyed a pleasing repose. But it proved of brief duration; for soon after this dissension, almost before the noise of it had died away, the colonists of Massachusetts' Bay, by a wonderful stretching of the limits of their charter, declared themselves the rightful proprietors of the Province of Maine. This was an astounding discovery to the people of Maine, and one which they were by no means prepared for. So Maine again became a bone of contention.

Before 1659 all the towns in the Province had submitted to the authority of Massachusetts, and for a short time continued in their submission.

During 1660 however, a change took place in the government of England, which wrought a corresponding change here. At that time, Charles the Second ascended the throne of England, thus confounding the hopes of the republicans at home and abroad, and reviving the fainting spirits of the royalists. About this time a son of Sir John Gorges petitioned King Charles to restore to him the lost Province of his ancestors. The King soon required of the Governor of Massachusetts to make immediate restitution of the Province to Gorges, or to show good reason for their occupation of it. They did neither. Gorges did not effect a complete restoration of his rights until 1676, when the Massachusetts Colony yielded up the Province to him by the positive command of the King. The next year she bought back the Province for £1250 sterling. And thus ended the long contest for a jurisdiction, which after all, was esteemed of no more value than a few hundred pounds.

Henry Jocelyn* was the son of Sir Thomas Jocelyn Knight,

* This name is now commonly called *Josselyn*, but we have adopted the spelling invariably found in original papers bearing the signature of this gentleman.

of Kent, the first-named amongst the Commissioners appointed to organize a government under the first charter of Maine in 1639 ; but Sir Thomas failing to come to this country, Thomas Gorges was substituted as first Governor of Maine. Our distinguished townsman arrived in New England in 1634 as chief agent for Mason at Piscataqua. The year of his arrival is satisfactorily ascertained from a letter, sent by Mason to Ambrose Gibbins, then acting as his agent in this country, dated May 5th 1634, in which he says : “These people and provisions *which I have now sent with Mr. Jocelyn* are to set up two sawmills &c.”† This letter was received July 10th of the same year, and that was without doubt nearly the exact date of Jocelyn’s arrival. The same year Gorges and Mason wrote to their agents in this country directing them to divide their joint property, and to deliver Mr. Mason’s half of the same “unto Mr. Henry Jocelyn for the use of our plantations.” Jocelyn continued to act as agent for Mason until the death of that proprietor, which occurred during 1635. His duties, while in the service of Mason, were equal to those of a proprietor ; the constant care of the young settlements, and the management of their affairs in such a manner as that neither the settlers nor the proprietors should suffer. In addition to his labors at the Piscataqua settlement he was engaged in an exploring tour into the interior of the country which was started by Mr. Mason, but failed of its object.* It was Jocelyn’s intention to establish himself on the

† Farmer’s Belknaps App. VIII.

* In Morton’s “*New English Canaan*,” an extremely rare book, may be found the following notice of this expedition. “A more complete discovery of those parts (“Erocoise Lake” now Lake Champlain) is, to my knowledge, undertaken by Henry Joseline, Esquire, son of Sir Thomas Joseline, of Kent, Knight, by the approbation and appointment of that heroic and very good Commonwealth’s man, Captain John Mason, Esquire, a true foster-father and lover of virtue, who at his own charge hath fitted Master Joseline, and

Newichawannick near the present site of Berwick, but the death of Mason, and the subsequent confusion of the proprietor's affairs prevented him. Soon after the death of Mason, the Piscataqua settlements were so neglected that the settlers there became discouraged, and some of them went away. This was an emergency in which Jocelyn could not act without authority from the heirs of the proprietor; and as he heard nothing from them he could render the suffering settlements no assistance. He therefore abandoned the intention of settling near Piscataqua, and removed to Black Point, during 1635. There can be no doubt that Jocelyn made this movement by desire of Gorges himself, for he soon became the most extensive proprietor of lands who has ever lived in the town.* Probably he was favored with private grants from Sir Ferdinando, which, added to the Cammock Patent left in 1643, made him the owner of a considerable part of the town as it then extended. From his large estate he granted portions to new settlers, and leased to several planters around him two or three large farms.† Jocelyn resided with Capt. Cammock near the Ferry Rocks until that gentleman's death in 1643, when he married his widow, and thus became altogether his successor. In his will, Cammock styles Jocelyn, "my well-beloved friend;" and they appear to have been ever as good friends as they were worthy of each other's respect and esteem. The year after Jocelyn took up his resi-

employed him to that purpose, &c." (Quoted in a note to Folsom's Address. Maine Hist. Coll. Vol. 2.)

* Hubbard, in his "History of New England," speaks of "some agreement" between Gorges and Jocelyn, which was the cause of the removal of the latter to Black Point, but does not inform us what it was.

† A list before me of various grants of land at Black Point made by Jocelyn and Scottow between 1660 and 1682 exhibits a total for those years of *thirteen hundred and seventy acres*. See also App. C.

dence at Black Point he entered upon his distinguished political career.

In 1635, Sir F. Gorges organized the first government of his Province by sending to it Capt. Wm. Gorges, his nephew, as governor, with commissions to Richard Vines, Richard Bonython, *Thomas Cammock*, *Henry Jocelyn*, Thomas Purchase, Edward Godfrey, and Thomas Lewis, as Counsellors of the Province of New Somersetshire. These gentlemen held their first Court at Saco, March 25th; 1636 when they passed several orders for the better regulation of the Province. Amongst these was the order, which we have already noticed, against the "Kettell" of Mr. Stratton. Another order of that Court possesses a peculiar interest now, when legislation on temperance has become so successful, as the first law on the subject ever passed in the State. It stands upon the records thus: "It is ordered that any man that doth sell strong liquor or wyne, shall suffer his neighbor, laborer or servant, to continue drinking in the house *except men invited or laborers upon the working day for one hower at diner, or stranger, or lodger* there, the said offence being seene by one justice of the peace within his limits, or constable, or proved by tew witnesses before a justis of the peace, such seller of strong liquor or wyne shall forfeit for every such offence tenne shillings." The intent of this law is excellent, but it is questionable whether the "one hower at diner" is not too large a 'loophole' for its efficacy. It is well known that many of our early settlers were constantly in habit of drinking spirituous liquors, and that they sometimes drank great quantities without experiencing at the time any bad effects from it. John Jocelyn, the voyager, who resided a few years with his brother Henry, at Black Point, notices this fact, and seems to have been at a loss to account for it with any show of reason until he hit upon the following shrewd method. "The climate," he says, "is reasonably temperate, hotter in summer and colder

in winter than with us, agrees with our constitutions better than hotter climates. These are limbecks to our bodies. Foreign heat will extract the inward, and adventitious heat consume the natural; *so much more heat any man receives outwardly from the heat of the sun, so much more wants he the same inwardly, which is one reason why they are able to receive more and larger draughts of Brandy, and the like strong spirits, than in England, without offence.*”* This Court also passed a law, during its second session, requiring every planter “to do his best endeavour to apprehend, execute or kill, any Indian that hath binne known to murder any English, kill their cattle, or any way spoyle their goods, doe them violence, and will not make them satisfaction.” It was proper for the worthy Counsellors thus to protect by law the lives and property of the settlers; it was also highly commendable in them not to overlook the rights of the nations, of which they showed themselves mindful by appending to this same law against the Indians an order requiring John Cosins † to satisfy an Indian for the wrong done him.

When Gorges’ Patent was confirmed by the King in 1639, Jocelyn’s commission was renewed, and he became one of the Counsellors of the Province under its new name of Maine. These Counsellors had authority to try all causes in the Province which might come before them, from the least to those of the greatest importance. They met and held the first General Court for Maine at Saco, June 25th, 1640, at which time Jocelyn and the other Counsellors, excepting Thomas Gorges, appeared and were sworn into office. By this Court, John Wilkinson was sworn constable of Black Point. This is the earliest record of the appointment of a town officer for this town; and there is no reason to suppose that there were any appointed before Wilkin-

(* Jocelyn’s. Voyages.)

† Cosins or Cossons lived at North Yarmouth from 1645 to 1675

son. The appointment of this office at least shows a goodly increase in the number of inhabitants in town since Cammock's settlement, whatever the character of the officer may lead us to infer respecting the conduct of the additional settlers. A similar officer was appointed for Falmouth at the same time. At that time Falmouth contained at least nine families,* and Black Point including Blue Point, no less than eight.† We regret our want of information respecting Wilkinson. All we can add to this scanty record of him is, that he died in 1666, and that Mr. Richard Callicot of Boston administered upon his estate.

In 1643 Gov. Thomas Gorges returned to England, having been called home by some event of the revolution then raging there. The Counsellors continued the government of the Province in the absence of its head, without any intimation from the proprietor as to the course to be pursued during the absence of the Governor. Sir Ferdinando was so deeply engaged with the affairs of his country, that for a while he quite forgot his distant Province. The government of the latter was in the hands of men whom he could safely trust to administer it; but thinking more of the good government of England, he gave his attention to her to the neglect of his private interests in America. After waiting two years without receiving any orders from Gorges, (who was at this time lying in prison, having been captured while assisting in the defence of Bristol against the parliamentary troops) the Counsellors proceeded to act upon their own responsibility. At a Court held Oct. 21st, 1645, they passed the following: "Ordered by this general court that whereas wee

* Willis' Portland p. 38.

† Those of Cammock, Boaden, and Lapthorne on Black Point proper, and of Foxwell, Watts, Dearing, Edgecomb, and Smyth at Blue Point. There doubtless were other families at Black Point in 1640. Constable Wilkinson probably resided there, but the above are all whom we know to have been there.

have not heard of late from the Honod : Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Knight, Lord Proprietor of this Province of Mayne for a full establishment & confirmation of government within the said Province, for our peace and safety, this 21st Oct. 1645, have chosen for our Deputy Governor, Rich: Vines, Esqr. soe to continue for one whole yeare. And alsoe order yearely to choose a deputy Governor: And further order that in case the sd Rich: Vines, Esq: should Depte the country before one yeare be expired, then we nominate and choose *Henry Jocelyn, Esquire deputy Governor* in his place and stead.”* At the same time Mr. Vines was ordered to take possession of the goods of Sir Ferdinando and pay the proprietor’s debts. This movement was the least the Counsellors could make for the good condition of the Province, and was undoubtedly pleasing to the unfortunate Gorges, as it betrayed a disposition in them to uphold the trust committed to their care. Vines soon left the country, as it had been anticipated by the court he would, leaving Jocelyn Deputy Governor. Just before his departure he was engaged in a severe contest with Cleeves, of Falmouth, for the jurisdiction of the greater part of the Province. Cleeves, in behalf of Rigby, claimed the right to govern, while Vines, having the government in his hands, and being convinced that Rigby’s claim was unjust, was not at all disposed to yield to him. The matter was referred for decision to Massachusetts, but she was too wary to decide the matter while there was any probability of a reversal of her decision by some new turn in the affairs of England. Cleeves had before this carried the question before the Parliament, and was anxiously awaiting the answer of the commissioners appointed to investigate the affairs of the New England Colonies. The unfair method by which he endeavored to bias the minds of the English commissioners is little to his credit, and should not be noticed here did it not immediately

* York Records.

concern some of the most respectable of our townsmen. While presenting his case before Parliament he made use of the names of several worthy planters against the existing government of the Province; names which carried with them a weighty influence. In England he showed a petition against Vines and his government, to which were subscribed the names of those professing to be dissatisfied with their condition under Vines, and asking for the relief which the establishment of Rigby's government would afford. As will appear, this was a base forgery on the part of Cleeves. Soon after his return from England, when the planters were aware of his proceedings there, this declaration was made public—"Wee whose names are hereunder written doe testifie upon our oathes that wee never gave order to Mr. Geo. Cleaves of Cascoe to prefer any petition, or to exhibit any articles in Parliament against Mr. Rd Vynes of New England. *Neither did wee either see or knowe of the said articles or petition until the said Geo. Cleaves did come last out of England.* Neither can we testify any such things as are exhibited in the said petition or declared by his articles against Mr. Rd Vynes by the said Cleaves."* This was signed by *Henry Watts, John Wilkinson, Andrew Alger*, of this town, and by six others belonging to various towns of the Province. This ought to have confounded Cleeves, but there is reason to suppose it did not. When asked by Rev. Mr. Jenner of Saco "why he put men's hands to a petition they never saw," his ready answer was, "*the Parliament bid me.*"

Soon after this came the expected decision of the commissioners declaring Rigby the lawful proprietor of the Province, and thus overturning the government under Gorges. The last General Court under the authority of Gorges was held at Wells, July, 1646, by Gov. Jocelyn, Capt. Rich, Bonython, and Edward

* York Records.

Godfrey. Thus ended the lawful jurisdiction of Gorges over this and the adjoining towns. A jurisdiction alike remarkable for the ready submission of most of its subjects, and the faithful and zealous conduct of its officers. Rigby's government soon became established throughout the Province of Lygonia, and many, who had been warm supporters of that of Gorges, now yielded obedience to this. The majority of the planters of this town were strongly in favor of Gorges' government, yet when the will of the then existing powers in England was made known to them they quietly submitted to their decree, and became faithful subjects of Rigby's government as they had been of Gorges'. Most conspicuous amongst these was Jocelyn, who, although heartily attached to Gorges and his cause, preferred rather to obey Rigby than to disturb the promised peace of the Province by refusing obedience. This sacrifice of personal feeling to the quiet of the Province was worthy of the man. Upon the organization of Rigby's government, Jocelyn was appointed one of the Judges of Lygonia; the others were George Cleeves and Robert Jordan. There was besides a "General Assembly of Lygonia," of which Foxwell and Watts were members in 1648, but how often it was held, or how long it continued is not known. Partial records of three courts held under this jurisdiction have been ferreted out by diligent antiquaries. These were held in May, September, and December of the same year. The first was convened at Black Point in the latter part of May 1648, and this morsel, appended to an administration granted at that time, is the only record of it to be found—"We the Judges for the Province of Lygonia, do by authority ratify and confirm unto the said P. Cooke this above said administration according to the full tenor thereof. Witness our hands under our Provincial Seal at the day and year above written. G. Cleeves, H. Jocelyn, R. Jordan."

Sir Alexander Rigby died August 1650, leaving the Province

to his son Edward. For two years after this event matters seem to have gone on quietly in Lygonia.

In 1652 Cleeves gratified his desire for contention by entering a complaint with Edward Rigby against his associates in the government of the Province, and by bringing down upon their heads the stern rebuke of the proprietor. Rigby's letter was addressed to Jocelyn, and others holding commissions under Sir Alexander, and contained charges against them of "several miscarriages and illegal proceedings." They were therefore forbidden by Rigby to exercise any authority in the Province until they heard from him. What more than his contentions and restive disposition, induced Cleeves thus to overturn the government he had labored so diligently and unscrupulously to build up, we cannot tell. To all acquainted with the history and character of the men, it will appear much more probable that Cleeves unjustly accused Jocelyn and the others, than that they committed any wrong against the lord proprietor.

One would suppose, from the number of claimants that successively declared themselves entitled to this Province, that the jurisdiction must have been exceedingly desirable. In reading its history we feel that the poor Province has got well through her difficulties when the dispute of Gorges and Rigby is summarily settled, and are not prepared to follow her through another course of violent dissension. But the quiet and peaceful days were not yet. For some time before 1652, Massachusetts had been awaiting a convenient opportunity, when she might safely lay hold of the Province of Maine. Ever since her calculating colonists had discovered that wonderful method of construing their charter, by which they would prove, in a manner less satisfactory to others concerned than to themselves, that they had long held a right to the Province, they secretly cherished the hope of one day extending their jurisdiction as far

as the new construction of it extended the limits of their charter.* The distracted state of Lygonia in 1652 afforded Massachusetts an opportunity of enforcing her pretended right of jurisdiction. Warning was given by the Secretary of Massachusetts to Edward Godfrey, who was then at the head of government in the western part of Maine out of Lygonia, of the intention to occupy the Province. Godfrey earnestly resisted in behalf of the people, but without avail. Massachusetts alone was too powerful for him, but against her and the Commonwealth of England the contest was utterly hopeless. Commissioners were sent by Massachusetts to treat with the inhabitants of Maine, but they got nothing from them more satisfactory than a resolute denial of the right of Massachusetts to any part of the Province. Then the commissioners protested against Godfrey's government, while the officers of that protested in turn against the course of Massachusetts. After a great deal of correspondence had passed between the agents of each government,† and full three months had been spent in this battle of words, with no signs of retraction on the part of the one, or of submission on the part of the other, the inhabitants of Maine grew weary of the strife, and seeing no hope of avoiding the grasp of the strong hand held over them, unwillingly submitted. On the 16th of November, Kittery acknowledged Massachusetts' authority. Gorgeana submitted on the 22d of the same month, Mr. Godfrey consenting to the surrender of his seat of government last of all the inhabitants. During July 1653 Wells, Cape Porpoise, and Saco gave in their submission; but east of

* Massachusetts claimed the territory west of Clapboard Island in Casco. Part of this tract retained the original name of Yorkshire or York, given it by Massachusetts, until 1760. when Cumberland County was set off from York.

† An interesting portion of this correspondence is preserved on the York Records.

Saco the commissioners could discover no signs of the same spirit. Black Point, as the whole town was then designated, and Casco, remained firm in their opposition to the authority of the Massachusetts Colony. The leaders of the opposition in this part of the Province were Jocelyn, Arthur Macworth of Casco, and Robert Jordan of Spurwink.* These were men of note, and were warmly attached to the party of Gorges.—Macworth died without having acknowledged Massachusetts' authority; Jocelyn and Jordan held out against it during the succeeding five years. The position assumed by Jocelyn in this contest was exactly that which was most proper for him. His conduct throughout the whole affair was that of a firm and zealous, but honorable royalist. We cannot but admire the firmness with which he withstood the aggression of this powerful neighbor. In 1654 he and Jordan were summoned to appear before the Massachusetts' Commissioners at York, but not having acknowledged the authority which called them, they refused to go. During the same year Jordan was arrested and imprisoned at Boston for persisting in baptizing children according to the Episcopal form, although repeatedly forbidden to do so by the authorities of Massachusetts. He was soon released, and within a short time both he and Jocelyn were arrested and required to give bonds for their appearance before the General Court. Meanwhile there seems to have been a growing disposition on the part of the inhabitants of this town, to put an end to the unpleasant controversy. The harsh treatment of the opposition leaders by the Massachusetts' government, and the frequent calls for submission, plainly showed a determination on the part of the claimants to enforce their pretended right of jurisdiction. In view of this firm resolution, backed by so great

* John Bonython of Saco, was actor in this opposition; but although notorious, he possessed little influence with the people of the Province.

party power, their own began to waver, and they seriously to consider whether after all they might not better their condition, so far at least as mere civil rights were concerned, by submitting themselves to a power they could not long withstand. Many of them now ceased to regard the matter as one in which cherished principles were involved, and chose to look at it in the light of expediency. Viewing it thus they could not resist the conclusion to which their good sense led them, that for the present, at least, they should submit. In thus deciding against their preferences, and for their temporal interests, they cannot be said to have made even a pleasure of their necessity, much less a virtue.

Jocelyn undoubtedly considered the question of submission to Massachusetts authority as one with which principle had more to do than mere motives of interest. He was a royalist from principle, as well as by birth and education. Had he not been so he would not have remained a royalist as he did when it would have been altogether for his interest to be a republican. And we may rest assured that he did not yield to Massachusetts until convinced that he could do so without any sacrifice of principle.

In 1657, Jocelyn and Jordan made their appearance before the General Court, and were discharged from their bonds. In May 1658, Massachusetts appointed Commissioners who were directed to repair to "Black Point, Richmond's Island, and Casco, or some such one place within the county of York, as they shall judge meet, there to take in the inhabitants thereof into our jurisdiction."* These Commissioners arrived here in July, and having summoned all the inhabitants of this town and Casco to appear before them, they held their Court on the 13th day at the house of Robert Jordan near the mouth of the

* Massachusetts' Records.

Spurwink. Most of those summoned, attended prepared to end the contest. But there were men amongst them who could not submit without a struggle. Such were they to whom the commissioners indirectly refer in their report, in which they say : "After *some serious debate* of matters betwixt us, removal of some doubts, and our tendering some acts of favour* and privilege to them, the good hand of God guiding therein, by a joint consent, we mutually accorded in a free and comfortable close."† The "comfortable close" was nothing less than the submission of those inhabitants who attended the Court, attested by their respective signatures and their oath of allegiance. Undoubtedly such a result was "comfortable" to the commissioners. The following is the act of submission as preserved on the Province Records : "July 13 : 1658. Wee the Inhabitants of Black poynt, Blew poynt, Spurwinke & Cascoe Bay, with all the islands thereunto belonging, do owne & acknowledge our selves to bee subject to the Government of the Massachusetts Bay In New England as appears by our severall subscriptions, In reference to those severall articles formerly granted unto Dover, Kittery & Yorke, which are now granted & confirmed unto us togeather with some additions as appeareth upon Record."‡ Twenty-eight persons signed this acknowledgement, of whom the following fourteen were inhabitants of this town : Henry Jocelyn, Richard Foxwell, Henry Watts, Samuel Oakman, Abraham Follen, Andrew Browne, Ambrose Boaden, Sen., Michael Maddiver, Thomas Hamweth, John Tenney, Arthur

* Probably the same "acts of favour" that were proffered by letter to Gov. Godfrey in 1652, when he wrote in reply—" (as) For sharing your favours to us : By your favour Gentlemen, we are loath to part with our pretious libertys for unknowne and uncertaine favours."

† York Records.

‡ York Records.

Alger Jr., Ambrose Boaden, Nicholas Edgecomb, George Taylor.

The Commissioners, not entirely satisfied with this written pledge of submission, further bound the inhabitants by oath to recognize the authority of Massachusetts, as appears from the additional record. "The psons which have subscribed unto this wrighting, as above mentioned, have further by oath ingaged themselves to the authority of Massatusetts at the date hereof being the 13th day of July 1658." The articles granted by the Commissioners were eleven, of which the following are the most interesting.* "2. That an act of indemnity or oblivion is freely granted them." "6. That the civil privileges now granted them we do not intend shall be forfeited upon differences in matters of religion but their regulations therein must be according to penal laws." "7. *That those places which were formerly called Black Point, Blue Point, and Stratton's Island thereto adjacent shall henceforth be called by the name of Scarborough.* The bounds of which town on the western side beginneth where the town of Saco endeth and so runs along on the western side of the river Spurwink eight miles back into the country." "10. That the towns of Scarborough and Falmouth shall have commission Courts to try causes as high as fivety pounds." "11. That those two towns of Scarborough and Falmouth are to send one deputy yearly to the Court of Election, and have liberty to send two deputies if they see cause." Amongst these articles of agreement will be noticed that changing the name of the town to Scarborough. This name, like most of those adopted by the early settlements in New England, was undoubtedly chosen as an appropriate mark of affection on the part of some of the absent children of Old

For a full copy of these articles see Vol. 1st Maine Historical Collections, p. 290.

Scarborough in England.† Thus the Colony of Massachusetts Bay finally succeeded in the effort to extend its jurisdiction over all the towns within the claim. But, as we have had occasion to notice already, and as will appear more fully hereafter, this success is to be attributed to other causes than a decided change in the opinions and affections of the inhabitants of this Province; for such a cause did not exist.

The Massachusetts authorities took care to secure the services of Jocelyn in the administration of the civil government of the Province. He and Watts were appointed Commissioners for Scarborough under the tenth article of agreement. In conjunction with the Falmouth Commissioners they constituted a Court for the trial, without a jury, of causes not exceeding fifty pounds in value. Jocelyn was also chosen one of the Magistrates for 1658. These were higher officers who exercised jurisdiction throughout the Province, and whose duties were of much more importance. Besides the annual Court held at York, another was appointed to be held in September of each year at Scarborough or Saco. These are the principal features of the new administration to which the Province was now subjected.

CHAPTER III.

JOCELYN AND THE MASSACHUSETTS AUTHORITIES.

The first Court under Massachusetts authority was held at York, July 4th, 1659. Jocelyn does not appear to have been present on this occasion. Whatever may have been the cause of his absence at this time, while acting under Gorges' authority he was to be found constantly in his place on the bench. Per-

† A market town in the North Riding of Yorkshire, much frequented for its celebrated mineral Springs. (Barclay's Dic.)

haps he was not so strongly attached to the new government as to incur the risk and inconvenience of a journey to York. He and Watts were among the officers appointed by this Court. They, together with Jordan, Cleeves and Neale were the Commissioners for Scarborough and Falmouth. Watts was also appointed Constable of Scarborough. The first action of appeal from the Commission Court of Scarborough and Falmouth was tried at this Court. It was at this time also that Watts was presented for "scandalizing" his brother Commissioners. In September of this year a Court was held in Scarborough by the Associates for the County. Jocelyn, Jordan, Nicholas Shapleigh, Edward Rishworth and Abraham Preble were the judges present. This was the annual session for the eastern part of the Province provided for at the time of the towns' submission. This year Scarborough was represented in the General Court of Massachusetts by Edward Rishworth of York, it being a matter of choice whether or not the representative should be a resident of the town represented. The next year Jocelyn was the town's deputy. He was during the same year an associate for the Province, and one of the Commissioners of the town, thus holding at one time three offices of considerable importance. This is but one instance of the great confidence reposed in Jocelyn; others are abundant.

The County Court for 1660 appointed Arthur Alger Grand Juryman, Michael Maddiver constable, and Henry Watts "Clarke of ye Writts" for this town. Jocelyn served as Associate and as town Commissioner during 1661, and Andrew Alger as constable. In 1662 we again find Jocelyn associate and commissioner. The amount of the rates paid by the seven towns of the Province in 1662, was forty-six pounds sterling, of which Scarborough paid seven pounds, more than one seventh of the whole. One can get an idea of the facilities for traveling at that time from the fact that the juryman from Scarborough was

allowed *four days* at three shilling per day, for the time and expense of getting to York about thirty-five miles distant. The journey was commonly made by water, as there was only here and there a road throughout the Province, and the passage on these hardly so safe as that on the water.

Massachusetts had now enjoyed four years of almost quiet rule in Maine. There had been no serious disturbance of her authority; and what with a little yielding on her part, and much self-denial on the part of this Province, affairs had proceeded quite smoothly. But from the first, the partisans of Gorges had with difficulty succeeded in suppressing the rebellious spirit that so often arose in their breasts. Yet convinced as they were of the inexpediency and danger of showing their disaffection towards a government they could not well resist, they had silently awaited their opportunity to rid themselves completely of its jurisdiction. The desired opportunity for effecting a change in their political condition came soon after the restoration of the monarchy in England. When Charles II ascended the throne in 1660, the royalists were filled with new hope and energy. Many things done under the Commonwealth were now to be undone, and that was good cause for encouragement to the half-discouraged royalists of Maine. The grandson of the first proprietor had possession of the title to Maine. He petitioned King Charles to reconsider the act of Parliament by which the Province had been declared the property of others than the heirs of Gorges. The King did so, and the consequence was a royal letter to the Governor of the Massachusetts Colony requiring restitution of Maine to Gorges' heirs, or, at least, a good reason to be given for their occupation of it. The colonists only presented the King in return a humble attempt to justify their course of proceedings.

Meanwhile Jocelyn, and others, hearing the good news from their party in England, became less careful of concealing their

ill feeling towards the existing government of the Province. Soon they threw off all such restraints and openly declared themselves unfriendly to it. In 1662 Jocelyn, and Shapleigh of Kittery, refused to take the oath of office as Associates for the Province. This was the first of a series of acts by which Jocelyn and his friends showed themselves determined to overthrow the authority to which Maine had been subjected for four years past. At a General Court held in Boston October 18th 1662, the following order was adopted—"It is ordered by this Court and the authority yr of yt Capt. Rich. Walden shall bee and is here by commissioned and fully impowered to repare to Yorke at ye tyme of ye County Courts adjournment and send for the severall psons chosen Commiss'rs by ye said County and give ym yr severall oaths to administer justice according to Law for ye yeare inewing till new bee chosen and sworne."* This order was calculated to test Jocelyns loyalty to Massachusetts, he being at that time a Commissioner lately appointed by the County Court. Capt. Waldron appeared at the place and time ordered, but did not succeed in obtaining, at least from two of the commissioners, an acknowledgement of Massachusetts' authority. The two who refused to take the required oath were Jocelyn and Shapleigh. The reason of their refusal is contained in the following protest. "Wee Henry Jocelyn and Nich: Shapleigh Commissioners of the Province of Mayne under Sir F. Gorges Kt. Lord Proprietor of sd Province do protest against the acts and orders of ye General Court of the Massachusetts exhibited by Capt Walden at our adjourned County Court, *being contrary to our former articles and a collaterall agreement with our Commiss'rs at Wells.*"†

In this contest most of the townsmen of Scarborough took part with Jocelyn. So great was his influence over them, and

* York Records.

† York Records.

their own dislike of the government they were under, that an acknowledgment of Massachusetts authority, in the usual way of forwarding returns of officers to be approved by the General Court, was not made by the town in 1663. On the records of a Court held July 7th of that year, by the Massachusetts Commissioners, and such of the associates of the County as had taken the oath of office before Capt. Waldron, we find the entry — “Noe returns are made by the Towns of Sacoe or Scarborough.”

The Massachusetts Commissioners became somewhat alarmed at the state of affairs in these towns, and immediately issued a proclamation, in which, it will be perceived they strike a softer key, and instead of loudly denouncing the Yorkshire rebels, talk mildly of something like “indemnity and oblivion,” As this proclamation is closely connected with our history we give it entire. “Whereas severall Towns within this County of Yorke have not yett made Legall election of Commiss’rs for small causes, wee do yrfore order that each Towne that is hitherto wanting therein shall with all convenient speed attend a choyse of such officers and all other Civill Towne officers yt are not yett chosen according to Law and yr own priviledges form’ly granted by the authority of the Massachusetts, and do further order that the officers soe chosen shall repayre to Capt. William Phillips of Sacoe, who is hereby impowered to give each of them yr respective oaths according to Law; And whereas It appeares that severall p’sons haveing beene appoynted officers by ye late p’tended power under Esqr Gorges, have acted in yr respective places, wee doe hereby order and grant that such p’sons wtsoever as have acted peaceably and civilly upon ye orders and warrants receaved as aforesd shall bee henceforth free and fully discharged from all question, p’sentments or Legall proceedings In any respect to yr damage and disturbance In any of such yr actings, and do further order and

require that all manner of p'sons within the sd county of Yorke: that are privileged by Law or p'ticular grant mayd to this County, that they make Legall election of a Sarjiant Major for commanding of ye Militia of ye sd County in such convenient season that ye voate may be p'sented at the next Court of as'sise to bee held In this County there to bee opened and ye election cleaved (declared) and do hereby appoynt and Impowre the sd Court to give the oath of Law provided In that case to ye p'son then see elected and chosen.

WILLIAM HAWTHORNE.

ELIAZER LUSHER."*

The party in favor of Massachusetts jurisdiction was strong enough in Falmouth to elect two of the three commissioners for that town, but here it seems to have been too weak to elect any of the town officers. Still there were many who were disposed to acquiesce in the jurisdiction of Massachusetts until they should hear from England the further commands of the King, and the lord proprietor of the Province. Without the interference of a stronger hand, the same necessity for their complete submission which before existed, would now return. Aware of this, and knowing also how unavailable their greatest strength was, unless time were allowed for the action of parties in England, the inhabitants of this town and of Falmouth appear to have agreed to a temporary adjustment of their difficulties with Massachusetts. In order to effect this they chose attorneys for the towns, who attended the next Court at York and offered the following submission—"These p'sents testify that Wee Arthur Angar & Fran: Small Attorneys for the 2 Townes of Scarborough & Falmouth, to act for them according to the tenour of the sd Letter of Attorney, at the County Court held at Yorke this 6th day of July 1663: Wee do hereby declare

* York Records.

& subscribe in the behalfe of our sd Townes, & do acknowledge ourselves subject unto & Ingage to remayne obedient to the Laws & ordinances of his majesty as now established under the authority of the Massachusetts, until his majesty otherwise command us, according as by articles wee are already Ingaged.”* This act of the town, by its attorney, was accepted by the commissioners as a sufficient atonement for its late disaffection. This is evident from the course taken with the following presentment by the grand jury. “Wee psent the Towne of Scarborrough for disobeying the warrant wch was lately to them directed for chusing of officers to serve upon the countrys occasions at this court, contrary to yr oaths. Their non appearance manifested ye truth hereof.” When this was brought up for action the Court immediately discharged the town. Alger’s promise of due obedience for the future was faithfully observed by the town for at least one year. This Court of July 1663 also passed a general order against “all who in any manner go about to disturb his Majesty’s peace *under pretence of any power expressed immediately from his Majesty.*” This was apparently another shaft aimed at Jocelyn and other distinguished men of the Province, who held their authority more ‘immediately from his Majesty’ inasmuch as Massachusetts did not intervene between them and him. It was also ordered, “that the next Court of Associates shall have power to call over all presentments against all persons who have not as yet answered to them, and to proceed with them according to Law and usual custom, *Mr. Jocelyn, Maj. Shapleigh, Capt. Champenoon, and Mr. Emerson, only to bee excepted.*” These were all principal men in the opposition, and were possessed of great influence in the Province. Shapleigh and Champenoon, who

* York Records.

was nephew of the first Sir Ferdinando Gorges, were of Kittery, and Emerson was of Wells. The Court seems to have come to the conclusion that it was a waste of time to call over the presentments against these gentlemen. The commissioners nevertheless added a new presentment. Jocelyn, Jordan, Champenoon and Shapleigh were presented, "for acting against this authority Wee are under, and soe renouncing the authority of the Massachusetts, raising means for the subvirting thereof under pretence of a sufficient power from Esqr. Gorges to take off ye people which is manifest to the contrary." But all these proceedings against Jocelyn and his associates seem to have no other effect than to strengthen them in their opposition to the usurping power. The next year Scarborough made returns of officers to the Court. Jocelyn, Foxwell, and Watts, had been chosen Town Commissioners, and Christopher Collins, Constable. These, *excepting Watts*, were approved by the Court. Why the Court should thus reject Watts, when they could accept Jocelyn, we cannot explain. It evidently could not have been on account of Watts' past opposition to Massachusetts, since they approved Jocelyn who had been much more active against her. The only charge we can find presented against Watts on the records, *excepting the single one already noticed*, is one entered by the Court of the preceding year, which represents him as having neglected public worship. But such presentments are too numerous upon the records, to allow us to suppose that they were considered by the Massachusetts authorities as disqualifying one from holding any civil office. There are also many instances which prove the contrary. This is the only instance in which an officer elected by the inhabitants of this town was rejected by the Court. We regret the necessity of leaving it unexplained.

Soon after his application to the King for a restoration of his rights, Gorges sent an agent from England with commissions to

twelve gentlemen of the Province as magistrates under his authority. Two of these magistrates were Jocelyn and Watts. The young Sir Ferdinando was induced to take this first step in the government of the Province by the favorable manner in which his petitions to the Crown had been answered. Massachusetts had not yet transferred to him the right of jurisdiction, which she pretended to hold, but with the King and justice on his side he cared little for the opposition.

In 1664 King Charles appointed four Commissioners, who were empowered to "settle the peace and security" of the colonies. During the next year three of the Kings Commissioners visited this Province for the purpose of adjusting its affairs. On the twenty-third of June they issued a proclamation from York in which they severely rebuked the Massachusetts Colony for its unloyal conduct, and, by the power conferred by the King, "received all his Majesty's good subjects living within the Province of Maine into his Majesty's more immediate protection and government." They also appointed eleven of the principal men of the Province royal Justices, of whom two, Jocelyn and Rishworth, were empowered to administer the oath of office to the others. Any three of these Justices constituted a Court, with the power of determining all civil and criminal causes within the Province. These Commissioners in the King's name "forbid as well the commissioners of Mr. Gorges, as the corporation of Massachusetts Bay, to molest any of the inhabitants of this Province with their pretences, or to exercise any authority within the Province, until his Majesty's pleasure be further known."* Thus the Province of Maine came under a new form of government, one which brought the inhabitants nearer the King, and at the same time removed them beyond the reach of their long-armed neighbor. In case the Justices

* York Records.

of the Province were equally divided upon any subject, the Commissioners directed that Jocelyn should have the casting vote, thus constituting him the Chief Justice of the Province. This was an honorable distinction for Jocelyn, and well deserved by him. To Scarborough then must be allowed the honor of having furnished to Maine its first and only chief magistrate appointed by royal authority. With the establishment of the royal government in the Province the jurisdiction of Gorges ceased, and was never resumed. The first Court under this government was held at Wells, in July of the same year. It was then ordered, amongst other interesting matters, "that every towne should take care that there be a pair of stocks, a cage, and a *coucking stool* erected between this and the next Court." The "coucking stool," or *ducking stool* as it was oftener styled, consisted of a convenient seat attached to the end of a beam, precisely as a bucket is hung from the end of a well-sweep; this was placed over a pond or any deep water, and the person to be punished having been well secured in the seat, was let down, or "ducked," into the water at the pleasure of the officer. This was the most cooling mode of punishment then in use, and was therefore especially reserved for *scolding women*. At the next Court in November, Scarborough, with some other towns, was fined forty shillings for not obeying this order. This is satisfactory evidence that there was no need of such an instrument here; for judging of their estimation of such characters by our own, if there had been scolds, there would have been such appropriate seats prepared for them even at an expense of many times forty shillings to each afflicted planter.* Bridgett Moore of Black Point was punished by this

* There was also a provision for the erection of a whipping-post in the vicinity of every Justice of the Peace. One of these posts remained standing near Dunstan Landing as late as the year 1780.

Court "for complaining against her neighbors and not making out the charge." William Batten was also presented for the like offence. Another curious presentment was that of Joseph Winnock of Black Point "for abusing Mr. Francis Hooke Justice of peace by saying that he was no more drunk than Mr. Hooke, and called the sd Hooke '*Mowne Calfe*.'" For this offence of the tongue, Winnock paid the round sum of forty shillings and went home, having exchanged the contents of his purse for a lesson on the propriety of calling a Justice of the Peace "moon-calf," which he was not likely to forget.

Soon after the establishment of the King's Justices over the Province, the royal Commissioners departed, leaving the government in the hands of those officers. The Province remained quiet under their judicious management, until in 1668 a few of the inhabitants who preferred the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, especially when they were not under it, became so dissatisfied with their condition that they addressed a petition to the General Court asking the Massachusetts government to take them again into its protection. The General Court did not hesitate with regard to the answer they should return such applicants as these, but immediately ordered four commissioners to repair to York, and resume jurisdiction over the Province. In the meantime the Court issued a proclamation declaring their intention of assuming again the government of Maine, and requiring the several towns to make their proper returns of officers by the first Tuesday in July, the day appointed for the Commissioners' Court at York. We may well suppose that this sudden movement on the part of Massachusetts somewhat startled the royal Justices, and many others of the inhabitants, although experience had taught them what they might expect from that quarter. Judge Jocelyn and others of the Justices went to York and awaited the arrival of the commissioners. On the sixth day of July, the day before the court-day, the visitors so anxiously

expected entered the town *escorted by a troop of horse*.* This appeared to be a singular escort for those coming to settle the *peace* of the Province, but it proved highly serviceable by the impression its presence gave the inhabitants, who were quite unused to such demonstrations of power. Jocelyn, and his friends of the King's party, met the Massachusetts gentlemen as they alighted at the door of the Ordinary, and, after a becoming salute, informed them of their desire to confer with them early the next morning. The commissioners told them that they would listen to what they might have to say, but would not treat with them about the matter for which they had been sent into the Province; for they came to govern the affairs of the Province, not to talk about them. The Judges then showed their commission as the King's chosen rulers of the Province, and also a letter from one of the royal Commissioners confirming their authority. The Massachusetts men could not deny the validity of these, but shrewdly evaded the matter by replying that such things concerned the General Court, not them. If the General Court had seen fit to disregard the King's authority, and to make the Justices' right to the government of no account, it was not for them to demur who were the humble agents of that body; their business was to do the will of the Court and nothing else. Such is the substance of the commissioners' reply; and of course it was wholly unsatisfactory to the Judges who justly denied the right of the General Court, or of its agents to proceed in this manner. Jocelyn then remarked to the commissioners, in his quiet manner, that there were not more than "five or six of a town" for them; intimating that although they had come on the important business of the General Court, they would find there little business for themselves to do. They

* Jocelyn's Voyages p. 199—Holmes Annals chron. note 1663—Chalmer's His. p. 137—Letter from the Inhabitants of Maine to Charles II. 1680. Vol. 1st, Maine His. Coll. p. 302.

could better see how that was when the town returns came in, replied they, and until then their duty as commissioners must be attended to. After having duly warned Jocelyn and his associates against attempting any opposition to their proceedings, they repaired to the church to hold their Court.

On the other hand Jocelyn made known to them his intention to hold a Court during the day. The Commissioners opened their Court by reading to the people assembled their commission from the General Court, and by explaining to them, as best they could the reason of their proceedings. They then received the returns of five of the seven towns of the Province ; a result more favorable doubtless than they themselves anticipated, and certainly exceeding the expectations of Jocelyn.

While they were engaged within, sorting and counting these votes, the Justices came to hold their Court, and finding no more convenient place unoccupied, they took possession of the church steps as their tribunal. They then made proclamation for all to attend to the King's commands. This reached the ears of the gentlemen within the house, and, with no little show of loyalty, they immediately ordered out their marshal to proclaim "that if any had any (command) from his Majesty they coming and showing it to the Court, the Court was open and ready to hear the same." Upon this the Justices went in and requested that their commission as officers, and the letter from the King's Commissioner, which they had showed the Massachusetts gentlemen in the morning, might be publicly read. The Commissioners replied that they were then pressed with other business, and could not allow them to be read until afternoon. With this refusal the Justices retired. Soon afterwards the commissioners adjourned for dinner. While they were at dinner the Justices, deeming their Court fairly entitled to the use of the house, at least half of the day, took possession of the vacant seats. Before doing this they had sent out the marshal of the Province

to proclaim a meeting of the Assembly. When the commissioners got notice of this, they caused the marshal and his assistant to be arrested, and then hurried to the church and found there a full bench of Province Judges, holding court in a situation more agreeable, to themselves at least, than that they occupied in the morning. The dignity of the Commissioners was shocked on beholding this, for they say in their report to the General Court, "we told them we expected other things than that they would have put such an affront upon the Court." But undoubtedly the uncertainty of regaining their lost position troubled them more than the apparent breach of courtesies. According to the Commissioners own report of the affair none but gentle means were resorted to in order to recover their seats. The Justices seem to have unfortunately expended all their firmness and energy in getting to the seats. Once in them they might easily have kept themselves there, at least until forcibly driven out; and in this way perhaps they might have given a different direction to the subsequent events of the day. Jocelyn was by far too peaceable a man to be the leader in such a contest. The emergency required the presence of some such an opposer of Massachusetts as John Bonython of Saco; his determined resistance, without the motive, would have been a valuable help to the Justices that day. Some of the people in Court attempted to speak, but the commissioners silenced them, and then ordered their officers to clear the Court of the spectators. Some of Jocelyn's friends, who were standing near him, showing an unwillingness to be thus driven out of the house, he himself requested them to leave peaceably, which they at once did. The Commissioners, being thus left alone with the Justices, invited them down from the seats to hold a private conference. The Justices, though they had already yielded too much, gave up also their seats, and went down to talk with the Commissioners. After some discourse with them in which they

strongly insisted upon having their papers read to the people, the reading was agreed to on condition that the Justices would allow the others to take their seats and proceed with their Court. Again the Justices yielded, and the Commissioners resumed their places on the bench. The royal commission was then read to the re-assembled people, and their own petition to the King, to be taken into his immediate protection, was offered as the reason of the King's grant of this commission. To this the Commissioners readily replied by appealing to the people themselves, telling them "that they could best give answer thereto;" but the people said nothing. From this supposed tacit acknowledgement of their authority by the people the Commissioners took good courage, and desiring to cut short the controversy with the Justices, refused them permission to read the royal Commissioners' letter; pretending that it did not concern the people, and therefore was not worth the reading to them. They then attempted a justification of their whole course with regard to this Province, repeating to the people the old story of the rights conferred by the charter of the Province of Massachusetts Bay. After this Jocelyn and his associates retired leaving the Commissioners to proceed with their business undisturbed by the presence of Justices. Had not the majority of the inhabitants present on this occasion manifested such an unaccountable indifference towards their own cause, the Justices would have resisted this bold-faced invasion upon their rights in a manner better according with their usual zeal and firmness. As it was we can hardly blame Jocelyn for the course he pursued. It was much better for him to retire from the field as he did, than to contest the matter longer against a force so unequal, only to have been at last shamefully overcome. During the proceedings of the Court after the withdrawal of the Justices, a paper which had been sent from Scarborough was read to the people. What the contents of this paper were does not appear

by the report of the Massachusetts Commissioners. Probably it was a statement of reasons for not having obeyed the Court's order by forwarding their returns of town officers.

In this strange manner Massachusetts completed a second usurpation of this Province. The affair as here represented appears in a light as favorable to the Massachusetts Commissioners as their own report of the circumstances will allow.* Another brief account of these proceedings, written by one who was at the time residing in Scarborough, and whose statements, for aught we know, are as reliable as those of the Commissioners, is in the following words: "Sir Ferdinando Gorges suffered in the cause of the King; wherefore he was discountenanced by the pretended commissioners for foreign plantations, and his Province encroached on by the Massachusetts Colony, who assumed the government thereof. His majesty that now reigneth† sent over his Commissioners to reduce them within their bounds, and to put Mr. Gorges again into possession. But these falling into a contest about it, the Commissioners settled it in the King's name (until the business should be determined before his majesty) and gave commissions to the Judge of their court and the justices to govern and act according to the laws of England, and by such laws of their own as were not repugnant to them. But as soon as the Commissioners were returned for England, the Massachusetts enter the Province in a hostile manner with a troop of horse and foot, and turned the Judge‡ and his assistants off the bench, imprisoned the major or commander of the militia, and threatened the Judge and some others that were faithful to Mr. Gorges interest."§

Notwithstanding the apparent willingness with which most of

* See their Report on Massachusetts State files, or in Hutchinson's Massachusetts p. 240.

† Charles II.

‡ Henry Jocelyn.

§ John Jocelyn's "Voyages." Neither the Commissioners' nor Jocelyn's

the inhabitants came a second time under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, that colony by no means enjoyed undisturbed possession of the Province. A spirit of discontent, at first confined to few, soon became general. Some of the old offenders renewed their opposition to her authority, or rather continued to exercise their former rights.

Jordan persisted in acting as an Episcopal clergyman, although forbidden to do so by the laws of Massachusetts. For this he was called to account, and judged in that intolerant spirit which characterized the religious code of the Bay Colonists; a spirit which happily disappeared as the circumstances which induced it faded from memory, and one the frequent exercise of which by those ardent christians none more sincerely regret than the candid amongst their decendants of the present day.

Bonython too, proved himself anything but an obedient subject of the resumed authority. Yet the inhabitants were generally favored with a season of unusual prosperity. All who were satisfied with the result of the controversy at York, returned with fresh zeal to their various employments as farmers or fishermen; while the others, or most of them, made a virtue of necessity, and turned their attention also to matters of more profit than political disputes. There was nothing in the government they were under, opposed to their healthful growth as a people. During the few years of this jurisdiction the settlements in Maine increased in importance; nor was Scarborough behind the others.

The friends of Gorges' government informed the King of the manner in which Massachusetts had disregarded his commands respecting the Province of Maine, and urged him to interpose his authority, and restore their jurisdiction. In 1676 his maj-

report of this affair is to be accepted without proper allowance for their different prejudices.

esty sent letters to the Bay Colonists, requiring them to send over agents within six months, who should be authorized to receive the final decision of the case. Two agents* were accordingly sent, who waited upon the King at Whitehall, and presented the claims of Massachusetts for his determination. After a full hearing of the parties, the King gave the decision that Massachusetts should restrict herself to her *original* bounds, and leave the soil and government of Maine to the heirs of Gorges.† Upon hearing this decision Massachusetts dispatched a private agent to England for the purpose of negotiating with Gorges for the purchase of the Province. This agent purchased Maine in his own name, and apparently for himself, and then made it over by deed to Massachusetts.‡ The consideration for the coveted prize was twelve hundred and fifty pounds sterling.§ This transfer of the Province so displeased the King, and many of the inhabitants that measures were taken to return the purchase money to Massachusetts and so recover the Province; but all proved ineffectual, Massachusetts retained Maine until the final separation in 1820.

The political career of Jocelyn may be affirmed to have ceased with the contest at York in 1668. It is said by Williamson (History of Maine) that soon after that event, Jocelyn removed to Pemaquid, where he resided until 1675. We have no other proof of this removal than the historian's assertion of it. He was here in 1675, and the next year he removed to the Plymouth Colony; farther we have not been able to trace him. In

* They were Wm. Stoughton of Dorchester afterwards Lieutenant Gov. and Chief Justice, and Peter Bulkley of Concord.

† Hubbard's New England. Hutchinson's Massachusetts.

‡ Deed Usher to Massachusetts. York Records.

§ Sullivan and others say £1200. In Dr. Webster's "Letters to a Young Gentleman" the sum is £1400. The deed from Usher as recorded in the York Records, has it £1250, which was undoubtedly the sum given.

1668 he had been for more than thirty years actively engaged in the political affairs of the Province, and was growing weary of the cares of government. These many years had been to him one long day of business, and now came the evening when his tired spirit longed for repose. We shall have occasion to introduce him hereafter, and therefore will now but briefly review his course in connection with the events just narrated. To every candid person acquainted with these scenes in our early history, and aware of the grounds upon which he based his conduct, Jocelyn's course will appear to need no defence. That the principles by which he was governed rendered him, from the first, somewhat obnoxious to the Massachusetts Colonists, was the misfortune of his situation; that he was ever firm in those principles and honorable in all his actions, his whole history proves. The occasion upon which he came most directly in contact with his opponents was that of the contest at York, in 1668. We have never heard any objection made to his conduct at that time, excepting this, that *he yielded too soon*; to which we must assent. With justice on his side, the contest appears to have been too short. But as we have before remarked, his may have been the proper course to prevent a more humiliating defeat. After this event he appears no more in political life, but is engaged in preparing the means of defending himself and neighbors against the threatened violence of the common foe of all the New England Colonists. Dreadful as were the results of Indian hostility, it was not without its good effect in drawing off the attention of the settlers from their political differences, and fixing it upon a subject of greater importance to them all—the safety of themselves and their families.

Jocelyn retired from the scene of his political honors and cares possessed of warm friends, whose presence was cheering to his old age; and of a clean conscience, the most pleasant companion of all.

CHAPTER IV.

OTHER EARLY SETTLERS.

Soon after Cammock's settlement at Black Point, the number of inhabitants increased quite rapidly, until, as we have seen, in 1671 it had come to be nearly three hundred. Of these the majority of the men were undoubtedly engaged in the then profitable fisheries along the coast, while a few were left to cultivate the plantations. Few of the descendants of these early settlers are residing amongst us. The breaking up of this settlement by the Indians, as will hereafter appear, scattered the early inhabitants of the town in almost every direction. Scarcely any of them returned, and few left any record of themselves which we can discover. The names of many have come down to us; these we shall now present, with as many facts respecting them as we have been able to collect. Besides those already noticed, there were other respectable men among the early settlers.

Abraham Jocelyn, a brother of Henry, was admitted an inhabitant of the town while under Rigby's government in 1652. The same year Henry Jocelyn, Robert Jordan and Henry Williams, as Assistants under Rigby, put him in possession of two hundred acres of land, including the hill now known as "Scottow's." This tract Jocelyn afterwards sold to Joshua Scottow, from whom the hill derives its name. Previously to 1660 it was called "Jocelyn's Hill." It is worthy of note that the tract of land at present known as the "Scottow's Hill Farm" contains two hundred acres, the number granted to Mr. Jocelyn two hundred years ago; the farm having neither increased nor diminished in size since first laid out in 1652. In a deed to one Thomas Beard, of a strip of land not connected with his grant from the assistants, Jocelyn speaks of the "creek that goeth by my house from the *Hot Spring*." It appears from this

that his house was at the foot of the hill near the edge of the marsh. The creek still remains, but the hot spring has disappeared. In 1657 George Cleeves regranted the tract given him by the assistants, together with forty acres near Dunstan Falls, with liberty to build a sawmill on those falls, or the falls next above, and to cut any timber growing within *ten miles*. Jocelyn was to pay one farthing an acre rent for the land, and two-pence for every tree one foot square. He does not appear to have improved this grant. In 1660 he removed to Boston, having sold his estates here to Capt. Joshua Scottow.*

John Libby, the first of the name who settled in Scarborough, and probably the first in New England, came to this country from Broadstairs, in the county of Kent, England, a small seaport fifteen miles distant from Canterbury. The precise year of his settlement here is not known, though there is good reason for supposing it to have been either 1659 or 60. In 1663 he was living here in his own house, as the following extract from Henry Jocelyn's deed to him will show: "Two hundred and thirteen acres to begin at the creek to the east of said Libby's common landing place, thence to his dwelling house, thence west and north-west."† There was also included in this deed "the marsh half of *that neck his (Libby's) dwelling house stands upon*, to the creek called pine creek over against Godfrey Shelden's house." Libby's house stood on the westerly side of the road to Black Point Neck, near where it crosses the little stream known as Libby's River. Shelden's house was

* Henry Jocelyn who settled in Scituate 1669 was probably the son of Abraham Jocelyn. He was married to Abigail Stockbridge of Scituate, and their children born between 1677 and 1702 were, Abigail, Abraham, Anna, Charles, Mary, Nathaniel, Rebecca, Jabez, Jemima, Keziah, Henry, Joseph, and Thomas. Abraham Jocelyn was living in *Hingham* 1647 (Rev. S. Deane to Wm. Willis.)

† Jocelyn to Libby 1663, Original Manuscript.

nearly opposite. Libby's son and grandson occupied the place afterwards, but from them it passed into the hands of persons unconnected with the family. Mr. Libby was for many years one of the town's principal planters, and appears to have been looked upon by his fellow townsmen as a man of considerable wealth, although the inventory of his estate exhibits a sum total of only £118. He served as constable in 1664, and as one of the Selectmen of the Town in 1669. He is the common ancestor of the great numbers of this name who are living in this vicinity. In old records, and other manuscripts this family name is variously spelt. Sometimes Luby, Laby,* oftener Lebby, Lebbee, Libbee, Lybby and Libby. The last mode of spelling is now generally adopted. He died in 1682. The names of his children, so far as they can be ascertained, were John, James, Antony, Henry, Samuel, David, Matthew, Daniel. By these the family name was rapidly extended, until now the

* This spelling gives some force to the suggestion that our own worthy townsman was a descendant of *Reginald Labbe* who died in England in 1293, leaving a will which the antiquarians of Great Britain esteem as a rare morsel of its kind. The inventory of his estate is, in modern English, the following: "Reginald Labbe died worth chattels to the value of thirty-three shillings and eight pence, leaving no ready money. His goods comprised a cow and calf, two sheep and three lambs, three hens, a bushel and a half of wheat, a seam of barley, a seam of dragge or mixed grain, a seam and a half of fodder, and one half-pennyworth of salt. His wardrobe consisted of a tabard, tunic and hood; and his 'household stuffe' of a bolster, a rug, two sheets, a brass dish, and a tripod or trivet." "Possessing no ready money his bequests were made in kind. A sheep worth *tenpence* is left to the 'High Aulter' of the church at Newton, and another of the same value to the Altar and fabric fund of the church at 'Eakewoode.' His wife Yda received a *moiety* of the testator's cow, which was valued at five shilling, and Thos. Fitz Neoregs was a copartner in its calf to the extent of a fourth." The expences of his funeral, proving the will, &c. were more than one-third of the whole property. Some of the items of expense were, "one penny for digging his grave, two pence for tolling the bell, sixpence for making his will, and eight pence for proving it."

bearers of it may be reckoned by hundreds. To some of these it may not be uninteresting to read the will of their ancestor. which is singularly brief.

"In the name of God amen. Bee it known unto all unto whom this shall come that I John Libby Senior do give unto my children five shillings apeece to every one of them & to my two younger sonnns namely Mathew & Daniell to have fivety shillings out of ye estate when they come to age, & my wife shall have It all to her disposing to mantayn the children. John Libby."

9th Feb. 1682

ANTHONY ROE

LEFT. INGERSOLL

Witnesses.

Amongst the enterprising settlers early established at Black Point was Christopher Collins, at first a fisherman and afterwards a farmer of considerable property. He had become a resident of the town in 1660, where he styles himself "of Black Point, fisherman." He lived on land adjoining Libby's, probably below towards the Neck. The following interesting record relates to this townsman, and illustrates at least his political character. At a Court of Associates held in 1661 "Christopher Collins being convicted before this Court upon his owne acknowledgment concerning some sleight and scandalous Languidge hee uttered against his majesty, In saying, if the King were as hee should bee, hee would owne him when hee knew it, and that he was rightly established; and therefore hee would honour him when hee knew hee was, hee would doe it; with some other unhandsome speeches hee gave out against the last County Court That they looked more after the *gathering of the fines* than they did look after aniething else. Fined £10." One half of this fine was afterwards remitted.

His son Moses seems to have had a disaffection for the religious institutions of the day, equal to that of the father for the political. In 1671, he, together with John, James, Sarah, and Mary Mills, children of John Mills of Black Point, was present-

ed to the Court for frequent absence from public worship. Collins' answer to the charge, when brought before the Court, was in these words: "your worships is false and idolatrous." Sarah's response was: "You worship divills and not God;" and Mary's — "Your ministers are not ministers of God, they are ministers of ye letter and not of ye spirit." Mary's allusion to "ministers of the spirit" savors of quakerism; and of this we should suspect them, were there no farther proof of it than is contained in their answers to the Court. The full proof of their quakerism is to be found in a form far more unpleasant than their language, as we turn the leaf of the Record book and read the brief entry — "*Moses Collins and Sarah Mills twenty stripes for being quakers.*" This, we believe, is the only record of the punishment of any of the inhabitants of this Province for the offence of quakerism. This was in 1671, while Maine was subject to the authority of the Massachusetts Colonists.

Christopher Collins died in 1666, aged fifty-eight. The strange manner of his death led many to suspect that he had been murdered, and circumstances attending it fastened their suspicions upon James Robinson, a cooper of Black Point, as the murderer. He was therefore immediately arrested, and tried at Casco. The verdict of the jury was this: "Whereas James Robinson of Bla: Poynt cooper was Indited the 26th day of June 1666 upon suspition of murdering Christopher Collins of Blacke Poynt, at his Majesty's Court houlden in Cascoe, and being tried by the grand Jury of this Court and committed to us the Jury of Life and Death. We find that the sayd Collins was slayne by misadventure, and culpable of his own death, and not upon anie former malice, and therefore the sd James Robinson *not guilty* of murder. July 29 1666. Mr. Rich: Collicot, Foreman." Walter Gendall and Nathan Bedford bound themselves in the sum of one hundred pounds, that

Robinson should "sue out his pardon within a twelve-month and a day." A few items from the inventory of Collins estate will show him to have been one of the most enterprising and successful farmers of those days, when he was a prosperous "planter" who owned a pair of oxen and a cow.* Amongst other evidences of his prosperity to be found on this inventory are the following — "*Twenty-three* cows and a Bull; *thirteen* Calves and yearelings; *eight* two yeare oulds; two steares and a Heffer: *thirty* swine ould and young; *eight* oxen;" he also left "one moose skine, *six* bear skines, one deer skine, four pounds worth of beaver, and a leather coate." His whole property amounted to four hundred and twenty-two pounds sterling. His son Christopher succeeded him here, and apparently with similar success as a farmer. In 1667 this son sold part of the plantation to Joshua Scottow, then of Boston, who early commenced buying land at Black Point, and finally became the owner of nearly all that part of the town. We know not what became of Moses Collins, that first given being the latest record of his name we can find. If he remained in the country, he probably removed beyond the jurisdiction of Massachusetts.

Joseph Phippen, who settled at Falmouth in 1650, was for some years a resident of this town.†

During his stay here he resided on Blue Point, much to the discomfort, as will soon appear, of one of the worthiest of the early settlers there. We are not curious to discover any of the quarrels of the respectable townsmen of that day, but the record of them is often worth transcribing: This appears to be one of that sort—"July 5th 1658. Wee p'sent Jos Phippeny

* John Jocelyn notices the great scarcity of cattle in Maine 1638 to 1670.

† I find it upon the York Records that Phippen was "of Blue Point" in 1658, while it is affirmed in the History of Portland, on equally good authority that in 1658 he was an inhabitant of Falmouth. The discrepancy does not affect the truth of what is here said of him.

of blew poynt for abusing Mr. Bellingham Dep: Gov: for saying yt Mr Bellingham gave him Counsell to *beat Foxwell, and murther him, and carry him downe to his doore in a corpse.*" At the same Court Phippen was presented for twice "beating Mr. Rich. Foxwell, and drawing blood from him." Foxwell was then protected from a third assault by this order— "For preventing any further trouble between Mr. Rich. Foxwell, and Joseph Phippen, otherwise called Phippeny, till matters of difference between them can come to a more full hearing, It is ordered by this Court yt Rich: Foxwell and Jos: Phippen shall enter into a bond of one hundred pounds each p'son and putt yr suretys of fifty pounds a peece more to keepe ye peace towards all men, especially one towards another." This prevented further trouble, until matters were finally adjusted by reference to Maj. Nicholas Shapleigh, Abraham Probble, and Edward Rishworth. The origin of this difficulty is incidentally explained by a remark of Foxwell's a few years afterwards, to Andrew Alger, who was about engaging with him to cut the grass upon the marsh. They agreed that the cutter of the grass should have half the hay; "but Andrew," said Foxwell, "don't divide it as Phippen did, *he cut all the grass, and carried off all the hay.*"* One of the witnesses against Phippen when presented for this offence, was Jonas Bailey of Blue Point. Mr. Bailey was an inhabitant of the town as early as 1650, how long before is not known. He was one of the persons to whom Edward Rigby addressed his letter of complaint in 1652, but it does not appear what part he took in Rigby's

* Ms. Deposition. On the Massachusetts State files is a petition from several of the freemen of Falmouth, against their deputies at the General Court, of whom Phippen was one. The petitioners say of him—"Mr. P. not many days before his departure *was beating and drawing off ye blood of his majestic subjects*, and stands upon record for skuldering ye deputie governor and was always a man of contention and strife since he came in our parts."

government. He was one of the colonists sent to this country to people the Patent of Mr. Trelawney, and it is probable that he remained in the service of Trelawney some years before coming to this town. We can discover no connection between him and Hilkiah Bailey who was living at Blue Point in 1645, but he had a brother Nicholas in Saco 1653. His first wife was the widow of Geo. Dearing, one of the four first settlers of Blue Point; his second was Eleanor Jackson, the widow of John Jackson an early resident at the same place. Bailey died in 1663. Six years afterwards the town granted his widow one hundred acres of land at Blue Point. The Selectmen whose names appear on this grant were John Libby Sen., Henry Williams, Gyles Barge, Andrew Alger.* The widow Bailey became a large owner of lands in town, which she held in her own name, and (as we might infer from her being styled "planter"†) cultivated with her own hands.

Soon after the death of John Winter of Richmond's Island in 1645, the extensive fishing establishment at that place was broken up, and the numerous fishermen, who had been in the employ of Winter, were scattered throughout the settlements along the coast. One of them, Michael Maddiver, afterwards settled at Black Point, and became a respectable farmer. He became an inhabitant of the town in 1657, at which time he was put in possession of 150 acres of land on the Scarborough side of the Spurwink, adjoining Boaden's estate. Robert Jordan's deed of this tract to Maddiver is dated March 3d, 1657. Jordan had become proprietor of Winter's estates at Spurwink and Richmond's Island, and granted Maddiver this land in consideration of money due to him from Winter for

* Massachusetts Historical Society MSS.

† Henry Jocelyn to "Eleanor Jackson and her son, *planters*." (Original deed.)

service in the fisheries. John Tenny, another of Winter's fishermen, settled next to Maddiver the same year. That Tenny's land adjoined Maddiver's will appear from the following extracts.

"William Warren, aged 34 years, (1664) deposeth that he saw Michael Maddiver pull down Tinney's pasturo fence; whereby Tinney lost a bull and was compelled to house his young cattle for want of a pasture, which is above 50 shilling's loss."

Coram GEO: MUNJOY Assoc.

"Walter Gendle sweareth yt about 3 years since he did make up a fence for John Tinney: and Michael Maddiver and his wife, came and looked upon it and said that it was sett as straight as if it had been sett by a line, and that no man in the country ed have done it better; but about two months since i did see Michael Maddiver pluck down some of ye same fence &c." June 11th '64

Coram RD FOXWELL."

The parcel of land in controversy was one that Tenny bought of Ambrose Boaden, Jr., in 1657, which Maddiver thought to be within the bounds of his grant from Jordan. In 1669 Maddiver exchanged farms with Walter Gendal, then of Falmouth, but for some years afterwards a resident of Black Point. In 1682 Scottow granted Maddiver eight acres of the Cammock Patent. In the list of Scottow's grants he is familiarly styled "Old Maddiver." He had at that time been more than forty years in this vicinity, and was undoubtedly entitled to the epithet.

Tenny served as the town's constable for 1668, and as one of the Selectmen for 1679 and 1681. In 1690 he removed to Gloucester, Massachusetts, where he lived until his death, with Mrs. Waddock his wife's mother.*

The first notice we find of Andrew Brown, another of the early settlers in the town, is as a witness for Foxwell in the difficulty with Phippen 1658. Later in the same year his name appears amongst those affixed to the town's submission to

* The name of Tenny (or Tenney) remained in Gloucester, and from thence has come back to our State. Hon. I. S. Tenny of the Supreme Bench is, we believe, a decendant of our townsman.

Massachusetts. He lived on the side of Black Point nearest Blue Point. Part of his farm lay near the foot of Scottow's Hill. In 1670 he was the constable. Bailey of Blue Point mentions in his will, 1669, the "five sons of Andrew Browne," but gives the names of none of them. From another source we learn that the names of four were Andrew, John, Joseph and Charles. Our townsman was one of the earliest of the name in New England, and although we cannot trace the descent of those bearing this name in this vicinity, it is highly probable that they are his descendants.

Two persons by the name of Oakman were among the early residents of the town. Samuel Oakman was here as early as 1657, and in 1663 received from Jocelyn a grant of fifty acres at Black Point, where he afterwards resided. He was one of the Selectmen for 1679. He died in 1680, leaving a son Samuel, who appears on the records as one of the Selectmen for 1681. A little island in the river at Spurwink was known as "Oakman's Island" until late in the last century. Elias Oakman, the other settler of this name, does not appear to have become an inhabitant of the town until 1666. He lived at Dunstan Landing.

We have already shown the probability that, previously to 1631, John Stratton resided on the Island now bearing his name. His successor there was one Christopher Page, who lived alone upon the Island, and died there in 1667. He appears to have been a comfortless bachelor, whose fishing boat and lines stood him instead of wife and children. The following, liberal copy of the inventory of his estate, will tell the story of his life better than any description of ours.

"A boat with furniture at presant to her . . .	30.00.00
To a small bedd & pillow	1.14.00
To an oulde Cappe	0. 7. 6
To an oulde Grein Coate	0.12. 0
Two ould blanketts & a gune barrell	1. 1. 0

An ould aze & ould nayles	0. 5. 0
for ould lynes 4s & new lynes 16s	1. 0. 0
for Hookes	0. 6. 0
	35. 5. 6

Prayssed by us on Stratton's Island

JOHN DAVIES

RICHD BOURTON."

It must have been with some such solitary's inventory as this in mind, that Goldsmith wrote the verse—

"Man wants but little here below."

Amongst the grants of land from Jocelyn to the planters about him, was one in 1662 of fifty acres to Giles Roberts. Little else is known concerning this townsman than what can be gathered from his will. From that we learn that his family consisted of five children, three of whom were then (January 1666) with him, and two with Arthur Alger, who is styled his "loving brother-in-law." He also constituted his "Honored and Trusty friend Mr. Hen: Jocelyn," and his "loving brother-in-law" Wm. Sheldon "overseers" of his will. At the General Assembly held at Saco, June 1667, Arthur and Andrew Alger appeared and engaged to take care of Giles Roberts' five children. One of these was Abraham Roberts who afterwards lived on part of the Alger's estate.

Richard Moore also became a tenant of Jocelyn in 1668. It probably was he to whom Geo. Cleaves, in behalf of Rigby, granted 400 acres of land at Cape Porpoise in 1647. The earliest record of him as an inhabitant of this town is in 1665. Upon the Court records for that year is the presentment of "Bridget Moore wife of Rich: Moore of Black Point." Although once the proprietor of four hundred acres at Cape Porpoise, and afterwards of at least twelve acres at Black Point, in 1679 Moore became dependent upon the town for his livelihood. Perhaps the infirmities of old age induced him to resort to this means of support. His case is interesting as

being that of the *first town pauper* of Scarborough. By the Court held in 1679, "the inhabitants of Black Point are ordered to maintain Richard Moore & to remunerate his son-in-law Rich: Hunniwell for his previous expense." Moore died in 1681. A small brook which crosses the road to the Neck near by his former dwelling-place, retained its name of "Moore's Brook" for nearly a century after his death.

William Shelden, alluded to above as the brother-in-law of Roberts, was the son of Godfrey Shelden an early settler in the town. In 1660 Godfrey bought of Jocelyn a farm of one hundred acres at Black Point, upon which he lived during the remainder of his life, and which was afterwards occupied by William. The "Shelden place" was on the opposite side of the river (Libby's) from John Libby's. In 1673 Scarborough was presented at Court "for not mending her highways between Wm. Shelden's groundes and Lybey's." Again in 1685 "for not maintaining a sufficient bridge between Shelden's and Libby's houses." These extracts fix the locality of Shelden's farm very satisfactorily. Godfrey Shelden died in 1671, aged 65. His son William remained at Black Point until driven away by the Indians in 1675. After King Philip's war he returned, and stayed here until 1690, when he, together with the other inhabitants, was compelled to forsake the town. Upon the the second settlement early in the next century the Shelden estate fell into the hands of Daniel Fogg of Kittery, afterwards of Scarborough. Neither William, nor his younger brother John Shelden ever returned to the town after this desertion. William's wife was Rebecca Scarlet, probably a member of the family of that name residing in Boston in 1670 and subsequently.

The host of a country inn is even now a character of no little importance; two hundred years ago he was the great man of his town. The keeper of the first "ordinary" in Scarborough, of which any record is left, was Nathan Bedford. We hear of

him first as the town's constable in 1665. Two years afterwards he was admonished by the Court "for not keeping due order in reference to his ordinary." In 1669 we find him presented to the Court "for selling beare and wyne"—the second offence of the kind. In 1673 the town was presented "for not providing a house of Intertaynment for Strangers." The Selectmen provided against a second presentment by then appointing Bedford to keep an ordinary. He kept the same in 1675. The location of Bedford's ordinary during these seven years appears to have been near the Blue Point ferry. In 1679 he removed to the mouth of the Spurwink. In July of that year, Ambrose Beaden, Jr., who then lived on the estate said to have been granted to his father by Capt. Cammock, sold his plantation to Bedford, who remained upon it until his death. It then passed into the hands of one Cauley who married Bedford's widow. Besides this estate, Bedford owned at the time of his death "a plantation and house" on Blue Point, where he long kept the ordinary, the favorite resort of such of the planters and fishermen as relished good "beare and wyne," and were not loath to tell and hear wonderful stories. They were no doubt comfortable and cheerful men who used to take their seats on the high-backed settle before Bedford's roaring fire to enjoy a winter evening. Many of them went miles to be there, but once there, few thought of the miles they had come, and fewer still remembered the miles they had to go to reach their homes.

Bedford died in 1681. There was something mysterious about his death, which it puzzled the townsmen to explain. Suspicion of his murder was by some means or other fastened upon Capt. Scottow, then the principal land owner and merchant in town; but, as will appear from the records, the suspicion was unfounded. Scottow took an active part in the affairs of the town during the Indian troubles of 1675-6, and will

therefore be particularly noticed in our account of them ; we may remark, however, as a partial explanation of the course here taken against him, that he had some bitter enemies amongst the inhabitants, and was never possessed of the confidence of all the townsman. The following verdict of the jury of inquest was given August 24th, 1681, a few days after Bedford's decease. "Nathan Bedford's body being vewed and his corpes being searched by ye Jurie of Inquest, and Mr. fowlman a Chyargion, sd Jurie did not find any of these bruises about his head or body to bee mortall without drowning wch they judge to bee ye canse of his death." In September of the same year further inquiry concerning Bedford's death was ordered by the Court, and Scottow was summoned to appear with the Jury of inquest at the next Court. The next record bears the date May 30th, 1682, and entered in the margin of the book — "*Scottow Cleured.*" "Upon further Inquisition made into the verdict of the Coroners quest relating to the death of Nathan Bedford, this Court accepts of the Jury's verdict without having suspition of any person being guilty of his death." We cannot discover upon what grounds any of those townsman proceeded who went so far as to accuse Scottow of murder.

James Robinson of Blue Point was the "cooper" tried for the murder of Collins and acquitted in 1683. He lived near his father-in-law Richard Foxwell, whose second daughter, Lucretia, was his wife. He continued here until the war of 1675 broke out, when he removed to New Castle, N. H., where he and his wife died. They left four daughters in New Castle, three of whom were married.

The first amongst our settlers by the name of Burrage* was John, who became an inhabitant of the town as early as 1662. The earliest notice of him is the complaint of Capt. Cammock

* This name is frequently spelt Burridge, and was so written by the first townsman bearing it.

against John Winter for trespass on the limits of Black Point Patent in 1640. The plaintiff's declaration was as follows—
 “Capt. Thomas Cammock cometh into this Court and declareth that this defendt: Jno. Winter, since the last Court houlden here, sent some of his servants to cutt hay in the limitts of the plaintiffes Patent without his consent or knowledge, wch the plaintiffe understanding went forthwith to Spurwinke house and warned *Benjamin and Jno. Burridge and others being servants to the defendant* that they should give knowledge to the deft. to forbear &c.”*

In 1662 this same John Burrage leased of Jocelyn a farm of one hundred and sixty-three acres adjoining John Libby's at Black Point, the same, or part of that, afterwards occupied by Christopher Collins. William Burrage, one of the most respectable of the early townsmen, was a son of John. In 1682 he was one of the Selectmen, and in 1684 was the town's deputy to the General Assembly of Massachusetts.† His estate was one of the most valuable farms in town; it was situated on the west side of the Nonsuch River, and was part of the tract afterwards well known as the “Nonsuch Farm.” The widow of John Burrage married Thomas Hannuct an old resident here, and one of the signers of the town's submission to Massachusetts in 1658. He died in 1676.

Gyles Barge, or Bardge,‡ was an early settler on Blue Point,

* York Records.

† Mr. Greenleaf in his *Eccles. Hist. of Maine* has mistaken the record in styling Wm. Burrage “*the minister of Scarborough chosen in 1684.*” The record he refers to reads thus—“Wm. Burridg was made choice of *to goe to see for* a minister, and for any other business to the President (Danforth) which consarnes the towne.” (Town Rec. p. 24.)

‡ We at first supposed this to be a corruption of *Burridge*, and that this townsman was one of the Burrage family; but having been unable to discover any connection between them, and finding this townsman's name invariably written *Barge* or *Bardge* by himself, and by others familiar with him, we have decided against that supposition.

where he became the owner of a large estate. Most of his lands came into his possession by marriage with Eleanor Bailey, the widow of Jonas Bailey. In 1682 she made over to him five hundred acres at Blue Point, and fifty-five at Spurwink, which, when added to his former possessions, and his subsequent grants, made him one of the largest proprietors in town. He was chosen one of the Selectmen for 1669, and deputy to the General Court 1682. He soon afterwards removed to Dorchester Massachusetts.

At Dunstan, besides the brothers Alger, there lived a number of planters, most of whom were connected with the family of the proprietors. John Alger, the eldest son of Andrew, lived next his father. Next to him was John Palmer who settled in 1660, upon fifty acres near the Landing, which he purchased of the Alger. He was soon afterwards married to Elizabeth, daughter of Andrew Alger. In 1680 he removed to Boston, where he spent the remainder of his life.* At the Landing lived John Ashton (sometimes spelt Austin) whose first wife was also a daughter of Andrew Alger. He remained at the Landing a few years, and then went to live with Richard Foxwell, at Blue Point, whose daughter Susanna was his second wife. After the death of this wife, Ashton removed to Great Island, thence to Marblehead, where he took as his third wife Mary Page daughter of Nicholas Edgecomb of Blue Point. At Marblehead he ended his days. A third daughter of Andrew Alger, Joanna, was married to Elias Oakman who lived west of the landing on Milliken's River. These were for many years the only persons living at Dunstan proper.

* There were two other persons of the name of John Palmer among the early residents in Maine. One of them was living at Falmouth between 1680 and 90; the other was a Commissioner in the Duke of York's Province east of the Kennebec in 1686 and a Counsellor under Gov. Andross. (Willis) These were distinct persons; at least we know that Palmer of Falmouth was not the same person with our townsman.

Besides those we have briefly noticed in this chapter, the following persons were inhabitants of the town prior to the Indian war of 1675. At Blue Point, George Barlow, Robert Nichols Sen. and Jr., John Jackson, Jacob Rabskine, John Howell, Ralph Allison, John Griffin. And at Black Point, John Hickford, Abraham Follen, Joseph Winnock, George Taylor, Richard and John Mayre, George Garland, George Knight, Christopher Riggot, John and James Mills, William Batten, Henry Willams, Selectman, and Assistant under Rigby 1652, John Budizert, Anthony Roe, James Mechimore, Henry Booking, George Gregory, Wm. Liscomb, George Bartlett, Thomas Payne, Francis Shullett, Richard Willin, Roger Dearing Sen.,* Thomas Cleverly, Christopher and Thomas Ellkins, Peter Hinkson, Andrew Heffer, Joseph Oliver, John Start, Robert Elliot,† John Samson, John Warwick (or Waddock,) Roger Vicars, John Cocke, Christopher and John Fickett, Daniel Chissimore,‡ John McKenny. To these may be added the more distinguished names of Scottow and Gendal. Capt. Scottow frequently visited his estate here before his settlement in the town. Walter Gendal was here in 1661 as a resident; later he lived at Falmouth, and at the time of his death was an inhabitant of North Yarmouth. We shall have occasion to notice them at length hereafter. We have also the names of others, of whom all that we know is that they were living in the town in the latter part of 1676. It is possible, though not probable, that they were permanent residents here. Such are the following: Edward Fairfield, Robert Tydey, James Ogleby,

*The father probably of Roger Dearing who came to this town from Kittery at the time of the second settlement.

† See Biographical Notices.

‡ A Daniel Chissemore was living in Newbury 1696. (Coffin's Newbury.) In a deed to John McKenny given Jan. 12, 1673 by Robt. Jordan, mention is made of "*Chissemores Hill*" near the Nonsuch.

Duncan Chessom, Francis White. To one acquainted with the names now common in this town, this catalogue of early residents will be chiefly interesting as showing the almost total change in names which has occurred here since the seventeenth century. The causes of such a change will soon become apparent. Some whose names only are here presented were active citizens, bearing well their part in the management of the town's affairs, and at the same time faithful to their own interests. Of such we would write more did space allow. Others were quite poor fishermen, and yet poorer planters, of whom we know scarcely anything more than their names. No event of much importance, excepting those already noticed, occurred during the first forty years of the town's history; or if they did no record of them has been discovered. The forward rank that Scarborough held amongst the larger towns of the early Province, is the best proof of the worth and energy of these her first children. The excellent advantages of her situation are unchanged; and that towns, then hardly equal to her companionship, have since exceeded her so far in growth, and all prosperity, or, that they have at least retained their old position while she has not, can be owing to nothing but the later neglect of advantages which were then improved. It is evident from the contrast that the early townsmen were, to say the least, more enterprising than their successors of the last half century have been. Falmouth on the one side, and Saco on the other, for many years kept nearly an equal pace with this town in population and general growth.*

* As late as 1791 the census shows a very slight difference in population between Portland and Scarborough. The returns for the two towns then were—Portland 2240—Scarboro' 2235! Compare with this the census of 1850.

CHAPTER V.

JOHN JOCELYN AT BLACK POINT.

Among the most valuable records relating to the early history of our country are those preserved in books written by the settlers themselves, or by the few travelers who were induced for novelty's sake to visit the "wilderness of America." Of the former the "Journal" of the excellent Gov. Winthrop is an invaluable specimen; of the latter the Voyages of John Jocelyn Gent. are peculiarly interesting to us. This traveler was the brother of Henry Jocelyn, and spent nine years with him at Black Point. His first visit here was in 1638. He arrived on the 14th July of that year, and staid until September of the next year. He came again 1663, and remained until 1671. Four years after his last return to England he published a narrative of his visit which is a curious medley of the "odds and ends" of his experience in New England. The views here given of the manners and customs of New England two hundred years ago must have been mostly derived from Jocelyn's observation of those amongst whom he resided. We suppose much that he states in a general manner, as relating to the whole of New England, to be inferred from what he knew of those with whom he daily met in his walks about Black Point, and at the fireside of his brother. This renders his book very important to our present purpose, as illustrating the condition, habits, and general character of the early townsmen. It is for this reason we extract so much from it, copying such parts of the account as our limits will allow, only wishing that the whole might be had so easily as to render these extracts superfluous.*

* Jocelyn's book is now rarely met with. There is a copy, we believe, in the Library at Cambridge. In these pages use has been made of the accurate transcript of the Massachusetts Historical Society, in Vol. 3d, series 3d of its invaluable Collections. The title page of the author's edition is this :

The notice of his embarkment for this country is in these words: "A. D. 1638: April 26. I went on board the *Nicholas* of London, of 300 Tuns burden—manned with 48 sailors—the master Robert Taylor, The merchant Mr. Edward Tynge with 164 Passengers, men, women, and children." Here follow notices of Capt. Cammock, who appears to have been in the *Nicholas* on his return from a visit to England. "May 12. One Martin Fry, a shipping servant to Capt. Thomas Cammock, was whipt naked at the cap-stern, with a cat with nine tails, for filching 9 great Lemmons out of the Chirurgeon's Cabbin, which he eat rinds and all in less than an hour's time." "June 19. Capt. Thomas Cammock (a near kinsman of the Earl of Warwick) now had another lad, Thomas Jones, that dyed of the small pox." "June 26. Capt. Thomas Cammock went aboard of a bark of 300 Tuns laden with Island wine, and but 7 men

"An Account of Two Voyages to New England, Wherein you have the setting out of a Ship with the Charges; the Prices of all neccessaries for furnishing a Planter & his Family at his first Coming; A Description of the Country, Natives & Creatures; The Government of the Country as it is now possessed by the English &c. A large Chronological Table of the most remarkable Passages from the first discovery of the Continent of America to the year 1673.

By John Josselyn Gent.

The Second Addition.

Mirrner. distich reuderred English by Dr. Heylin.

Heart take thine ease
Men hard to please
Thou haply might's offend;
Though one speak ill
Of thee, some will
Say better; ther's an end.

London.

Printed for G. Widdows at the Green

Dragon in St. Pauls Churchyard.

1675."

in her, and never a gun, bound for Richmond's Island, set out by Mr Trelawney of Plymouth."

"July 3. We anchored before Boston." "July 12. I took boats for the Eastern parts of the country, and arrived at Black Point in the Province of Main, which is 150 miles from Boston, the 14th day, which makes my voyage 11 weeks and odd days." The voyager's first adventure at Black Point is described on the next page of his book, where there are important allusions to localities, which remain to this day almost unchanged. He says—"About the 10th of August I hapened to walk into the woods, not far from the sea-side, and falling upon a piece of ground overgrown with bushes, called there *black cnrrence*, but differing from our Garden Currence, they being ripe and hanging in lovely bunches, I set up my piece against a stately oak with a resolution to fill my belly, *being neere half a mile from the house*: upon a sudden I heard a hollow thumping noise upon the rocks approaching towards me, which made me presently to recover my piece, which I had no sooner cocked than a great and grim over-grown she-wolf appears, at whom I shot, and finding her Gor-belly stuffed with flesh newly taken in, I began presently to suspect that she had fallen foul upon our goats, which were then valued (our she-goats) at Five Pounds a goat: Therefore to make further discovery I descended (it being low water) upon the sea-sands with an intent to walk *round about a neck of land where the goats usually kept*. I had not gone far before I found the footing of two Wolves, and one Goat betwixt them, whom they had driven into a hollow betwixt two Rocks. Hither I followed their footing, and perceiving by the crowes that there was the place of slaughter, I hung my piece upon my back, and *upon all four clambered up to the top of the rock*, where I made ready my piece and shot at the dog-wolf who was feeding upon the remainder of the Goat, which was only the fore-shoulders, head and horns, the

rest being devoured by the she-wolf, even to the very hair of the goat—and it is very observable that when the wolves have killed a beast, or a hog, not a Dog-Wolf among them, offers to eat any of it, till the she-wolves have filled their paunches.” Cammocks house, where Jocelyn was living, is supposed to have been situated near the “Ferry Rocks.” The neck here referred to as the goat pasture, may be recognized as “Cammock’s Neck” by the rock to the top of which our traveler clambered on “all-four.” Those well acquainted with the locality here incidentally described will have no difficulty in recognizing the spots referred to in this account. In another place Jocelyn says: “Goats were the first small cattle they had in the country. He was counted nobody who had not a trip, or flock, of goats; a he-goat gelt at Michaelmas and turned out to feed will be fat in a month’s time, and is as good meat as a weather.”

“Sept. 24. Monday about 4 o’clock in the afternoon, a fearful storm of wind began to rage, called a *hurricane*. It is an impetuous Wind that goes commonly about the compass in the space of 24 hours. It began from the N. N. W. and continued till the next morning—the greatest mischief it did us, was the wracking of our shallop, and the blowing down of many tall trees, in some places a mile together.”

“1639. May, which fell out to be extream hot and foggie. About the middle of May I killed within a stone’s throw of our house, above four score snakes, some of them as big as the small of my leg, black of colour and three yards long, with a sharp horn on the tip of their tail two inches in length.”

Much has been written of late, both in prose and verse, about that mysterious monster of the deep, the Sea-Serpent: here is a very early notice of him, and of another strange creature of the sea. “June 26. Very stormie, Lightning and Thunder, I heard now two of the greatest and fearfulest thunder-claps that ever were heard, I am confident. At this time we had

some neighboring Gentlemen in our house, who came to welcome me into the country, where amongst a variety of discourse they told me of a *young Lion* (not long before) killed by a young Indian at Piscataway—of a *Sea-Serpent*, or snake, that lay coiled up like a cable upon a rock at Cape Ann; a boat passing by with English aboard, and two Indians, they would have shot the serpent, but the Indians dissuaded them, saying that if they were not killed outright they would all be in danger of their lives.”

“One Mr. Mittin* related of a *Triton* or *Meere-Man*, which he saw in Casco Bay. The gentleman was a great Fowler and used to go out with a small boat or Canow, and fetching a compass about a small island for the advantage of a shot was encountered with a Triton, who laying his hands upon the side of the Canow, had one of them chopt off with a hatchet by Mr. Mittin, which was in all respects like the hand of a man. The Triton presently sunk, dying the water with his purple blood, and was no more seen.”

Next Richard Foxwell entertained the company with the mysterious story, which we have elsewhere copied. And so they whiled away their visit at Jocelyn's relating marvels altogether in unison with the feelings excited by the terrible storm without. Mr. Jocelyn says: “These with many other stories they told me, the credit whereof I will neither impeach nor inforce”—neither would we “impeach nor inforce” the credit of those we have here copied. The following is the only satisfactory notice of Mr. Hickford which we have been able to discover, although his name is frequently met with in the old records of the day. “Sept. 6. One Mr. *John Hickford, the son of Mr. Hickford a Linnen-Draper in Cheapside*, having been sometime in the Province of Main, and now determined to return for England, sold and killed his stock of cattle and hogs.

* Michael Mitton of Falmouth. See account of him in Willis' Portland

One great sow he had, which he made great account of, but being very fat, and not suspecting she was with pig, he caused her to be killed, and they found 25 pigs within her belly—verifying the old proverb, ‘As fruitful as a White Sow.’”—“Sept. 23. I left Black Point and came to Richmond’s Island—24th—I went on board the Fellowship of 170 Tuns: several of my friends came to bid me farewell—among the rest Capt. Thomas Wannerton* who drank to me a pint of Kill-devil, alias Rhum, at a draught.”

While waiting at Boston for the sailing of the “Fellowship” he met with a laughable accident, which we give in his own words. “Oct. 2. (at Boston) In the afternoon I walked into the woods on the back side of the house, and happening into a fine broad walk, I wandered till I chanc’t to spy a fruit as I thought like a Pine Apple, plated with scales. It was as big as the crown of a woman’s hat. I made bold to step unto it, with an intent to have gathered: no sooner had I toucht it, but hundreds of Wasps were about me. At last I cleared myself from them, being stung only by one upon the upper lip, glad I was that I scaped so well. But by that time I was come into the house, my lip was swelled so extreemly that they hardly knew me but by my garments.” “Nov. 24. We arrived before Bitteford” (Eng.) Thus ended his first visit to Black Point. More than twenty years afterwards he again visited his brother Henry, and remained with him *eight years*. The records of this second visit are exceedingly valuable to us, who but for them, should know little or nothing of the first settlers of our town. They are more satisfactory for being the observations of an educated traveler, who was qualified, by so long a residence amongst them, to write the correct account of these early settlers, which he proposes to give. We shall now offer extracts from the “Second Voyage.”

* Of Piscataqua.

"1663, May 30. Set sail out of the Downs—arrived at Boston July 28—Sept 15. came to Black Point, where the next day I was shrewdly pinched with a great frost, but 2 or 3 bottles of excellent Passada,* and good cheer bestowed upon me, I made shift to bear it out."

According to Jocelyn's account, those were rare days for sportsmen. Any one, professed sportsman or not, who has tramped through woods and over marshes, only for the distant sight of what would be game if one could reach it, cannot but begrudge the early settlers their sport as here described. "In the depth of winter they lay a sledge-load of cods-heads on the other side of a paled fence, when the moon shines; and about 9 or 10 of the clock the foxes come to it, sometimes two or three, or half-a-dozen, and more: these they shoot, and by that time they have cased them, there will be as many. So they continue shooting and killing of foxes as long as the moon shineth. I have known half a score killed in one night." "Wolves commonly go in routs, (a rout of Wolves is 12 or more) sometimes by couples." Bears, he says, were also numerous, and afforded the Indians good sport to catch them.

"The Pidgeons, of which there are millions of millions: I have seen a flight of Pidgeons in the spring, and at Michaelmas when they return back to the Southward, for four or five miles, that to my thinking had neither beginning nor ending, length nor breadth, and so thick that I could see no sun. They joyne nest to nest, and tree to tree together by their nests many miles together in Pine trees." Of the fishes that then frequented our rivers he notices some that were curiosities, at least in their names. He says—"The *Sea-hare* is as big as Grampus or *Herrin-Hog*, and as white as a sheet. There hath been of them in Black Point harbor, and some way up the river, but we could never take any of them. Severall have shot slugs at

* In another place he speaks of "Passada, the nectar of the country."

them but lost their labor." "*Negroes or Sea-Devils*, a very ugly fish having a black scale. There are three sorts of them, one a hideous fish, another about two feet long. Of these I have seen store in Black Point harbor in the water, but never attempted to take any of them." "The Alewives come in the end of April—there hath been taken in 2 hours time by 2 men without any weyre at all, saving a few stones to stop the passage of the River, above ten thousand." "Trouts there be good store in every brook, ordinarily two and twenty inches long." In 1670 our traveler noted the phenomenon of "A wonderful number of Herrings cast up on shore at high water in Black Point Harbor, *so that they might have gone half way the leg in them for a mile together.*" On another occasion he says there was a surprising *shower of ants*, when "they were poured upon the sands out of the clouds in a storm betwixt Black Point and Saco, where the Passenger *might have walked up to the ancles in them.*" When Jocelyn himself tells us such marvels as these we are constrained to allow him the same courtesy he allows those planters who told him of the "Triton," and the mysterious dancers on the beach, and neither "impeach nor inforce" their credit. He relates an anecdote of one of the Black Point planters, which strongly resembles the fireside stories of Old England in Shakspeare's day, when "Queen Mab" and "Puck" were in the full enjoyment of their fairy power. He says—"Near upon 20 years since there lived an old planter at Black Point, who on a sunshine day about one of the clock, lying upon a green bank not far from his house, charged his son, a lad of twelve years of age, to awaken him when he had slept 2 hours. The old man falls asleep, and lying upon his back gaped with his mouth wide enough for a Hawk to fly into it: after a while the lad sitting by spied a bumble-bee creeping out of his father's mouth, which taking wing flew quite out of sight. The hour, as the lad guessed,

being come to awaken his father, he jogged him, and called aloud, Father, Father it is three o'clock—but all would not rouse him. At last he sees the bumble-bee returning, who lighted upon the sleeper's lip, and walked down, as the lad conceived, into his belly, and presently he awaked." If this is meant to be interpreted as an allegory, it is a beautiful illustration of a superstition, (rather of a belief, for we cannot be sure that it was superstitious) which was then common. The spirit of the sleeper, in the shape of a bee, took advantage of the body's repose to go out in search of the honey of refreshment.

A number of valuable and interesting facts follow, respecting the appearance and habits of the Indians then inhabiting this part of the Province. All of Jocelyn's descriptions of the natives have a clearness and quaintness about them that render them highly satisfactory and pleasing to the reader. They contain, besides, much information regarding a people, whose cruelty to the English settlers, and whose final unhappy fate, will ever render them subjects of melancholy interest. He thus writes of them: "As for their persons they are tall and handsome-timbered people, out-wristed, pale and lean Tartarean-visaged, black-eyed, and generally black-haired, both smooth and curled, wearing it long. Their teeth are very white, short and even; they account them the most necessary and best parts of man.

"The *Indesses* that are young are some of them very comely, having good features, their faces plump and round, and generally plump of their bodies, as are the men likewise; and as soft and smooth as a mole-skin; of reasonable good complexions, but that they dye themselves tawney; many pretty Brownnettos and spider-fingered Lasses may be seen among them. The old women are lean and ugly. All of them are of a modest demeanor, considering their savage breeding, and indeed do shame

our English rustics, whose rudeness in many things exceedeth theirs"—“ Their Wigwams are built with poles pitched into the ground, of a small form for the most part, square. They bind down the tops of their poles, leaving a hole for smoke to go out at, the rest they cover with barks of trees, and line the inside of their Wigwams with mats made of rushes painted with several colors. One good post they set up in the middle that reaches to the hole in the top, with a staff across before it at a convenient height; they knock in a pin on which they hang their kettle, beneath that they set up a broad stone for a back, which keepeth the post from burning. Round by the walls they spread their mats and skins, where the men sleep whilst the women dress their victuals. They have commonly two doors, one opening to the South, the other to the North, and according as the wind sets they close up one door with bark, and hang a Deer's skin or the like before the other. Towns they have none, being always removing from one place to another for conveniency of food. I have seen half a hundred of their Wigwams together in a piece of ground, and they shew very prettily; within a day or two, or a week, they have all been dispersed. They live for the most part by the sea-side, especially in the Spring and Summer quarters; in Winter they are gone up into the country to hunt deer and beaver—Tame cattle they have none, excepting *Lice*, and doggs of a wild breed that they bring up to hunt with.”

“ They have prodigious stomachs, devouring a cruel deal, *meer voragoes*, never giving over eating as long as they have it; between meals spending their time in sleep till the next kettle-full is boiled. When all is gone, they satisfy themselves with a small quantity of the meal, making it serve as the frugal bit among the old Britains, which taken to the mounenance of a Bean would satisfie both thirst and hunger. If they have none of this, as sometimes falleth out, they make use of Sir Francis

Drake's remedy for hunger, *go to sleep*"—"Wives they have two or three." "They live long, even an hundred years of age, if they be not cut off by their children, War and the Plague, which together with the small pox hath taken away abundance of them."—"Their manner is, when they have plague or small pox amongst them, to cover their Wigwams with Bark so close that no air can enter in, lining them within, and making a great fire, they remain there in a stewing heat till they are in a top-sweat, and then run out into the Sea or River, and presently after they come into their huts again they either recover or give up the ghost."

His account of the Indians' religious belief is equally entertaining. The following singular tradition of the Flood affords abundant matter for speculation. "Their Theology is not much, but questionless they acknowledge a God and a devil; and some small light they have of the soul's immortality; for ask them whither they go when they die, they will tell you pointing with their finger to Heaven, beyond the White mountains; and do hint at Noah's flood, as may be conceived by a story they have received from Father to Son time out of mind, that a great while ago their Country was drowned, and all the People and other creatures in it, only one Powaw and his Webb (Squaw,) foreseeing the Flood, fled to the White Mts. carrying a hare along with them, and so escaped. After a while the Powaw sent the hare away, who not returning, emboldened thereby they descended, and lived many years after, and had many children, from whom the Country was filled again with Indians." Their mode of burial was this—"They dig a pit and set the deceased therein upon his breech upright, and throwing in the earth, cover it with sods and bind them down with sticks, driving in two stakes at each end—Their mournings are somewhat like the howlings of the Irish, seldom at the grave, but in the wigwam where the party dyed, blaming the

Devil for his hard heartedness, and concluding with rude prayers to him to afflict them no further.”*

“Their learning is very little or none. Poets they are, as may be guessed by their formal speeches, sometimes an hour long, the last word of a line riming with the last word of the following line, and the whole doth *constare ex pedibus*. Musical too they be, having many pretty odd barbarous tunes which they make use of vocally at marriages and feastings. Arithmetic they skill not, reckoning to ten upon their fingers, and if more, doubling it by holding their fingers up. Their age they reckon by Moons, and their actions by *sleeps*, as, if they go a journey, or are to do any other business, they will say, ‘three sleeps we walk,’ or ‘two or three sleeps we do such a thing,’ that is in two or three days.”

We close our extracts from Jocelyn’s entertaining book with one of much importance. It is well known that the unfortunate breaking up of most of the earliest settlements along our coast, has deprived us of the means of judging of the whole character of the settlers, which otherwise we might have had. Nothing within our reach can make up for this deficiency; but such items as can be gathered from old books and manuscripts assist us materially in these inquiries respecting the pioneers of the Maine settlements. In Jocelyn’s book may be found a summary of the general character and condition of these settlers, which, so far as it goes, is quite satisfactory. “The people in the Province of Mayne,” he says, “may be divided into Magistrates, Husbandmen or Planters, and Fishermen—of the Magistrates some be Royalists, the rest perverse spirits; the like are the Planters and Fishers, of which some be Planters and Fishers both, others meer Fishers. Handicraftsmen they are but few,

* They believed that all good came from Squantam (God) and all evil from Abbamocoko (the Devil.) They of course considered all afflictions as evils for which the Devil was to be blamed.

the Cooper, Smiths and Carpenters are best welcome amongst them. The Planters are, or should be, restless pains-takers, providing for their cattle, planting and sowing of Corn, fencing their grounds, cutting and bringing home fuel, cleaving of claw-board and pipe-staves.

“The diligent hand maketh rich, but if they be of a droanish disposition as some are, they become wretchedly poor and miserable, scarce able to free themselves and families from importunate famine, especially in winter for want of bread.

“They have a custom of taking tobacco, sleeping at noon, sitting long at meals, sometimes four times in a day, and now and then drinking a dram of the bottle extraordinarily : the smoaking of tobacco, if moderately used refresheth the weary much, and so doth sleep. The Physician allows but three draughts at a meal, the first for need, the second for pleasure, and the third for sleep ; but little observed by them unless they have no other liquor to drink but water. They feed upon generally as good flesh, Beef, Pork, Mutton, Fowl and fish, as any is in the whole world besides. Their Servants which are for the most part English, will not work under half a crown a day when they are out of their time, although it be for to make hay. If they hire them by the year they pay them 14 or 15 pounds, yea 20 pounds, at the year’s end in corn, cattle and fish. Some of them prove excellent fowlers, bringing in as many as will maintain their masters house, beside the profit that accrues by their feathers.’

“The fishermen take yearly upon the coasts many hundred Kentals of Cod, hake, haddock, polluck &c. &c., which they split, salt and dry at their stages, making 3 voyages in a year. When they share their fish, which is at the end of every voyage, they separate the best from the worst &c.—these they put off to the Massachusetts merchants ; the merchantable for 30 and 32 reals a Kental, the refuse for 9 and 10s. the Kental.

“ To every shallop belong four fishermen, a Master or Steersman, a Midshipman and a Foremastman, and a shoreman who washes it out of the salt and dries it upon the bundles pitcht upon stakes breast-high, and tends their cookery. These often get in one voyage 8 or 9 pounds a man, but it doth some of them little good: for the merchant to increase his gain by putting off his commodity, in the midst of their voyages and at the end thereof comes in with a *walking tavern*, a Bark laden with the legitimate blood of the rich grape, which they bring from Phial, Madera, Canaries, with Brandy, Rhum, the Barbadoes Strong water and Tobacco; coming ashore he gives them a Taster or two, which so charms them, that for no persuasions will they go to sea, although fair and seasonable weather, for 2 or 3 days, sometimes for a whole week, till they are wearied with drinking, taking ashore 2 or 3 Hogsheads of Wine and Rhum to drink off when the merchant is gone. If a man of quality chance to come when they are roystering and gulping in Wine with a dear felicity, he must be sociable, and Roly-poly with them, taking off their liberal cups as freely, or else be gone, which is best for him.” Fortunately there are other facts which relieve the dark shades in this picture of the fishermen: so that they in connection with what we learn from Jocelyn, give us no very unfavorable views of the first settlers in this part of the Province.

Jocelyn thus records his departure for England: “ A. D. 1671—The year being now well spent, and the Government of the Province turned topsy-turvy, being heartily weary, and expecting the approach of Winter, I took leave of my friends at Black Point, and on the 28th day of August shipt myself and my goods aboard of a shallop bound for Beston. Dec. 1. I landed at the Temple about 10 o'clock at night, which makes my voyage homeward 7 weeks and 4 days, and from my first setting out from London to my returning to London again, 8 years, 6 months and odd days.”

CHAPTER VI.

INDIAN TROUBLES—1675—77

The Indians in this town were members of the Saco Tribe, the oldest branch of the family to which all the Tribes in Maine belonged. The descriptions of the Indians, which we have already presented, relate to individuals of this Tribe. There are other notices of them in the books of early travelers, one of which we will copy. In the "Voyages" of Mons. Samuel De Champlain, who accompanied a French Colony to Nova Scotia in 1604, and afterwards explored the coast of Maine, may be found this description of the Indians about the Saco: "The barbarians that inhabit it are in some respects unlike the aborigines of New France, (Nova Scotia) differing from them both in language and manners. They shave their heads from the forehead to the crown, but suffer the hair to grow on the other side, confining it in knots and interweaving feathers of various colors. They paint their faces red or black; are well formed, and arm themselves with spears, clubs, bows and arrows, which for want of iron they point with the tail of a crustaceous animal called signoc. (Horse-Shoe.**") The Indians of this Tribe were more warlike than any of their neighbors; and were the continual dread of the Massachusetts Tribes, who were careful to avoid meeting them in contest. After the Indian Wars the remnant of this Tribe removed to Canada, where their descendants exist as part of the St. Francis Tribe. Their most famous Sagamores were Squando, and Assacumbuit, who in 1706 was knighted by Louis 14th of France for his services against the English. At the time of receiving this honor, he assured Louis that he had slain with his own hand *one hundred and forty* of the English in these New England Provinces. Mather closes his account of him

* Quoted by Folsom. Hist. Saco.

thus : "This Assacumbuit hath killed and taken this war (they tell me) 150 men, women and children. A bloody devil!"* The excellent opportunities for fishing and hunting which distinguished Scarborough, made it one of the favorite resorts of of the natives. The place of their most ancient residence within the town was the Point (Plummer's) south of Oak Hill. The site of their village overlooked the River, marshes, and bay on the south, and was protected upon the north by a high ridge of slate. There remains at that place a large bank of shells from one to ten feet in depth, supposed to have been deposited there by these Indians.†

This is almost the only monument we have to remind us of the unfortunate race that once enjoyed life where we now enjoy it. The sight of such memorials starts a train of reflections like those so beautifully expressed in these words : "A history of these primeval inhabitants of our soil, informing us how they lived, loved and died, describing their feats in war, and their sports in peace ; giving us the lives of the bronze beauties, whose charms brought rival lovers to their feet, and kindled the fire of jealousy in the keen eye of many a young warrior ; or telling us on the other hand of the grey fathers, who were looked up to as next to the Great Spirit in wisdom, and in all that calls for veneration—such a history would be worth a

* *Magnalia* : 7 ; 95.

† Some of the fields on the south side of Blue Point consist almost entirely of shells brought there by the Indians ; and there are similar traces of them on the opposite shore of Black Point. Many relics, such as pipes, stone hatchets, and pestles, have been ploughed up at Blue Point within a few years. Two of their graves were sometime since opened by Mr. Plummer of Winnock's Neck. The skeletons were found in a sitting posture, facing the South-East ; walled in on the four sides with rock, and having a large flat rock over the head. The bodies were seated on the surface of the ground, at the time of burial, the rocks placed about them then covered with earth ; forming a mound about 4 feet high.

thousand volumes upon the men of our own blood, who inherited this fair patrimony of the red man.

But it is too late to recover it. They have passed away forever; and it is only when the husbandman's ploughshare turns up occasionally the blackened bones of an athletic frame, or when some hoary headed patriarch narrates by the winter fireside some almost forgotten tradition of the early settlers, that the men of these times remember that we live upon a soil which is not our own."*

The Indian name of Scarborough was *Owascoag*, or "place of much grass;" a name to which its extensive marshes fairly entitle it. The names of four of the principal Indians then residing here have come down to us. These were *Wickwarrawaske*, Sagamore of Owascoag, *Nagasqua* his wife, *Ugaguguskit* his son, and *Uphannum* his daughter. The Sagamore and son died early, (before 1659,) the widow and daughter continued here many years. One of the conditions of the sale of Dunstan to the Algers was that Uphannum and her mother should be allowed to live on the estate during their lives. Uphannum lived there under this agreement until 1675. She was familiarly known to the early settlers as "Jane Hannup," or as "Jane the Indian." Her residence was on the northern side of Blue Point, on a little point near the mouth of Mill Creek, which bears at this day the name "Jane's Point." The traces of her solitary hut may still be seen there; and the rock which formed the back of her fire place, still bearing marks of fire upon it, remains there as her monument, with no inscription but the rude tracings of the flames that cheered her loneliness. Near by is her grave, and a few yards farther on is a spring of the purest water which still retains the name of "Jane's Spring."

* MS. notes of Rev. H. G. Storer.

The Indians and English in Maine were generally at peace with each other until 1675, the year of general warfare in New England. Before that time the Indians showed no signs of hostility to the settlers here; on the contrary they had lived on terms of intimate friendship with them, sharing their fireside hospitality, and enjoying their unimpaired confidence. Such was the happy condition of affairs here, when the famous King Philip devised his plan for exterminating every New England colony. The natives and inhabitants of this town were bound by a peculiar "treaty of amity and tribute," in which it was stipulated that the Inhabitants of Black Point should annually give Madockawando, Sagamore of Penobscot, and Bashaba of the Indian Tribes, "a peck of corn each" as an acknowledgment of his supremacy.* This was undoubtedly given merely as a peace-offering. The settlers in Maine were exposed to peculiar suffering in case the Indians became hostile. They were far from the help of Massachusetts, and were few in number, while the Indians were many. Massachusetts perceiving the great danger of their situation, ordered each town of the Province, in 1671, to provide themselves with the means of defence. Some of these, and amongst them this town, perceiving little cause for alarm, neglected the order. In 1672, Scarborough was called to account "for not providing a stocke of powder and bullets." King Philip used every means in his power to bring over the Maine Indians to his party; but there is little reason to doubt that they would have remained friendly to the English in spite of his devices, but for some unfortunate events about this time, which excited the suspicions of the Indians. Their confidence in the English once impaired it was

* This tribute appears to have been paid at that time by no other of the settlements; at least no record is left of its payment by any besides this town. By the treaty of April 12, 1678, this acknowledgment was required of all the towns.

almost impossible to close the breach. One of these rash acts on the part of the English nearly concerned our own inhabitants, and was the first rupture of the long peace between them and the Saco Tribe. At this time Squando was Sagamore of Saco. He was a chief of great influence with the other Tribes, and had long resisted the entreaties of Philip, who considered it necessary to his success to engage him against the English. Cotton Mather speaks of him as a "strange, enthusiastical Sagamore, who some years before pretended that God appeared to him in the form of a tall man, in black clothes, declaring to him that he was God, and commanded him to leave his drinking of strong liquors, and to pray, and to keep Sabbaths, and to go to hear the word preached; all which things the Indian did for some years with great seeming conscience observe." Just at this crisis some reckless English seamen overset a canoe in which Squando's wife and papoose were crossing the Saco. This is said to have been done by them for the purpose of testing the truth of the common report at that time, that Indians were naturally swimmers. John Jocelyn remarks concerning Indians that they "swim naturally, striking their paws under their throat, like a dog, and not spreading their arms as we do." But unhappily for the child, and our innocent settlers, the report proved unfounded in truth. The child sank in the water, and was saved from drowning only by the efforts of its mother. Soon afterwards the child died, and Squando, attributing its death to the upsetting of the canoe, immediately declared himself the enemy of all Englishmen. The eastern Indians had been similarly excited against the settlers on the Kennebec, and therefore were at once ready for an alliance with Squando. The affairs of the Province now wore a gloomy aspect; there was no hope for the scattered colonists but in the oversight of Providence, and their own strong arms. In these they trusted.

The first attack upon any of our townsmen by the Indians was in Sept. 1675, at the house of Robert Nichols, who lived on the upper part of Blue Point near Dunstan. They had just made an attempt to take the garrison of Maj. Phillips of Saco, which proved altogether unsuccessful. It was noticed that when the Indians retired from Phillips's they went in the direction of Blue Point, where they expected to find weaker garrisons, which unfortunately they found. When they arrived at Blue Point they found Nichols and his wife alone in their house; and both being too old to offer much resistance, the savages murdered them and burned the house. Their only child Robert, a full-grown man, was away from home at the time of the attack, and so was saved. He removed to Marblehead soon after this calamity, and there remained until his death.

Their next visit was in October of the same year, when they attempted to destroy the Algers' garrison-house. This house was near the Landing, distant from the two principal settlements at Black and Blue Point. At the time of the attack these brothers with two of their relatives, were in the house collecting their goods to carry to Black Point. The Indians soon gave up the attempt to capture the garrison, and after venting their spite by burning the empty houses of Alger's sons-in-law, they went back into the woods. But they effected more by their attack than they themselves were aware of, brief as it was. One of their shots proved fatal to Andrew, and another wounded Arthur so that he died soon afterwards.* The following narrative of the circumstances, by one who was on the ground immediately after the attack, has fortunately been preserved amongst the invaluable treasures of the old Records.

* Hubbard's account is that Andrew died of wounds received at the time of this attack, and that Arthur was killed some days after while crossing the marsh to Black Point. The Deposition here given is a little different account.

“The deposition of Peter Withum aged 72 years, testifies that I about 52 or 3 years ago, then being in the Country’s service under the command of Capt. John Wincoll, and being posted with other soldiers at Blue Poynt at Mr. Foxwell’s garrison, went up to Dunston to guard Andrew and Arthur Alger, and we assisted them to carry off their grain. Some days after which the said Andrew and Arthur with some of their relations went from Shelton’s garrison (Shelden’s at Black Point) to Dunston to bring off some of their goods, and were beset by the Indians, and said Andrew was killed, and said Arthur Alger was mortally wounded. And I did help to carry one off, and also to bury them both.”

Nearly thirty years ago the ground on which these houses stood was plowed up by Judge Southgate, and many kernels of half-burnt corn were found which had remained in the ground ever since the burning of the houses Oct. 12, 1675. Besides his large estate in the upper part of the town Andrew Alger owned six acres near the Neck, on which there was a large double house where his family lived during the fishing season, when the brothers were engaged in their shallop. The widow of Arthur Alger, having no children, removed to Marblehead, Massachusetts. Andrew left two daughters and three sons. Of the sons, John was married to Mary Wilmot, daughter of Nicholas Wilmot of Boston, and at his death left two children by her, John and Elizabeth the wife of John Milliken of Boston, who removed here and took possession of the Alger Estate, in 1727. The other sons of Andrew Alger were Andrew and Matthew. Andrew was killed by the Indians September 21st, 1689, while fighting under Col. Church at Falmouth. His only child was married to Matthew Collins of Boston. Matthew Alger sailed for Canada as master of one of the transports in Sir William Phipp’s expedition. During his absence he was taken sick with ship fever, and died soon after

his return.* Some time before the death of the Algernons the Massachusetts Government sent forty men for the protection of the Scarborough settlements. These were stationed at Scottow's garrison on the Neck, and put under his command. Of Capt. Scottow's management while in that position we shall give a full account hereafter; at present we will only notice his conduct in the case of the Dunstan planters. As soon as it was known that the Indians had attacked the house of Rob't. Nichols, the neighboring townsmen sent to Scottow for soldiers for their defence. Joseph Oliver, a resident of Black Point, went to Scottow with a request for assistance, "if it were but ten or eight" men, offering to go with them himself. Scottow's answer to the application was, in substance, "that it would be dangerous to take away any of the men from the garrison, *for if they should be killed there would be none to look after their wives and children;*" and he also added "that Andrew Alger and the rest (at Dunstan) might have come as well as you (Oliver,) *and if they will not they must take what follows.*†" We cannot believe that Scottow anticipated such a consequence as the death of four of those whom he was commissioned to protect.

On the 30th of October, Capt. John Wincoll, with about sixty men, went up from Black Point to guard the house of Andrew Brown at Dunstan, but had no engagement with the Indians. Two days afterwards Sergt. Oliver went to Dunstan with eighteen men to get some corn from there; while busy collecting the grain a party of sixty Indians rushed upon them, and after saluting them with a volley of shot retreated into the bushes to prepare themselves for another. Just then Sergeant Tippen came up with an additional force of fifteen men, and

* Tobias Oakman's Dep 1730.

† Allison and Oliver's Deps. 1676.

the Indians deferred their attack. While these parties remained in the neighborhood of each other without any movement on either side towards a battle, one of the soldiers called "Nick Frost" proposed a parley with the Indians. Sergeants Tippen and Oliver told him that as there was no Captain there, they could not give him orders to make any agreement with the foe. Frost and another soldier set out however, and soon brought back the answer, that the Indians would have "their Captain which was Squando," and the English Captain confer together. and that they should agree whether to make peace or fight. The soldiers immediately sent for Capt. Wincoll, who had gone to Blue Point, who delayed coming until several hours after the time set by the Indians for the conference. The result of the parley is not known. As there is no record of a contest at that time, we suppose Squando yielded the ground.

At Black Point, the house of Henry Jocelyn, which is supposed to have stood over the old cellar near Garrison Cove on the Neck, was converted into a garrison, to which many of the inhabitants resorted with their families. The situation of this garrison rendered it one of the strongest in the Province. Hubbard says that it might easily have been defended against all the Indians in this part of the country. In and about this stronghold the inhabitants were collected in the Fall of 1676, when the Indians renewed their hostilities.

In August, just before the ending of the war in the western colonies, the settlements on the Kennebec were destroyed; and an attack was made on the settlement at Casco, where the savages succeeded in killing and capturing in all thirty-four persons. Upon learning of the state of affairs in this Province, the Massachusetts authorities sent to its relief a force of 130 English and 40 friendly Indians. After taking a large number of Indians at Kittery, the party continued its march eastward as far as Casco, stopping at Black Point on their way. They

effected nothing of importance as the Indians scattered themselves in such a manner, that they could not bring them to an engagement. The force soon returned to Massachusetts; but had not been gone long before the Indians collected a party of about one hundred, and made a sudden descent upon the Black Point garrison. They remained in the vicinity of the garrison some time, without attempting to force their way into it; for this they knew to be almost impossible. The Indian leader was a famous chief called Mugg, who had been much in the society of the English, and was well acquainted with many of our settlers. He had been on familiar terms with Jocelyn, and was now ready, like the true savage that he was, to make use of his former friendship against the stronghold and its occupants. He appeared before the garrison alone, and proposed a parley with Jocelyn, who was then commanding in the absence of Capt. Scottow. Jocelyn assented to a proposal, apparently offered with much good will on the part of the Indians, and went out of the garrison, and remained a long while in conversation with Mugg. The chief proposed that he should surrender the garrison, offering the condition that the English should be allowed to depart in safety, and carry with them all their goods. Jocelyn did not immediately agree to this, but went back to garrison for the purpose of consulting with the inhabitants as to the answer he should give Mugg. When he reached the garrison he found, to his utter astonishment, that all the occupants, excepting his own family and servants, had put off in boats, leaving him to exercise his own choice in the matter of defending or surrendering the garrison. Goodman Jocelyn was too old, and too little fond of fighting, to think of resisting the enemy under such circumstances. He at once put himself and family into the hands of the Indians, who treated them very kindly during their brief captivity. Jocelyn was probably amongst the captives returned to Massachusetts the following

spring, and being wholly unfit for a life of such warfare, as he would have experienced at Black Point, he is said to have removed to Plymouth Colony where there was less danger of a second captivity.*

From the following letter to Capt. Scottow written about two months before the surrender of the Black Point garrison, it appears that Jocelyn was only temporarily in command, and that he found some difficulty in filling the Captain's place. This explains in some degree the hasty retreat of the inhabitants, who being hardly peaceable under Scottow, with the authority of Massachusetts to support him, were less so when left with Jocelyn and Gendal.

"Capt' Joshua Scottow—

Wee underwritten being of ye Committee of ye Mellicia wth Serjeant Tippen, and both of you now being absent, shall desire you to acquaint ye Governor & Councill of ye averseness of the generality of ye Inhabitants to obey military orders: yt they would be pleased to direct some especial order to such in this Town as may bring ye Inhabitants to ye obedience of ye Military Laws of the Government, yt we may be in some capacity to defend ourselves against ye common enemy: and we shall remain,

yr friends to serve you

Black point

HENRY JOCELYN

Aug. 9th 1676.

WALTER GENDALL."†

The surrender of this strong fortification was the most important advantage gained here by the Indians during Philip's War. As we should imagine, Mugg was highly pleased with his success here and elsewhere in the Province. With his other boastings, he is said to have declared to some of his prisoners that he would kill all the English, take their fishing vessels, islands, and the whole country! It was certainly fortunate for the English that Mugg was less formidable in deeds than in words.

*There is no evidence to the contrary of this report concerning Jocelyn, nor is there much to support it. After this event at Black Point he disappears, nor can we find any record of the time, place or manner of his death.

† Massachusetts files.

The names of the occupants of Jocelyn's garrison at the time of the surrender, and of those living in the neighborhood, are preserved in the following interesting document entitled, "A list of the Inhabitants at Black Point Garrison Oct. 12, 1676.

"In ye Garison Daniel Moore

John Tenny
Henry Brookin
Nathaniell Willett
Charles Browne
Robert Tydey
Richard Moore
James Lybbey
John Lybbey
Anthony Lybbey
Samuel Lybbey
George Taylor
James Ogleby
Dunken Chessom
William Sheldon
John Vickers
Rrd Bassen
Ro'rt Elliot
francis White
Richard Honeywell
John Howell

Living muskett shott from ye Garrison

Ralphe Heison
Mathew Heyson
Joseph Oliver
Chris'r Edgecome
John Edgecome
Michael Edgecome

Living thre muskett shott from ye Garrison

Robert Edgecome
Henry Elkins
John Ashden
John Warrick

Edward ffairfield

Hampton & Salisbury
Soldiers

In ye hutts wth out ye Garrison but joining it

francis Sholet
Anthony Roe
Thomas Bickford
Goodman Luscome
Tymothy Collins
Andrew Browne sen.
Andrew Browne
Joseph Browne
Ambrose Bouden
Constable

Tho. Cuming
John Herman
Sam'l Oakman sen.
John Elson
Peter Hinkson
Ried Willin
John Symson
Tho. Cleavely
John Cocke
R'rd Burroughs

A list of ye names of those yt ware prest by vertue of Capt. Hartherne's order to be for ye service of ye Garrison of ye inhabitants aforesaid.

francis Shealett
Edward Hounslow
James Ogleby
John Cocke
Daniel Moore
Dunken Chessom
Richard Burrough
William Burrage."*

Many of the persons whose names are here given have been noticed in a former chapter, of others we can only say that they were inhabitants of the town.

The Indians remained in the neighborhood of Black Point but a short time, the English had entirely abandoned the town.

* This valuable paper was copied for Willis' Portland by John Farmer Esq. the well-known antiquary. By comparing the names in this list with those collected from other sources, we are enabled to identify them as inhabitants.

The time of their departure, and of the reoccupation of Black Point by the townsmen, is nearly ascertained from Hubbard's account of Anthony Brackett, who was taken prisoner at Casco and afterwards escaped from captivity with his wife, child, and a negro servant, and who, (says Hubbard) "came safely to the flat at Black Point *sometime in November*"—"and the Indians that had been about Black Point were *newly gone*." In December one Francis Card, and another young man, (who had been captured by the savages in their attack upon the Kennebec settlements,) made their escape from captivity and "in two or three days recovered the Fort and Garrison at Black Point from whence they were soon conveyed to Boston."* We infer from this last extract that the Indians did not burn the garrison house at Black Point, as they were wont to burn thos falling into their hands. Early in the next year we find the inhabitants mostly returned to Black Point. Soon after the surrender of the garrison the same party of Indians captured a vessel, lying near Richmond's Island, with eleven persons, amongst whom was Capt. Gendall, whose captivity, as will hereafter be seen, proved a source of more trouble to him after it had ceased than while it lasted. The Indian Chiefs, having in their possession about sixty captives, whose ransom promised to be more profitable to them than the continuance of the war through the coming winter, now sent Mugg to treat for peace with the Massachusetts Government. While on his way to Boston, he was seized at Piscataqua and carried to the end of his journey as prisoner. By this event Mugg was constrained to make a treaty on terms less advantageous to the Indians than he had anticipated. It was for this reason, undoubtedly, that the savages were so generally dissatisfied with the treaty, and paid so little regard to it after they had redeemed their favorite leader from the hands of the English. Mugg signed an

* Hubbard.

agreement, and consented to remain as a pledge of its fulfilment, until the English prisoners were restored. But once out of the hands of the English, he was as willing and ready to violate the treaty, by which he had recovered his freedom, as he had been to make it. Peace was now declared, and the inhabitants again set themselves to the work of providing food for their households; but it proved to be only a rumor of peace. The fortification at Black Point was now entrusted to the command of Lieut. Tippen,* an officer noted for his courage, and for his skilful management against the Indians. On the 13th of May, 1677, a body of Indians, headed by Mugg, appeared before the garrison, and commenced an assault upon it, but soon discovered the disagreeable difference between parleying with Jocelyn, and fighting with Tippen. For three successive days the Indians continued to besiege the garrison, and at the end of the third day had succeeded in killing but three men, and taking one prisoner. The event which decided the contest is thus narrated by an early historian of New England: "On the 16th, Lieut. Tippen made a successful shot upon an Indian that was observed to be very busy and bold in the assault, who at that time was deemed to be Symon, the arch-villain and incendiary of all the Eastern Indians, but proved to be one almost as good as himself, who was called Mugg."*

There were few events of the war which afforded the English more relief than the death of Mugg, their dreaded foe. His previous acquaintance with the persons and habits of the English, gave him an advantage as their enemy, which no other of the Indians possessed, excepting perhaps Simon the "arch-villain," who was with him at the time of his death. The fall of their leader was the signal for a general retreat of the Indians, who

* Variouslly written—Tippin, Tipping, and Tappen. He was sent from Boston with a party of soldiers for the defence of Black Point.

† Hubbard.

took to their canoes, and sailed away towards York, seeking by the way a favorable opportunity to revenge themselves upon the English. After this fortunate issue of the siege the inhabitants were favored with a short season of peace, if that may be called peace, which was only the absence of an enemy daily expected.

In June the Government sent two hundred friendly Indians, and forty English soldiers, under the command of Capt. Benjamin Swett and Lieut. Richardson, on an expedition against the savages around the Kennebec. The vessels containing this force came to anchor off Black Point; and Capt. Swett having been informed that Indians had just been seen in the vicinity of the settlement, he came on shore with a detachment of his men, intending to pursue the savages. "They were joined by some of the inhabitants so as to make ninety in all. The next morning, June 29th, the enemy shewed themselves on a plain* in three parties. A large decoy, supposed to be the main body of the Indians, feigned a retreat, and were pursued a distance of two miles from the fort, when the English found themselves in a most exposed situation, between a thicket and a swamp, upon the declivity of a hill, and instantly from an ambush on each side great numbers of Indians, rising with a war whoop, fired at once upon the two divisions, and turning so violently and suddenly upon them, threw the young and undisciplined soldiers into confusion. Swett with a few of the more resolute, fought bravely on the retreat, till he came near the fort, when he was killed; sixty more were left dead or wounded, and the rest got into the fort."† "Swett fought the enemy hand to hand; displaying upon the spot and in a retreat of two miles, great presence of mind as well as personal courage, in repeated

* Situated a little to the east of the Ferry

† Mementos of the Swett Family, by J. W. Thornton, Esq,

rallies of his men, in his exertions to bring off the dead and wounded, and in defence of his rear, upon which the savages hung with destructive fury. At last, wounded in twenty places, and exhausted by loss of blood and by fatigue, he was grappled, thrown to the ground, and barbarously cut in pieces at the gates of the garrison.—Seldom is the merit of a military officer more genuine, seldom is the death of one more deeply lamented.”*

Besides the worthy Captain, Lieut. Richardson and several of our townsmen fell in this engagement. The only names of privates who were killed that have been found on record, are those of the following who enlisted from Andover, Massachusetts, James Parker, John Parker, John Phelps and Daniel Blanchard.† The Indians soon retired leaving the garrison unattempted; apparently contented with having shed so much good blood in one place.‡ Soon after the affairs of the Province began to wear the aspect of peace. In a letter from “the Deputies” of Massachusetts to “the Gentlemen our Messengers in England” 1677, is this paragraph: “As to the public (affairs) we judge it not useless to inform you that *soon after our loss at Black Point in June last*, Major Andross sent a considerable partie to Pemaquid, where they seated themselves in right of the Duke of York, and pretending friendship and kindness for us have done that service for us to conclude a peace with those

* Williamson’s Maine.

† Andover Town Records.

‡ The following extract from Gookin’s “Hist. of the Christian Indians,” gives another account of the number killed, and also informs us with regard to the number of Christian Indians lost in the engagement. “In June 1677, another expedition into the Eastern parts, among whom were about 36 of our Christian Indians, who were in a fight near Black point; the English lost about *forty* men whereof were *eight* of our friendly Indians—the greatest loss our (Chris.) Indians sustained all the war.” (Am. Ant. Soc’s Trans. p. 516.)

Eastern Indians, and have regained and sent to us most of our captives."

The terms of this peace with the Indians were definitely settled at Casco, April 12th, 1678.

CHAPTER VII.

CAPT. JOSHUA SCOTTOW.

Joshua Scottow was admitted freeman at Boston, in 1639. He became a member of the Artillery Company in 1645, and its ensign in 1657.* This appears to have been his first military school. In after life, when he had retired from his military service at Black Point, he distinguished himself as the author of two tracts, written in the prevailing style of the day, which enjoyed for a season a remarkable popularity amongst the descendants of the New England puritans. We can make room here only for the title pages of these tracts, which are not the least interesting parts of them. The first was published in 1691 with the title of "*Old Men's Tears for their own Declensions mixed with Fears of their and posterities further falling off from New England's Primitive Constitution. Published by some of Boston's Old Planters and some other.*" This consisted of twenty-six pages of matter respecting which an early writer says: "happily we have reformed *at least from such a stile*, of which the pathos is not more remarkable than the wit."†

His other work, published in 1694, has even a more curious title-page. It is "*A Narrative of the Planting of the Massachusetts Colony Anno 1628. With the Lord's signal*

* Farmer's Register

† Massachusetts Historical Collection.

presence the first thirty years. Also a Caution from New England's Apostle, the great Cotton, how to escape the calamity, which might befall them or their posterity, and confirmed by the Evangelist Norton ; with prognostics from the famous Dr. Owen, concerning the fate of those churches, and animadversions upon the anger of God in sending of evil Angels among us — Published by Old Planters the authors of the Old Men's Tears."

We can offer but two specimens, and they shall be of Scottow's wit, which the writer above quoted is pleased to consider equally remarkable with his pathos. Scottow being a staunch protestant, of course had little respect for the founder of the order of Jesuits, or for the order itself. Hence he does not scruple to be witty at the expense of Loyola's name, and styles him—" *Ignenate, Hell-born Loyola.*" And the name " *Jesuite,*" as it was then written in English, he declares to mean in fact nothing but " *Jesu-ite, Depart from Jesus.*" These books, written in this style, obtained for him a reputation, which he never could have achieved for himself by dint of his sword.

In 1660 Scottow purchased of Abraham Jocelyn, of this town, 200 acres of land, including the Hill which now bears his name. This was the beginning of his large proprietorship in Scarborough lands. In July, 1666, Henry Jocelyn made over to him the Cammock Patent, together with 750 acres bordering upon it, and all his houses, fishing-houses, cattle &c. Scottow did not come to reside here permanently until about 1670 ; but he made frequent visits to his estates during the two preceding years. Jocelyn appears to have acted as overseer of his affairs here during Scottow's absence. Soon after the breaking out of Philip's War in Massachusetts, Capt. Scottow was appointed to the charge of a small number of soldiers, whom he brought with him to Scarborough for the defence of

the townsmen, and stationed in the garrison at Black Point. While with them there he kept a Journal of their movements, which contains a particular account of their services in behalf of the townsmen. Thinking it desirable to preserve in our copy of this interesting relic as close a resemblance as possible to the original we insert a literal transcript.*

“ Narration of ye———† of———† marches and improvement of Boston soldiers sent to Black Point 1675.

(8.) 25th. Sergt. (Tippen) landed 15 men. I disposed 6 of ym to ffoxwell's garrison at Blue Point, 6 to Shelden's garrison, and retayned 3 of ym—received a ltre from Maj'r Pendleton and answered it (at once.)

(26th. 27th.) no disturbance. I went in and viewed the fortification at the several garrisons, and discharged Mr. ffoxwell from his charge at Blue Point being a quarreling discontented pson.

(29th.) Tho: Michell arrived with 23 soldiers who landed two hours before day.

(30th) Sent my 6 scouts up ye river to discover ye enemy, and view a house wch ye enemy ordnarily possessed; returned seeing 3 Indians.

(31.) That night two hours before day sent up 60 men under the conduct of Capt. Winkall who landed before day to save wt corne they could of our Inhabitants and fight ye enemy if found—they having appeared not long before at ffoxwell's garrison and shot a scout as appe'the pr I: Winkolls ltrs. answered Maj Pendleton's ltre No. 3.

*The original Journal in Scottow's hand writing is preserved in the archives of the Massachusetts Historical Society. The writer is indebted to the kindness of Rev. J. B. Felt, the Society's excellent Librarian, and J. W. Thornton, Esq., for assistance in finding and copying it. The manuscript is so worn and faded that a few words of it are illegible.

† Two words illegible in the original manuscript.

(9.) 1: dispatched a shallop to Boston wth ltres to Hon Govr and council for flints, bread &c.

2. The souldiers guarding ye Inhabitants threshing, and no disturbance. I sent for 2 carpenters to brace my barne, in order to removing it to a place of fortification near the garrison, where it was designed to stand before Boston souldiers came— wch were but one day, there being no enemy yt had appeared: In the afternoon about 29 Inhabitants were set upon by 70 or 80 Indians, and had almost surrounded ym had they not bin timously relieved by Sergt. Topping who came in to their relief, beat ym into ye swampes and gagned an Indian speare.

3. Sergt. Topping sent downe for recruit of powder &c. wch I sent up by ye two carpenters and others who were come downe in that (vacancy.) I sent up 28 lbs of powder in a box and 90 lbs shot &c.— that day there fell out a parlee between a county souldier and an Indian, the discourse would contain neere a sheet of paper, and a fight spoken of being variously reported, but not one word came from any officer in writing. I was informed their answer was to be retnrned upon friday, but it was to have ben the next day on thursday. I went to the garrisons, ordered foure to be sent from one garri-son and more from another as appe'the by the copy of the orders here annexed. Capne. Winkoll came down yt night, we gave advice of the whole to Maj Waldron, and yt we intended to fight ye Indians. Next day (4.) the Indian coming for his answer, returned without any answer none having order to treat with him: where upon they fell firing barnes of neer houses, haystacks, and all before ym. ye souldiers having got about 100 bush: wheat and other graine, and a shallop sent to bring it downe, they could not be prevailed wth all by their Sergt. (as I was informed) to continue any longer being pinched for want of bread by an unworthy planter, though they wanted no flesh.

5. As soon as I heard of their intention I sent up 14 of all the biskit I had with tobacco and rum for their encouragemt, and an expresse charge to fight ye enemy as appe'th by the witness of John Libby, Bouden, and Howell, No 1, and the order delivered ffoxwell to carry up; but no Cano could be got though I used my utmost indeav'r, they came down about 10 o'clock in the night. I designed to send ym up next day to fight the Indians, but perceiving the enemy had scattered themselves 2 or 3 wayes to fire ye towne, they having burned yt house particularly wch ye souldiers kept, being no more than wt I expected and told ym would be done.

6. Or men went up headed by Capne Winkoll to secure what corne of or Inhabitants was left in the N. East side in the deserted houses, and of barnes, hoping to meet ye enemy in ye Marsh, wch accordingly fell out, dividing themselves into 2 parties, one of them was first ingaged by a party of Indians, not above 12 shewing themselves, and the other by about 16. they were engaged also and had two skulking skirmishes, beat ym into ye swampes, one of the Boston souldiers was mortally wounded in ye breast. Or men retreated carrying off their wounded man and each a () of Indian corne, and came to their quarters 2 houres in ye night.

7. Being Lord's day * * * * the enemy * * * * before of their designs early in the morning burnt those houses and barnes our Capne saved the day before—they burnt also 8 or 9 deserted houses belonging to (John) Libby and children. As soon as these fires were discovered all the souldiers and Inhabitants hasted to next garrison which was little above musket shot of them: the tyde being up and spryng tyde the bridge was overflowed which obstructed their passage, witness Willet and Tydy &c. As soon as they could pass being headed by Capne Winkoll and Topping they scour the round of the towne on the N. East supposing ye enemy was gone that way to fire

those houses, they being only left unburnt, they met with no Indians in the march the whole day: met with Lieut Ingersoll and 12 Casco men who came to joyn with our men to search out and fight the Indians—that night there fell a small flight of snow.

8. We staid in our quarter till midnight, got 2 shallops, (9th) landed 70 men 3 houres before day at Blue Point to find out ye enemy, they had a tedious march the whole day thorough swampes, marshes and creeks, sometimes to the knees, others to the waist in snow and saltwater—saw some Indian tracts but could find no Indians. Lieut Ingersoll and all his men returned discouraged home, and our men (10th) to their quarters.

11. a mysty wet day, no handling armes nor marching—12—much wind at No West, no gitting over rivers. ye Canos on ye other side imployed to git in Cummins corne of Sacho to Blue Point—13—Capn Winkoll, Sgt Topping and our company got over ye river and marched to find Indians and drive cattell: the enemy fired two deserted houses at Sacho while or men were on this side and brot home between 20 and 30 head of Sacho cattell.—14—Sabbath day—no disturbance—bury'd Sam: Ryall wounded a week before.

15—no mocion

16—marched to drive in cattell, were disappointed by a Quaker who drove them into the woods from us.

17—indians came * * * * from across ye water.

18—Capn Winkoll and the country souldiers wch was attending drove cattell for Cummins and Rogers Inhabitants of Sacho.

19—drove cattell for Geo. M * * * Inhabitant of Sacho—20—I received orders from Maj'r Waldron to fit out Lieut Ingersoll to Maj'r Pendleton, wch I write to him I was upon doing.

21—no disturbance being Sabbath-day.

22—Sergt Topping and or men went to Dunsten to drive

cattell—23—Lieut Ingersoll came to ye head quarters with 12 men and wth orders from our Major to make them up to 60 or 70.

24. I made up his number 60 men, supplying them with 8 biskit cake a man of mine own store, and * * * to range the woods: sent 3 of our souldiers to Sacho one being there before, Lt Ingersoll intending to goe with his whole compy to Sacho and so range the woods that way, but yt night changed his mind because of a great river they must pass to return over this way: he went up in the night to Blue Point, landed before day with 2 shallopes, marched up the country to the head of Sacho-falls.

25 — 27. continued out one night, returned to ye head quarters and he dismissed our souldiers, Lt Ingersoll returning to Casco sent mee a ltre, which now is produced, to send him up 45 souldiers &c. towards his towne of Casco, it being alarum'd in his absence by one house burning and a man wounded, Lieut Ingersoll came himself to our head-quarters to demand the pty. I told him I had victualled them for 4 or 5 daies march, but he had dismissed them upon a days service, and the Inhabitants were scattered every man to his business: and how he had Maj. Pendleton's relief and promising to goe himself with his whole company to Sacho, whereupon he was satisfied with 20 men, and I made up Maj. Pendleton's relief 20 weh were dispatched with all speed—great wind at N. West.

28. Mr. Neale's* house burnt at Casco.

29. snow and raine.

30. Sergt Topping and his comp'y returned from Casco.

(10 :) 2—4. no disturbance, but got in catell every day, some for Wid: (Temp * * *) and about 20 also for one Edgcombe of Sacho.

* Francis Neale. He removed to Salem soon after this event (Willis' Portland.)

5. Tho : Michell arrived from Boston with a license to myself to come to Boston, and order to send ye Boston souldiers home if care was not taken to provide for ym.

6—17. great storm drove ye bark over the barre and the bark ashore a great way upon the upland, assembled the whole Town and Townsmen at their head-quarters, acquainted them with the purport of my ltre from the Hond Governor and Council ; whereupon it was resolved to send 1-2 of them to come home with myselfe, and the other to abide in ye Towne, who accordingly made a rate for the furnishing of the Garrison with victuals for them which were left being 19. 18—Jan 1. There was an order from the Honoured Govr according to the Council's determination that 10 of these souldiers should be sent to Major Pendleton, which were tendered but he would not accept of them : in the meantime I quartered 7 of them at Wm Sheldon's, 6 at Mr. Foxwells, 2 of ym at 2 Inhabitants in ye town, and 4 at my garrison, being the Sergt, the steward, drum, and a cooke to provide for them when they should all draw up to their head-quarters. 2—7. As soon as we could get off the bark, settled all matters in order to my departure and intended to get aboard, but could not for wind and for * * * which saved us a cold (basting) being the two criticall days of ye winter for cold.

8. got aboard and came to Winter Harbor with our souldiery.

9. Lord's day—went through Winter Harbor. 10. sailed towards Boston.

11. arrived and landed before night at Boston.

1676. 9. April. I returned to my charge at Black Point : no enemy appearing—a treaty between our Major and ye enemy relating to a peace ; and having an order from ye

Councill to deliver 6 of our souldiers to Mr. Warren's* ffishermen when they should demand them, in this vacancy about 3 or 4 houres in a day I prevailed the souldiers to goe into ye woods to cut upon my owne land some pallisado pines in order to ffortifying of my garrison house which was attended to untill

1. May. I understood by a fisherman of Winter Harbor they did not intend to make use of any of our souldiers, where-upon

2. sent an order for them all to appear at their head quarters that day which was effected, and upon the next day

3. dismissed them all: the uncertainty of any vessel coming in to carry them home by water put them upon marching home by land.

4. This above is the substance and a true transcript of wt I wrote daily in my Journal, witness my hand,

JOSH: SCOTTOW.

As for the readiness to public service agt the enemy during my absence, the Worl Magrs ltre March 4 last past will vindicate the souldiers."†

The following letters relate to the occurrence of the first week in November '75, when the conference was had with the Indians, and the day set for making known their decision about fighting. It will be seen that Scottow collected all his forces with the intention of encountering that large body of Indians.

"To Walter Gendall Comr of ye Gard at Spurwink. These are in His Ma'ties name to require you to send foure able men compleat in armes and amunicion unto ye maine gard this day before sunset to attend such orders as they shall receive in

*Humphrey Warren at Boston who was extensively engaged in the Maine fisheries.

† Massachusetts Historical Society's MSS. 1632 to 1678

order to the destroying of ye barbarous enemy ; and hereof not to fail as you will answer it at your peril.

from ye main gard

JOSH: SCOTTOW Captn

4. 9 ber 1675.”*

“ Capne Wincoll—you may remember the letter from our hands to ye Major yt we intended to fight the Indians and yt we agreed to send you wt relief might be needed to make your (force) good agat the Indians, these are therefore to warn and in His Maj’ties name to require you to stop all the countie and Towne souldiers from running * * * * * and to command them all in the (Majesties name) to yield you all due obedience as they will answer at their peril, and that you shall forthwith if it (need be) repaire to And: Browne’s House in order to give war and (fight) ye Indians, and in order to their incouragement (herewith is) sent ym 50 cakes, 6 * * *, 3 bottles of rum, and six pounds of tobacco, not else but rest yr assured friend

JOSH: SCOTTOW Capn.”†

“ To Wm Sheldon Commander of the Guard. You are hereby required in his Majesties name forthwith to send downe to the maine guard all the Boston souldiers which are under your command, and hereof not to fail at your perill—from the maine guard this 4th 9 ber. 1675. JOSH: SCOTTOW, Capne.”†

There can be nothing of importance to object to Scottow’s management of the Boston soldiers, sent to Black Point for the defence of the inhabitants, if this Journal discloses the whole truth with regard to his conduct. But nothing in this “narration” will account for the course taken with Scottow by a large number of the most respectable inhabitants of Scarborough, and of other towns interested. He was presented before the Gen-

* Massachusetts Historical Society’s MSS.

† Ibid—These MSS. are much worn, and parts of them are illegible.

eral Court of 1676 and tried upon the charge of "improving" the soldiers for his private aggrandizement, and allowing the inhabitants to suffer for want of the assistance which he had been directed to afford them. He was, however, acquitted by the Court, and the complainant was ordered to pay the costs of the trial. This decision and the absence of part of the evidence on which it was based, forbid our presenting many undoubted facts in our possession tending to implicate Scottow. The feeling of our townsmen had been strongly against him from the time of Nichol's death at Dunstan, and remained for a long time unchanged notwithstanding the decision of the Court. In 1679, when Scottow petitioned the General Court for remuneration, by a tax upon our townsmen, for money expended while in charge of the Boston soldiers at Black Point, the following counterpetition was also presented.

"Wee whose names wee have underwritten, doe declare that wee were never in ye least privie to ye sending for ye souldiers which came from Boston to Black Point, neither during ye time of their stay did we in any sort receive advantage by them; but yt they were maintained upon ye acct. of Mr. Scottow: for all the while his fishermen were thereby capacitated to keep at sea for the whole season; and much worke was done by them which was greatilie turned to his profit; as removing of a great barn, (planting) before his house, and cutting of Palisado stuff for a pretended fortification where there is no occasion nor need. And many more such courtesies as these Mr. Scottow (got) by the soldiers. And that other men should pay for his work, done under pretence of defending ye country, wee hope in behalf of the rest of ye sufferers in these sad times, you will please to take it into your serious consideration, and heape noe more upon us than wee are

able to bear—but where the benefit has been received, there order ye charge to be levied.

RICHARD FOXWELL—GILES BARGE
RAL: ALLANSON—JOSEPH OLIVER
WILLIAM SHELDON—JOHN COCKE
JOHN TINNEY.”*

Although the inhabitants derived little benefit from the soldiers under Scottow in 1675, they were much indebted to his enterprise for their safety on other occasions. During the subsequent years of his residence here, he appears to have regained the confidence and esteem of the townsmen. Later in the history of the town Scottow appears in a position towards his fellow townsmen altogether creditable to him. Before the events of Philip's War, as early as 1670, we find him at Black Point extensively concerned in the fisheries, and employing a large number of men and boats. The County Court ordered, in 1671, “that Mr. Scottow have power and be lycensed to sell wines and liquors in small quantitys to his fishermen and others.” If Jocelyn's account of these fishermen is true “wines and liquors” were a motive power in Scottow's enterprise second in importance only to money. Scottow was an eminently religious man in his habits, yet he did not keep wholly clear of the talons of Massachusetts law, as the following record will show: “Mr. *Scottoway*† presented (with others) for riding on the Sabbath from Wells to Yorke.” This occurred in 1661, and probably was on the occasion of Scottow's return from his first visit to Scarborough. Subsequently to 1675 the Captain took command of another garrison here, but, fortunately perhaps, under circumstances little calculated to test the question of his military courage.

* Massachusetts State Files.

† We frequently find the name spelt thus; and at this day Scottow's Hill in this town is oftenest styled “*Scottoways Hill*.”

CHAPTER VIII.

CIVIL AFFAIRS. SECOND INDIAN WAR.

The earliest Town records, commencing with the year 1663, contain hardly anything worth transferring to these pages. Occasionally there may be found an entry of some interest, but most of the matters recorded have lost whatever of value they may have once possessed. Upon the early Province records we find a few interesting items relating to Scarborough. To us, who enjoy the conveniences of comfortable post-roads and carriages, to say nothing of railroads and steamboats, our ancestors present a curious spectacle in traveling from settlement to settlement. The matter of travel affords one of the most striking contrasts between their condition and our own. Soon after the settlers had fairly established themselves in one place they appear to have directed their attention at once to the matter of roads and ferries. In 1658 the Court passed the following order establishing ferries over our rivers: "Itt is ordered that the Towns of Scarborough and Falmouth shall forthwith appoynt convenient Ferrys for transportation of travelers from place to place over the Rivers; That the sd Towns shall chuse meet psons to keep the sd Ferrys, having elected them to psent them to ye town Commissiours for allowance, who have hereby power if they see cause to confirme them, and likewise to order their pay."* Under this act a ferry was established on the Spurwink, and Ambrose Boaden chosen first ferryman. His charges were two pence cash or three pence on account for each person ferried over. This arrangement lasted many years, probably until nearly 1673, when the town was brought to account "for not providing of a ferry boate according to Law"—"In reference to ye ferry Its ordered yt the Town

* York Records

shall take course with the ferryman to pvide a good boate or Conows sufficient to transport horses and to have 9d for horse and man, and 6d for ferring ym over, and Sacoe River to have ye same allowance.”*

In 1680 the Town was presented for not keeping a ferry at Black Point River ; and again in 1682 the record is: “ Wee psent the town of Bla : Poynt for not keeping a ferry at bla : Poynt River—The Court upon examination of the case acquit the Town of this presentment, and finds John Start as by testimony appearing hath undertaken ye ferry wrby hee stands lyable to answer any Neglect in ye Premises.” To this was appended an order for Capt. Scottow to put in a better ferry man, otherwise the presentment would be continued to the next Court. Our townsmen were not less irregular in respect to the roads. When they had failed to lay out roads they were called to answer to the Court for their neglect of duty ; and when they had gone so far as to build them they were frequently presented for not taking proper care of them. The highway in common use at that time in this vicinity was the sea-shore, which appears to have subjected travelers to some inconveniences besides that of the irregularity of the ferries ; for in 1672 the Court took measures to open a new way between the settlements. On the records for that year we find this entry—“ For the more convenient passage of strangers and others from Wells to Cascoe, the expedition wrof is daly hindered by observance of ye Tyde in traveling ye lower way wch by this means may bee pvented, It is yrfore ordered by this Court yt ye Towns of Wells, Sacoe, Scarborough, and Falmouth, shall forthwith marke out the most convenient way from Wells to Hene : Sayward’s Mills, from thence to Sacoe Falls, and from Sacoe ffalls to Scarborough above Dunstan, and from Scarbo-

* York Records.

rough to Falmouth.” It was a long time after the passage of this order before its directions were fulfilled. It will be noticed that the above is the general course of the present post-road between Wells and Portland.

Soon after the purchase of Maine by Massachusetts a new form of government was substituted for the old, that being appropriate to the Province only while *claimed* as part of the Massachusetts Patent. In 1679, Thomas Danforth, the Deputy Governor of Massachusetts, was appointed President of Maine; and in March 1680 he went to York to assume jurisdiction under the new government. This consisted of a President, a Deputy President, a Council, and a General Assembly made up of the peoples representatives. The first Council consisted of eight members, amongst whom was our townsman Scottow. The first Assembly convened at York March 30th of the same year. Scarborough was not represented in it. As there were those in the Province who had from the first opposed the Massachusetts jurisdiction in Maine, there was no lack of remonstrance against this new and less agreeable exercise of it, although the right of jurisdiction had now been secured to Massachusetts. During 1680 a petition, signed by 115 of the residents in the Province, was sent to King Charles II, asking for the restoration of his immediate authority over them. amongst the signers of this were men of the highest respectability whose character and position gave them much influence with the inhabitants of the Province.*

In 1681 the general court empowered the President of Maine to confirm the titles of the inhabitants to their lands in the Province. Accordingly the President conveyed to Capt. Scottow, Walter Gendall, Richard Hunniwell, William Burridge,

* A copy of this interesting document is preserved in Vol. 1st Maine Hist. Coll. The names of Nathan Bedford, Henry Libby, Christopher Edgecomb, John Tenny, Anthony Roe, Robert Edgecomb, Henry Ellkins, and Philip Foxwell, all of Scarborough, are amongst those of the signers.

Andrew Brown, Ambrose Boaden and John Tenny, as Trustees, the township of Scarborough. The date of this conveyance was July 26th, 1684.* It appears from this instrument that the inhabitants were to pay, as an acknowledgment of the right of Massachusetts to the soil and government, "twelve pence for every family whose single County rate is not above two shillings, and for all that exceed the sum of two shillings in a single rate to pay three shillings per family annually in money to the Treasurer of the said Province for the use of the Chief Proprietor thereof." From this time all lands here were assigned by a vote of the Town, or by a committee appointed for the purpose. Thus on the Town Records for 1684 we find—"Wm Burridg was chosen *Townsmen*." Also—"Voted that the *Town Men* shall have power to give and grant land for this year." In December of that year the following entry was made: "Wee the Select men do give and grant to Matthew Laby (Libby) a Littell Passell of Mash at the highe eend of the Clea Pit." (the Clay Pits at Black Point.)

But soon after the second settlement of the Town the right of granting lands was claimed by certain townsmen who styled themselves "Proprietors of Scarborough," and kept a book of records, distinct from the Town books, in which they entered the descriptions of their grants. On the 28th of November, 1681, the first list of estates was entered on the Town book. From this we learn that there were then forty-five taxable estates in town. From a list of the estate holders for the same year we select a few names, with the amount of their tax. Capt "Skottoway" £3. 11s. 4d—Mr Watts £1. 6. 0.—Philip Foxwell £1. 4. 0—Richard Hunniwell 12s. 6d.—John Libby 7s. 0d—John Libby, Jr. 3s. 10d. &c. About this time there was quite a large accession of settlers, as we find many names of new inhabitants entered on the records for this year.

The schoolmaster seems to be a personage, who has acquired

* For a copy of the deed see Appendix D.

the considerable importance he enjoys since the days of which we are writing. Then he was lightly esteemed, if he existed at all in these parts, as we have not much evidence that he did either in the records of the times, or in what we know of the intellectual acquirements of the early townsmen. In 1675 the Court took up the matter of education, and proceeded to call to account such towns as had neglected their duties in this respect. Among others the Selectmen of Scarborough were presented, "for not taking care that ye children and youth of yt Town bee taught their chatichisme and educated according to Law."* At this time the townsmen were engaged in measures for their protection against the Indians, and were therefore more excusable than on other occasions of their presentment for the same negligence.

In 1681 was commenced the work of erecting the great fortification at Black Point. Capt. Scottow had often expressed his desire to provide for the inhabitants a place of refuge, more easily accessible than the fort on the Neck. At that time most of the dwellings were situated on the Plains somewhat distant from the Neck; so that, in case of sudden attack, the distance to it from the houses would render the fortification there almost

* The law referred to is the following curious one of 1642—"It is ordered that the Selectmen of every Town, in the several precincts and quarters where they dwell, shall have a vigilant eye over their brethren and neighbors to see, first that none of them shall suffer so much barbarism in any of their families, as not to endeavor to teach by themselves or others, their children and apprentices so much learning as may enable them perfectly to read the English Tongue: and a knowledge of the Capital Laws: upon a penalty of 20s for each neglect therein. Also, that all masters of families do once a week (at the least) catechise their children and servants in the ground and principles of religion: and that — — — at the least, they procure such children and apprentices to learn some short orthodox catechism without book, that they may be able to answer unto the questions that shall be propounded unto them out of such catechism when any of the Selectmen shall call them to a trial of what they have learned in that kind." (Ancient Charters &c. p. 73.)

useless. In view of this, and similar facts, Scottow made a singular proposal to the townsmen. He offered to give the town one hundred acres of land "upon the Plains *between Moor's Brook and the South East end of the Great Pond*," where there should be a "fortification erected for the defence of the Towne." The land about this fortification was to be laid out in lots, on which the Inhabitants should settle, no man being allowed more than two acres "except the Minister and Schoolmaster." The houses were to set in a range, and not to approach nearer than eight rods to the fortification. This grant was to be "on condition of paying Capt. Scottow 12d yearly in money forever, as being their demesne Lord."* The Town accepted the proposition and appointed a committee to lay out the grounds, who, in a very few days, were ready with their report. Everything pertaining to this enterprise seems to have been undertaken by the townsmen with a zeal and alacrity truly surprising.

On Saturday, March 13th, "an unanimous vote of the Towne passed to go about the work of fortification on Monday next, and to carry it to an end that whole week."* Robt. Elliot, Philip Foxwell, Anthony Libby, and Edward Bennett, or any three of them were authorized to overlook the selection and cutting of the timber: and so with the other inhabitants, each taking his share of the work. In this manner the task was soon accomplished, and the thick walls of timber sprung up in the midst of the Plains, as it were, to bid defiance to all the savages between the Saco and the Penobscot. It was the most extensive, and, of itself, the strongest fortification ever built in the town. The site was not so favorable as that of the Neck garrison. For a few years it proved to be a stronghold for our inhabitants against their treacherous foes. The remains of it

* Town Records.

may be seen to this day, and its site readily distinguished. During the continuance of this agreement with Capt. Scottow the affairs of the settlement at Black Point were in a flourishing condition, and a number of new houses were erected near the fortification. But in 1686, some cause, now unknown, operating against Scottow, the townsmen declared their agreement with him, respecting the fortification, "wholly null and void:" the reappearance, doubtless, of their former grudge against him. Although they rejected him as their "demesne Lord," they were not unwilling to test the good qualities of his garrison in seasons of danger. The Captain's son Thomas, commanded this garrison in 1689, and the townsmen held their business meetings in it. For the conception and furtherance of this excellent plan for their safety, the inhabitants were deeply indebted to Scottow, and if they did not, certainly should have accepted the offering as an atonement on his part for former negligences.

The prosperous condition of the town now began to be affected by increasing difficulties with the Indians. Few years of comparative peace had scarcely sufficed to repair the injuries of three years of savage warfare; yet the effects of so long a cessation of hostilities were plainly to be discerned in the slow and steady growth of the settlements, and in the increased prosperity of individual settlers. These bright prospects were now to be darkened. The bitter foe of the settlers had not yet gone from their midst, and his unappeased fury proved all the more terrible for having endured the restraint of ten years of peace. The last entry upon the Town Records for the seventeenth century is dated May 21st, 1688. England having become involved in war with France, the English settlers in this country of course took part against the French, and were thus entangled in a web of difficulties from which it was hard to escape. Our inhabitants were at that time better provided

with the means of defence, than they had been ten years before, when first attacked by the savages. Their own sad experience, and the adoption of new laws on the subject, led them to provide more carefully against future attacks. In 1683, the court ordered the establishment of strong garrisons in all the towns of the Province.

Two years afterwards the following order was proclaimed—“Matters considered as they stand in this Juncture of tyme, relateing to ye Indeans, It is ordered by this court yt not any person or persons wtsoever shall desert ye Towns or garrisons, upon forfeiture of their estates to the Towne and such as do remayne, as law in yt case has provided, unless they have lyberty under the hands of the Cheefe Commandr and ye Militia of sd Towne.” These were prudent measures, but unfortunately they could avail little against savages, made unnaturally ferocious by the use of intoxicating liquors. Many of the settlers were now making it a business to supply the Indians with liquors in exchange for pelts. They were too intent upon the profits of such a trade to listen to the suggestion that the effects of the curse dealt out to the savages might one day alight upon their own heads. So alarming had this imprudent traffic become in 1685, that a special court was called that year for the purpose of preventing it.

Of the several causes assigned for the commencement of the second Indian War, the more immediate one was the plundering of the Baron De St. Castine's trading-house by Gov. Andros. The Governor pretended that it was situated within the limits of English jurisdiction; this, Castine would not acknowledge. He was a Frenchman, and son-in-law of Madockawando Chief Sachem of the Eastern Indians, and was therefore possessed of an influence, with both the French Missionaries, and the Indians, which he might at any moment exert against the English settlers. By Castine and his party the Indians of Maine were

soon induced to take arms against the English. The refined cruelties of French, combined with the brutal violence of Indian warfare, rendered this a terrible contest.

The first skirmish in the war occurred at North Yarmouth in September. Capt. Gendall had gone there with a small band of soldiers, for the purpose of erecting stockades on Royall's River for the defence of the settlement. While at work there his party was attacked by seventy or more Indians, whom they at last succeeded in driving away ; but not until they had sacrificed several of their number, and amongst them Walter Gendall their Captain. The circumstances of his death are related by Sullivan. Gendall spent the last years of his life in North Yarmouth. Before, he seems to have resided alternately as a military officer in Scarborough and Falmouth. He at one time exposed himself to the serious charge of being treacherous to the interests of the English settlers. This occurred while he was a captive with the Indians. He was examined upon the charge, and sentenced "to run the *gantelope*, through the military companies in Boston, with a rope about his neck ; to forfeit all his lands to the country, and be banished out of this jurisdiction." For reasons now unknown this severe sentence was never inflicted ; on the contrary the subject of it was immediately afterwards restored to the public confidence and esteem. The only evidence we have seen, beside the sentence of the Court, from which one might infer his guilt, is contained in the deposition of a single person.* The manner of his life and death places him above all such suspicions.

During 1689 the settlements at Sheepscot and Dover were destroyed, and in a battle at Falmouth Sept. 21st, Andrew Alger, Jr. of this town was killed. In this engagement a large body of the enemy was defeated by the English under the

* Peter Bass. See copy of the original, Appenpix E.

command of Maj. Benjamin Church, who had been sent from Massachusetts to protect the eastern settlements. He left Falmouth after this victory, visited the garrisons at Blue Point, Black Point and Spurvink, and then went to the Kennebec settlements. On the approach of winter the Government recalled Church's forces; and "so taking his leave of those poor Inhabitants (about Casco) some of the chief men there waited upon him to Black Point to Capt. Scottoway's garrison. Coming there they prevailed with the said Capt. Scottoway to go with him to Boston, which he readily complied with provided the said Church would put another in to command the garrison, which being done they set out, and travelled through all the country to Boston."* The object of this journey was to obtain further aid for the eastern plantations; and Capt. Scottoway waited some weeks in Boston that he might have the decision of the government to carry home with him. Major Church presented a written memorial to the government, and then "left Capt. Scottoway in a very sorrowful condition, who returned home sometime after *with only a copy of what was left on the board by the said Church.*"† This failure afterwards proved disastrous to this and neighboring settlements. The Massachusetts Government was so busy with the excitement attending the seizure and imprisonment of Sir Edmund Andross, that little attention was paid to the frequent calls for help coming to them from the eastern sufferers. During Maj. Church's visit here a council of war was held at Black Point, of the proceedings of which the subjoined is a record.

"SCARBOROUGH the 11th Nov. 1689.

Att a Councill of War held at the point Garrison, Present, Major Benjamin Church, Capt. Sylvanus Davis, Capt. Wm. Bassitt, Capt. Simon Willard, with the rest of the Commission officers of Saco, Falmouth and Scarborough.

* French and Indian Wars—S. G. Drake.

† Ibid.

Itt is ordered that one hundred their Majesties Horses now in this present expedition against the coman enemy, be detached out of the several companies, which sd number (are) for the security of the garrisons there resident: and in case any of ye enemy be discovered, or any tracks of them be made in this winter season, until further force be sent that may advance to their head quarters. Souldiers Quartered in ye township of Saco, twenty men in their two garrisons—In the township of Scarborough twenty men in their garrisons, viz. *three spurwink* included.* Ordered that *Lieut. Richard Hunniwell* is to take the charge and conduct of the twenty souldiers quartered at Blew Point, Black Point, and Spurwink Garrisons, as he the sd Lieut. Hunniwell shall receive orders from time to time from the said Commander in Chief. Itt is ordered that ye Forty Souldiers posted at Saco, Scarborough and Spurwinke are to be obedient unto ye commander of ye several Garrisons where they shall be posted whilst in Garrison, but to attend ye command of sd Lieut. Hunniwell and Ensign John Hill respectively, as they are concerned upon their scouting or marching out. Given under my hand &c.

BENJ. CHURCH

Com. in Chief."

On the 15th of May, 1690, a force of between four and five hundred French and Indians destroyed the garrison houses at Falmouth. The next day they besieged Fort Loyal, where most of the inhabitants were collected, and at the end of five days compelled the occupants to surrender. Many of the captives were barbarously murdered, and some carried by the French to Quebec. Thus in the brief space of a week, was the flourishing settlement at Falmouth completely destroyed. Two years afterwards as Sir Wm. Phipps and Major Church were passing on an expedition east, they stopped where Falmouth once stood, and "buried the bones of the slain as they were bleaching upon the soil."† Mather well describes the utter desolation of the scene in the two words, "*deserted Casco*."

The destruction of Falmouth was the signal for a general retreat of the inhabitants of Scarborough. Knowing their

* These were, Scottow's at Black Point, Philip Foxwell's at Blue Point, and probably Dominicus Jordan's at Spurwink.

† Willis' Portland.

weakness against five hundred such enemies, they wisely resolved to save at least their lives by flight. Had they remained, it is probable that they would have withstood the foe for a few days by the great strength of the fortification, but doubtless the result would have been as unfortunate as in the case of Fort Loyal. Cotton Mather, in his history of the war, says: "The garrisons at Papoodack, Spurwink, Black Point and Blue Point were so disanimated by these disasters, that without orders they drew off immediately to Saco—and from Saco in a few days also they drew off to Wells—and about half Wells drew off as far as Lieut. Storer's."* In a letter of the 22d of May, written from Portsmouth to the authorities at Boston, the writers say "that three or four hundred people, mostly women and children, had arrived at Portsmouth from the eastward, and that the vessels reported *that Black Point, Richmond's Island, and Spurwink were burning as they passed.*"† In this manner the settlements in this town and vicinity were broken up, and the settlers driven from their comfortable homes to seek new dwelling-places amongst strangers. To such, it may be well imagined, the hearty hospitality of the people of the western settlements was truly cheering. The following letter will not be without interest in this connection.

WELLS Aug. 13th 1696.

Sonn Hill

I am now at Wells with twenty Horse intending to come over to you ——— I have an order from the Governor to assist you in *drawing off*, and I have an order from the Lieut. Gov. to draw off and bring away what can be transported by land, and to hide the rest in the ground with the great

* Lieut Joseph Storer's garrison, situated in the southern part of Wells, was one of the strongest fortifications in the Province, and the Lieut. one of the bravest and worthiest officers of his day. The successful defence of his garrison in 1692, with *fifteen* men, against a force of *five hundred* French and Indians, was the most memorable achievement of the whole war.

† Massachusetts files quoted by Willis.

guns;* but our towns are so weak for want of men, that if the enemy be about you we fear we are too weak to come and bring you off. Our people are much troubled that your fort should be demolished. Capt. Chubb gave up his fort without firing a gun against the enemy.

I remain your loving father-in-law

CHARLES FROST."†

This was superscribed, "To Capt. John Hill at Saco Fort. Hast post Hast." It is a deplorable picture of the weak condition of the settlements in Maine at that time.

In the year 1698 the Sachem Madockawando died, and as the war between the English and French had already been brought to a close, the Eastern Indians were once more ready to make peace with our settlers. This they did January 7th, 1699.

CHAPTER IX.

RESETTLEMENT—SECOND SETTLERS, &c.

The precise date of the second settlement of the town is not known, but all the facts in our possession relating to it show, with a good degree of probability, that it was either in the Fall of 1702 or the following Spring. The first settlers after the evacuation of 1690 were a little band of seven persons who came from Lynn in a sloop. They anchored their little vessel in the bay at Black Point, and used it as a shelter by night until they had put up a sufficient garrison on land. The names of these emigrants are known to us only by tradition, which is in this case entirely reliable. They were John Larrabee,

* Our inhabitants disposed of many of their goods in the same manner. As late as the year 1780 Sheriff Leavitt of Blue Point ploughed up a large quantity of chains, augers, chisels, and other iron implements that were buried for safety in 1690, the owners doubtless expecting to return in time of peace.

† Copied from the original by J. W. Thornton, Esq.

Henry Libby and three sons, — Pine, — Blood.* These resided together on the Neck in the garrison they had built, and were, for at least a year, the only inhabitants of the town. The fewness of their number leads us to the inference that they began the settlement in the expectation that the peace with the French and Indians would not soon be disturbed. But they, in common with other pioneers in the newly revived settlements about them, were sadly disappointed in this expectation.

Soon after the breaking out of the French and Indian War of 1702, known as "Queen Anne's War," the eastern Indians had pledged themselves, by a present of wampum to the Massachusetts authorities, not to take part in the war, but to remain on terms of friendship with the English. At the time of the agreement the Indians seemed to be sincere in their professions of peace, but within two months afterwards "the whole eastern country was in a conflagration, no house standing, nor garrison unattacked."† In August 1703 a band of 500 French and Indians made a sudden descent upon the settlements from Casco to Wells. At Purpooduck, where were settled only nine families, and they without a garrison, the enemy killed twenty five persons, and captured eight. Josiah Wallis of Purpooduck at this time escaped to Scarborough, carrying on his back a son seven years old. At Spurwink they killed some and captured the rest of twenty-two persons of the name of Jordan. At Saco eleven were killed, and twenty-four taken prisoners. They next set upon the garrison at Black Point with their whole force of five-hundred French and Indians, under the command

* We shall have occasion to notice John Larrabee hereafter. Henry Libby was the son of the first John Libby. The three sons who came with him were Samuel, James and John; the latter distinguished as "Black John." We suppose the Pine to have been Charles the hunter, but cannot prove that they were the same persons. Of Blood there is no further record.

† Penhallow's Wars.

of Beaubasin, a Frenchman. There were in the garrison only *eight* persons able to fight, but fortunately they had at their head, one who in point of courage was equal to a goodly number of French and Indians—one to whose boldness and presence of mind they owed their preservation. This was Capt. John Larrabee one of the party from Lynn. Although the enemy's force was fearfully large to be opposed by a little band of eight, and notwithstanding the French and Indians sent a flag of truce offering terms of surrender, the brave Captain of the garrison refused altogether to capitulate or treat with the enemy on *any* terms. As the situation of the garrison afforded uncommon facilities for the process of undermining it, the Indians, under the direction of French skill, commenced operations with the design of doing so.* A steep and high bank protected them from the shots of those in the fort, and as it would have been the highest folly for any of the little company within to venture out to attack them, the prospect was gloomy indeed. Some within were for capitulating, but Capt. Larrabee at once put an end to all such propositions by solemnly declaring that *he would shoot the first man who should again mention a surrender*. Having made every preparation in their power to give the enemy a warm reception, whenever they should reach the cellar of the fort, the little band calmly awaited the result. Before the Indians had completed half the distance they had to dig, there came a heavy rain storm, which continued two days. The soil being light and porous, at last gave way under the influence of the incessant rains, and filled up a large part of the mine they had dug, so that the diggers were now exposed to the fire from the garrison. This ill success, and the harassing shots from the garrison, so disheartened them that they soon went

* The garrison at New Casco was attempted in the same manner by the same party. (See Willis' Portland.

away in search of easier prey, leaving the noble commander and his companions as undaunted as they were unharmed.

The number of settlers now began to increase, but so slowly that there was no organization of a town government until 1720. Amongst the early proprietors in town, during the second settlement, were some who paid no attention whatever to agriculture, but subsisted altogether by fishing and hunting. The houses of such were scattered along the shore from Blue Point to Spurwink, several of them standing on "Pine Point" which is now quite desolate. Pine Point received its name from Charles Pine, a famous hunter, whose residence was there. He was celebrated for very many brave exploits with the Indians. "Newbry's Point" on the South East extremity of Pine Point was so named from Wm. Newbury, also a hunter, who lived upon it. The reputation of these hunters as "excellent shots" proved very serviceable to their neighbors, as a safe guard against skulking Indians. Much of their time was devoted to the catching of beaver, which were then abundant in the Nonsuch, and other streams, where parts of their dams yet remain. They had besides larger and more interesting game, such as bears and wolves. These infested the woods in this vicinity until late in the century. In 1730 the town voted that "4 pounds be paid to any person that may kill a grown wolf within this township this year," and "one pound to any person that may kill a bear upwards of a year old;" and in 1739 £25. were raised to pay the bounty on wolves killed during the preceding. As all the travelers to and from this part of the Province at that time passed across the Ferry, the Ordinary, or house of the ferryman, at the Ferry Rocks, was always the chosen resort of these sportsmen and others, during their leisure hours. There they were wont to sun themselves in the summer, and to partake of fireside cheer in the winter.

In John Jocelyn's book there is frequent notice taken of the

courage and strength of the hunting dogs belonging to the planters of the preceding century; and he cites as an example the case of a noble mastiff that could easily overcome a full grown wolf. The dogs of the later settlers appear to have been quite as valuable. We may be allowed to offer one illustration of their courage and strength, from which one may infer their importance to the planters as a defence against wild beasts. A traveling show-man who was carrying a lion east, stopped for the night at the Ferry, where a considerable number of the townsmen were collected. After satisfying their curiosity with a sight of the noble beast, one of our hunters proposed, for the wager of a barrel of rum, to match one of his dogs against the lion. The show-man was ready, of course, to accept such a challenge, and the dog was put into the cage. The lion at once sprung upon him, and for a short time seemed likely to come off conqueror as easily as his owner anticipated; but the dog being constantly cheered by his master at last succeeded in seizing the lion by the throat, and having thrown him upon his back was about killing him, when the show-man, seeing no other way to save his lion, agreed to pay the wager of rum, and fifty dollars in addition for liberty to shoot the noble dog *in the cage*. This was done and the lion saved.

For many years the farming operations of the inhabitants were confined to small parcels of ground in the neighborhood of the garrisons. They depended on the salt marshes for the hay needed to support their cattle through the winter, and for their own support probably looked as much to the sea as the land. In the Spring the cattle, excepting a few milch-cows, were turned loose, and left to provide for themselves until Autumn. All these were distinguished by the owners' marks, which were regularly entered in the Town Book, in order to avoid all controversy about ownership. Such entries as the following are abundant: "Jona: Libby, his creturs mark, a half penny

cutt out of the underside of the left ear, and a topp cutt on the right." "Joseph Moody, his creturs mark, a half cake under-side the left ear, and a hole in the right ear, and a half penny under the hole."

During the eleven years of Queen Anne's War, our townsmen, or at least two of them, frequently encountered parties of Indians, and usually came off unharmed. The two referred to were Charles Pine, and Richard Hunniwell who earned the epithet of "Indian Killer." Both of these were distinguished in their day as bitter enemies of the Indians, and often found occasion to show their hostility with terrible effect. One or two well-authenticated traditions respecting them will serve to illustrate their peculiar mode of warfare, and its consequences. At the time of the second settlement, an unfinished house, which had remained since the desertion of 1690, stood on Winnock's (Plummer's) Neck. This became a sort of rendezvous for the Indians, where they would occasionally meet and amuse themselves with howling and dancing. One Spring, soon after the return of the inhabitants, Mr. Pine discovered that the savages were holding in this shell a series of nightly "powows," and at once he determined to improve the occasion for a trial of his skill as a marksman. It was his rule to hunt Indians without any companions but two guns, which he was wont to discharge, one immediately after the other, when he fired from a covert. Taking his two guns he went out alone from the garrison early one afternoon, paddled his boat up the Nonsuch, till he came near the house, and then having hid it near the bank of the river, went into the deserted dwelling, got up amongst the beams and silently awaited the result of his adventure. Soon after dark he heard the expected Indian whistle in the woods around him, and peeping out he saw nearly a score of savages coming towards the place of his concealment, which was at least three miles from the garrison, where

was the nearest aid in case the Indians should attack him. Pine, however, was not easily frightened, and probably did not expect any more unfavorable result than that which happened. As the two foremost Indians were entering the doorway he fired and killed them both, but before he could get ready his other gun for a second discharge the remaining savages were beyond danger from it. They did not even stop to see if their companions were killed. In an hour's time Pine was safe in the garrison examining the guns and ammunition of his victims. Such an occurrence was hardly out of the course of his ordinary life. But the anecdote of Pine, which used to be narrated with the greatest relish by the veterans of the past generation, is the following: The Indians were in the habit of shewing themselves upon the beach between the Ferry and the Neck, and amusing themselves by insulting and provoking the garrison, with the aid of certain significant attitudes and gestures. Pine, with his wonted readiness for such employment, volunteered to put a stop to this recreation. Charging the garrison not to allow the Indians to cut off his retreat, he went out upon the beach one morning before day, and covered himself with rock weed near the usual scene of the Indians' sport. After waiting patiently until the morning was well advanced, the Indians at length appeared and began their sport. Presently an enormous fellow stepped out from the crowd that he might be fairly seen, and, turning his back towards the garrison, exposed a part of his huge body which, in the words of Pine, "shone like a glass bottle." The hunter immediately sent his bullet to the precise spot indicated by the Indian's hand. The astounded savages seized their falling comrade, and rushed headlong into the woods, while Pine walked leisurely back to the garrison, confident that there would be no more such exhibitions within sight of it.

Hunniwell, the "Indian Killer," was a more ferocious and

irreconcilable foe to the savages. Pine's most cruel acts against them were always of a sportsman-like character—he was fond of the adventure; but Hunniwell's hatred of them was such that he would kill them whenever and wherever he met them, regardless of all public treaties of peace. This is, without doubt, to be attributed to his unsatisfied desire of revenge for the death of a dear wife and child, whom the Indians are said to have murdered. Tradition furnishes the following instance of vengeance which he is said to have taken on his foes during a time of peace. A number of the Blue Point planters were warming themselves by the fire in a clam house,* on what is now called "Seavey's Landing," when two Indians came in, and setting their guns in the corner, took places by the fire with the planters. Hunniwell entered soon after, in his usual manner; but finding these Indians present, he became remarkably uneasy, and began to pace the floor in a restless manner. The blood of his murdered wife and babe was before his eye. Presently he went to the corner, where the guns stood, and taking one up, put it to his shoulder and moved it from side to side as if taking aim at birds on the wing; he then took it from his shoulder, examined the pan, and, finding the gun unloaded, put it down and took up the other, with which he sighted as before, until, getting the heads of the Indians in range, he fired and killed them both. On another occasion he killed *five* Indians at once on the shore of Great Pond, with his famous "Buccaneer gun." He also cut off the

* Probably a house used for a place to cut out fish bait for their own use. It was not until within a few years of the present time that any of our townsmen made it part of their yearly business to procure clam bait for the fishermen on the Banks. The "clam-flats" have now become a source of considerable profit to many of the townsmen. During the winter and spring of the present year (1852) they have procured nearly *two thousand* barrels of this bait.

head of an Indian with a scythe while mowing on the marsh opposite Jane's Point. The circumstances of this singular adventure are briefly these. While mowing he noticed the Indians on the opposite side of the River, but supposed they were too far off to trouble him. But one of them perceiving that the mower was no less a person than the dre added Hunniwell, and that his gun was set against a stack of hay some distance from him, undertook to entrap him by silently crossing the River, and creeping up to the gun under cover of the bank. The Indian succeeded in crossing the River, and in getting possession of the gun, before Hunniwell saw him. He continued mowing, however, apparently unconscious of his approach, until the Indian had come within a few yards of him, raised the gun and called out to him—"now me kill you Hunniwell." The words were hardly out of the Indian's mouth when Hunniwell sprang towards him, shouting at the top of his voice: "You infernal dog, if you fire at me I will cut you in two with this scythe." The Indian fired as Hunniwell approached; but it is well known that the savages used a very small quantity of powder in charging their guns compared with what the whites, and especially with what Hunniwell used in his "Buccaneer," and the young savage, either not aware of this or in his haste forgetting it, not only fired over Hunniwell's head, but was *himself* the only person that fell. Before he could recover his feet Hunniwell had severed his head from his body with the scythe, and fixing it on a pole, he held it up in the sight of the Indians on the opposite shore, and loudly called to them to come over and share the same fate.

The savages entertained a superstitious dread of this townsman, which did not restrain them, however, from seeking revenge for the Indian blood he had so abundantly shed. The only satisfaction, which they were able to obtain for many years, consisted in torturing a poor horse of his which once fell into

their hands. They stuck his skin full of pitch-pine splinters, and then set them on fire. The day of a more complete revenge came at last. One morning in the Autumn of 1713, or thereabouts,* a party of twenty men left the garrison on the Neck to collect and drive in the cattle, which had been at large during the summer. The peace of Utrecht had just been promulgated here, and it was moreover supposed that there were no Indians in the vicinity. For these reasons the little party marched on with utter carelessness. Hunniwell, who headed the party had taken with him nothing but a pistol, and others had no arms whatever. A force of *two hundred* Indians had concealed themselves in an alder thicket at the west end of the Great Pond, and as the little company of townsmen passed by on their way to the woods, the savages took deliberate aim, and fired upon them under the most favorable circumstances. A *single survivor* escaped to the garrison with the tidings, and the men who soon afterwards ventured out to the spot found the nineteen corpses, which they hastily interred in one grave in a little field near the Neck. Hunniwell's body was easily distinguishable from the rest by its horrible mutilation. Soon after they left the garrison one of the party asked Hunniwell why he had not taken his gun with him, his reply was, that if a gun was needed he might take it from the first person killed. It is to be regretted that the names of those who fell with him have escaped the memory of our aged people.

Notwithstanding bloody affrays like these between the English and Indians, they were generally on familiar terms in times of peace, and often mingled together in athletic sports. The game of "base" was a peculiar favorite with our young townsmen, and the friendly Indians, and the hard beach of "Garri-

*The narrators of this event to Rev. Mr Storer, amongst whom was a grandson of Hunniwell, were positive that it occurred during a time of peace ; it therefore was not in 1703 as asserted by Williamson.

son Cove" afforded a fine ground for it. Seventy years ago the old men used to take great pleasure in narrating these contests with their savage visitors for the prizes of agility and strength. When the contest was upon the race-ground it was seldom our townsmen could claim the victory; indeed their swiftest horses were hardly a match for some of these hardy runners of the forest. James Libby (brother of Black John who commanded the garrison after John Larrabee) had at one time a mare to which he was very much attached, and of whose speed he was perpetually boasting. One day he rode out to the "Great Ox-Pasture," so called, and finding himself in the neighborhood of Indians he wheeled towards the garrison. An Indian immediately sprung from a thicket as he passed, and gave him chase. Mr. Libby, not being much celebrated for personal courage, set his spurs to the head in his mare's flank, and urged her to the top of her speed. The path was clear, and the ground even, and for a while the contest seemed doubtful. At length the Indian had gained so far upon the horse as actually to put his hand upon her rump, and in a moment more Mr. Libby and his favorite mare would have been captives, had not Black John and another belonging to the garrison just then appeared, at sight of whom the reluctant Indian let his prey escape. The sight of the rider, with eyes starting from their sockets with terror, his body thrown forward upon the horse's neck, and his legs thrust as far in advance as possible, to keep them from the grasp of his pursuer, so convulsed his brother and the other with laughter that neither of them could steady a gun to fire at the Indian, who escaped into the woods. From that day forth Mr. Libby was never heard boasting of his mare's speed.

After the massacre of the nineteen, the injury done in this town by the Indians was comparatively trifling. In 1720 they began anew their depredations on the property and lives of the

English in the eastern settlements. The next year the Government, becoming aware of the source whence the mischief proceeded, sent to Norridgewock a force of three hundred men under Col. Thomas Westbrook with orders to seize the French missionary Ralle. This expedition failed in its main object, but succeeded in securing the private papers of the Jesuit, which disclosed the diabolical proceedings of the French to induce the Indians to attempt the extermination of the English settlers. The Indian hostilities continuing, in 1722 the Government made a formal declaration of war, and appointed Col. Thomas Westbrook Commander in Chief of the forces. In January of the ensuing year, soldiers were stationed in the different garrisons in this vicinity. To the Black Point garrison were appointed "nine men, and to be recruited." In the Spring of 1723 the Indians divided their force into small scouting parties, and in this manner attacked all the settlements along the seaboard.

In April they suddenly fell upon the inhabitants at Black Point, and succeeded in killing Sergeant Chubb of the Fort there, Thomas Larrabee, and his son Anthony Larrabee. According to family tradition the Larrabees were killed while at work in the field at a distance from their house. The fact of their death by the hands of the Indians stands recorded on the Town Book thus: "The death of Thomas lereby and his son Anthony lereby, who was killed by the ingons April 19th, 1723."* Chubb was mistaken by the Indians for Capt. Harmon, for whom they entertained a peculiar dislike, and at once no less than fifteen guns were aimed at him; and he fell pierced by *eleven* bullets. "This," says Hutchinson, "was lucky for the rest, many more of them escaping to the fort than would have done." Chubb was a valuable officer in the garrison,

* Thomas Larrabee lived on the land owned by Saml. Tompson, Esq., and was buried with his son on the west side of the Black Point road.

wanting in perseverance rather than in courage, but altogether a man that could ill be spared by the little company he commanded. The Larrabees were worthy men, and their loss was deeply felt by the town.

On the 26th of June the savages attacked the garrison-house of Roger Dearing, killed his wife, and took as prisoners two of his children, and Mary Seaman of Saco who was visiting there. The same day they took John Hunniwell, of Black Point, prisoner. Dearing's house was situated on the west side of the Nonsuch, on the farm now owned and occupied by Capt. William Hasty. The only other person killed in this town during this war was one Mitchell, of Black Point, near Spurwink, whom they waylaid and murdered in 1724. The Indians at this time plainly showed in their conduct the effects of French instruction. The zealous missionaries seemed to have pictured to the savages, not more the beauties of christianity, than the freedom and bliss of that state in which they should again be the sole masters of the soil, without a solitary Englishman to disturb their happiness. Three of the Indians concerned in the murder of Madam Dearing, had before that event resided on the Nonsuch, and were well-known to our inhabitants as *Sam. Manhan*, father and son, and *Wahooka*. The elder Manhan was afterwards buried on the bank of that River near the site of Carter's late Mill. These three were invited into the garrison of Job Burnham, on Blue Point, the morning before the murder, and a table having been set they were urged to eat. They all refused to eat anything; and Manhan, swinging his arm around slowly through every point of the compass, remarked to Mrs. Burnham—"all mine by'n by." Thus the poor savage was anticipating a day when there would be no Englishman to invite an Indian to come and eat his bread. Such were the expectations of the Indians at this

time; evidently an atrocious plan for exterminating the English had been devised, by the help of French intrigue.

In August 1724 the Government dispatched four companies, consisting in all of 208 men, under the direction of Capts. Harmon, Moulton and Brown, for the purpose of breaking up the Indian settlement at Norridgewock. It was there Father Ralle resided in the midst of his barbarous disciples; and he being killed, the main object of the expedition was gained. The enraged soldiers, believing that this settlement was the hot bed of French influence upon Indian cruelty, laid waste the entire village, not even sparing the rude chapel that stood in its midst. Benjamin Larrabee, the son of Thomas, and brother of Anthony Larrabee, who were killed in the preceding April, volunteered in Harmon's company, and was present at the destruction of the Indian settlement. He was then but seventeen years old, but the desire of avenging the death of his father and brother inspired him with strength and courage equal to those of his older companions. After the firing had nearly ceased, he went into a wigwam where Father Ralle was sitting composedly smoking from a pipe of uncommon length. Young Larrabee, more eager for Indian blood than for any other, left him undisturbed and went in pursuit of Indians; returning to the same wigwam soon afterwards he found him upon the floor slain by another hand.*

Soon after the famous engagement at Pequakett, in May, 1725, under Capt. Lovell, a treaty of peace was executed at Boston by the delegates of the Penobscot Tribe, and the government commissioners, thus bringing to a close another of these vexatious wars.

* He was killed by Lieut. Jaques, some of whose descendants are now living at Harpswell.

CHAPTER X.

ECCLESIASTICAL AFFAIRS.

Within a few years after the first settlement of the town, the settlers took measures to secure the services of a minister, though scarcely able at the time to support one. Their desire for the enjoyment of privileges, which had been dear to them in their distant home, increased with the return of each Sabbath, and at last compelled them to seek its gratification. In a letter from Rev. Thomas Jenner to Gov. Winthrop, written from Saco, April 16th, 1641, it is said—"I have been solicited both from the inhabitants of *Stratten's Plantation* (Black Point,) and from those of Caskoe, to be a meanes to help each of them to a goodly minister; wherefore I do make bold to intreat your worship to do your endeavors to furnish them both."* But "goodly ministers" were not then to be had for the asking, and for this reason, if for no other, our townsmen were obliged to wait a long while before they could obtain so desirable an addition to their small number. The same deficiency existed in the Province, as well as the town, the next year, as we learn from the following interesting extract—"Master Ward's† sonne is desired to come into the Province of Mayne. There is one Master Jenner gone there of late. There is want of good ministers there; the place hath an ill report by some, but of late some good acts of justice have been done there, and divers Gentlemen there are, and it is a country very plentifull for fish, fowle and vension."‡

In this settlement the want continued some years. The first preacher at Black Point, of whom we can find any record, was

* Gov. Hutchinson's Papers quoted in Folsom's Saco.

† Rev. Nathaniel Ward of Ipswich.

‡ "Plain Dealing, or Newes from New England. By Thos. Leehford, Gent:—London 1642.

Rev. John Thorpe ; and concerning him we only know that Jordan and Jocelyn complained of him to the Court, in 1659, for "preaching unsound doctrine" to the settlers. It does not appear in what particular he gave them offence, nor how long he remained here. In 1665 there was a minister settled here, with whom the inhabitants had agreed for a fixed salary, each paying towards it according to what he possessed. Further than this nothing is known of him, not even his name. For the fact that a minister was settled here, under such an arrangement, in 1665, we are indebted to the following passages from the Province Records for that year. "Arthur Auger is plaintiffe as Attorney for the town of Scarborough in an action of the Case, Contra Christopher Collins defendt *for not payment of the Minister his stypend.*" Also, "Contra. Sarah Mills deft. *for not payment of the Minister his stipend.*" "In this case the Jury find for the Plaintiffe, and that the defendt shall proportionably pay the Minister his stipend *according to her estate, as the rest of her neighbors have made agreement with him,* and costs of Court." These persons were Quakers, and were therefore unwilling to contribute to the support of the established form of worship. The decision of the Court was in accordance with the intolerant law which required all the inhabitants of the various settlements within the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, to pay each his porportion towards the support of the clergy of a certain order, whether their consciences allowed them to do so or not.* Sarah Mills afterwards received twenty stripes for quakerism. By 1668 this minister had gone ; for in May of that year our inhabitants were ordered "to supply themselves with preaching." The town was again presented for the same neglect in 1669, and again in 1670 ;

* Acts and Laws of the Province of Massachusetts Bay. pp. 16. 34. and 141 (Ed. 1759.) By a later provision of 1742, members of the Church of England were exempted from this tax.

but in 1671 the inhabitants had provided for themselves in this respect, though the name of their minister is not given in the records.

In 1680 Capt. Scottow conveyed to Rev. Benjamin Blackman a tract of twenty-four acres near the Ferry Rocks, upon which that gentleman settled during the same year. Upon his fixing his residence here the townsmen instructed the Selectmen to engage him as their minister for one year, which they did. In 1682 he was chosen the town's deputy to the Court at York, thus serving the townsmen in two responsible offices at the same time. In July of that year "John Tinny, Andrew Brown, and Jona: Sampson were chosen to trete with Mr. Blackman, to make an agreement with him by settling him."* Mr. Blackman did not accept the invitation to settle. He was the son-in-law of Scottow, having married his daughter Rebecca in 1675. In 1683 he removed to Saco, where he became the proprietor of nearly one-fourth part of the whole township, owning every mill privilege on the eastern side of the river, together with the entire site of the present village. He removed to Boston in 1687. He was the son of Rev. Adam Blackman, a clergyman of some celebrity in England, and afterwards one of the principal settlers of Stratford, Conn. where he died in 1669. Benjamin graduated at Harvard College 1663, studied theology, and spent some years at Stratford; thence he removed to Malden where he preached until 1678.

In 1684 William Burrridge, as we have already noticed, was sent to inquire for a minister. Probably Mr. Burrridge's mission was unsuccessful, for in March 1685 it was agreed by the townsmen that "a minister should have fiftie pounds a yeare and a house to live in." And in July, after voting "that there should be a minister's house built upon the plaines," Capt. Scottow was instructed "to git a minister for the Towne as

* Town Records.

soon as may be possibly.”* The clergymen here in 1686, and undoubtedly the one obtained through Scottow’s influence, was the celebrated George Burroughs of witchcraft memory. He had been preaching a number of years at Falmouth, his ministry there having commenced about 1674. He was driven from Falmouth by the Indians in 1675, but returned in 1683. The following order of Court from the Province Records relates to this gentlemen—“30th March 1686. It is ordered by this Court yt the Re: Cor: do give notice to *Mr. Burrows, Minister of Bla: Poynt*, to preach before the next Generall Assembly at Yorke.”

Little more is known of the earlier life of this victim of a miserable fanaticism, than that he received a college education at Harvard, where he graduated in 1670. We cannot ascertain how long he remained in this town, but have reason to suppose that it was nearly or quite until the time of the town’s desertion. While a resident of Falmouth he showed himself to be capable of the most disinterested generosity,† and on no occasion there or here does he appear unworthy of his sacred office. The imputations against his character have passed away with the superstitious spirit that suggested them, leaving nothing in the course of his life unpleasant to dwell upon but its unhappy end. He was put to death at Salem, Aug. 19 1692 for the alleged crime of witchcraft. Burroughs was the last minister of the town during the period of its first settlement. Before proceeding to the account of ecclesiastical affairs after the second settlement, we will briefly notice the conveniences of the first settlers for the enjoyment of public worship.

The first church in town was built before 1671, how long before we can only conjecture. Its site may be determined

* Town Records.

† See Willis’ Portland p. 174.

from Jocelyn's incidental notice of it. He is describing a strange superstition the Indians had, regarding the appearance of a flame in the air, from which they predicted the speedy death of some one, dwelling in the direction in which it first appeared. After this description he says: "The first time that I did see it I was called out by some of them about 12 of the clock, it being a very dark night; I perceived it plainly mounting into the air *over our Church, which was built upon a plain little more than half a quarter of a mile from our dwelling-house.*" Jocelyn's house was near the Ferry Rocks, and this church must have been situated on the Plains about half a mile N. E. of the Ferry Rocks.*

In 1681 a serious controversy arose between the inhabitants respecting the "removal of the meeting-house," which continued to rage until 1685, when it was settled. The dispute became so important that the authorities of the General Court found it necessary to interfere, and refer the matter to two of the principal men in the Province for decision. The following extracts from the Court Records relate to this matter. "In answer to the reasons alleged by several of the Inhabitants of Black Point, about the removing of their meeting house, It is ordered and Capt. Fran. Hooke and Capt. Edw. Tyng are empowered as a committee to summons the Inhabitants of the Town, to understand the pleas of all parties therein concerned, with power of decision." The decision of this committee was this, "Wee judge ye ffortification set up by the Inhabitants of Scarborough in the plaines is both the safest and convenientest place for it." A few of the more obstinate, however, opposed

* The old graveyard connected with this Church was first ploughed up within the memory of some of our aged inhabitants. Several gravestones in the sands between the Plains and the Neck have given rise to considerable inquiry. They mark the resting-place of several negroes who died here during the last century, and of a few whites drowned in the neighboring waters.

this decision, and succeeded in delaying the work of removing the house some four years. But these were finally persuaded to yield by a different sort of argument, which the Court was wont to use in similar cases with equally good effect. "Sept. 29th 1685. The Court understanding that some persons in Scarborough are very averse to setting the meeting house in the place determined by the Committee, whereby said house is not done, and the town is hindered from procuring a minister, therefore ordered that whoever obstructs the placing the meeting house in the place fixed upon *be liable to a fine of 5 pounds.*" The place of worship was soon changed, and the ministry of Mr Burroughs commenced immediately afterwards.

The Rev. Hugh Campbell was the first minister of the town under the new organization of 1720. He had been preaching to the inhabitants some time when the first town-meeting was held in May of that year. At that meeting the inhabitants offered him a salary of £50. for the year ensuing, besides his "meat, drink, washing and lodging." Under this arrangement Mr. Campbell continued preaching here until the next year, when, a disagreement about his salary arising, he left the town. The church on the Plains having been destroyed in 1690, the meetings were at this time held in the house of Roger Dearing, as the most central and spacious. In June 1722 it was unanimously voted by the townsmen to engage the services of the Rev. Hugh Henry as their minister. The next year the engagement with Mr. Henry was renewed for six months, and an attempt made to settle him for a term of years after the expiration of the six months, but, as he would not remain for less than £70 a year, the people could not agree with him. Notwithstanding this he continued to preach here for about two years, and in June 1725 sued the town for his salary. But at a town meeting in September, it was declared that Mr. Henry was not to be considered the minister of Scarborough, and

notice of this was sent to the General Court, and to the neighboring ministers. He remained here during these two years without having made any special agreement with the townsmen for his support. It does not appear that he ever recovered against the town. Sullivan speaks of Henry as "an eccentric character." He was a Scotchman, as was also his predecessor in the town.

In Feb. 1726 it was voted that the meeting for divine worship should be held "one Sabbath day at the house of Col. Westbrook at Dunstan, and another Sabbath at the house of Saml. Libby on Black Point," and Messrs. Saml. Harmon and Aaron Jewett were appointed a committee "to go and seek a Minister for the Town direct." They were unsuccessful in their search, and the town was without a minister until the summer of 1728, when the Rev. Wm. Tompson began to preach here. In September of the same year Mr. Tompson accepted a call to settle here in the ministry, and was ordained to the charge of the newly formed society. The number of male members whose names were enrolled on the church record at the time of organization was fifteen; amongst whom we find the names of Dr. Nathaniel Winslow, Daniel Fogg, Paul Thompson, Daniel Sawyer, David Ring, John Harmon, Henry Boothby. This was the first regularly organized church within the town of which we have any record. The salary of Mr. Tompson was £100 the first year, £110 the second, £120 the third, and so to continue until the inability of the townsmen to pay more should prevent further addition. When Mr. Tompson began his labors here in 1728 he preached at the house of Mr. Arthur Bragdon who lived on the plains near the Black Point graveyard. In March following the town voted to build a meeting-house; its dimensions to be, 40 feet in length by 35 in width and 20 in height. In 1731 this was erected in the N. West corner of the present Black Point burial ground,

and soon afterwards another was built on what is now the Common at Dunstan. Mr. Tompson preached alternately in these two divisions of the town, until a second society was formed at Dunstan in 1744, by setting off fifteen males and as many females from the Black Point society.* Mr. Tompson continued his labors until his death in Feb. 1759. He was held in high esteem by our townsmen, and his loss was deeply felt and sincerely lamented by the whole community. The expenses of his funeral were defrayed by the "town as a town;" and it was moreover voted in town meeting "that exclusive of cotton grave-gloves &c. for the funeral of the deceased, and all necessaries, that the Town will give a suit of mourning to the Widow." The committee appointed to oversee the ceremonies returned an account of expenditures amounting to £22, of which there was allowed £3. 6s. 8d. "for the Rings for the Bearers." Such items illustrate the customs of the day. Feb. 21st 1759 the following entry was made in Father Smith's Diary—"I rode with my wife to Mr. Thompson's Funeral. There was a great concourse of people: as many from my parish as there were Horses and Sleighs."† The Rev. Mr. Hill supplied the pulpit for three months after Mr. Tompson's

* Under date Feb. 13, 1745, Parson Smith writes in his Journal—"Ministers' meeting relating to Mr. (George) Whitefield. Present, Messrs Tompson. Jefferds, Hovey, Mr. Morrill and myself: *had much of uneasiness.*" Again March 19th—"Mr. Whitefield has got to Dunstan"—21st.—Mr. W. preached A. M. at Biddeford, and returned to Scarboro and preached for Mr. Tompson."—26th—"I heard Mr. Whitefield A. M. at Mr. Allens and P. M. at Mr. Tompsons."

† The Rev. Wm. Tompson was the son of Rev. Edward Tompson, ordained at Marshfield in 1696. Edward was the son of Dea. Saml. Tompson of Braintree, who was the son of Rev. Wm. Tompson who emigrated to New England in 1637, and settled in the ministry at Braintree (Quincy) in 1639. The excellent Justice Tompson of this town was the son of our minister, as was also Rev. John Tompson of Berwick father of Saml. Tompson, Esq.

decease, and was succeeded by a Mr. Ward, who remained only a few months. After several unsuccessful attempts to obtain a minister, the society at last succeeded in settling the Rev. Thomas Pierce in 1762 by consenting to adopt Presbyterian forms of worship. Mr. Pierce, with a delegation from the parish, proceeded to Newbury where he was ordained by Presbyterians. His ministry continued until Jan. 26, 1775, the time of his death. He was born in Newbury, Oct. 11, 1737, and graduated at Harvard College, in 1759. After his death the people renounced Presbyterianism, and returned to their former condition. The Rev. Thomas Lancaster was ordained, and took charge of the parish in 1775, continuing in the pastorate *fifty-six* years.* In 1825 he was relieved from the greater part of the arduous duties of his office by the ordination of the Rev. Thomas Jameson as his colleague. Father Lancaster, as his children in spiritual things used to style him, died Jan. 12, 1831, having attained the venerable age of 87 years. His was not a brilliant, but an eminently useful career. For full fifty years he labored for the good of his beloved people, bringing them to the foot of the Cross rather by his daily life in their midst, than by the persuasion of eloquence—He was a member of the original Board of Trustees for Bowdoin College, and served in that capacity many years.

Tompson, Pierce and Lancaster lie side by side near the scene of their sacred labors, to which no doubt those faithful spirits recur with joy as they walk together in peace. Mr. Jameson's health failing him in 1840, he was dismissed at his own request, and the Rev. Daniel Sewall was installed as his successor August 26th of the same year. Mr. Sewall's ministry was continued for two years only, and he was then dismiss-

* On the Church Records is the following entry for 1781—"Voted to ye Rev. Mr. Thos. Lancaster *Five Thousand Four Hundred Pounds* in the present old paper currency to make good his salary of *Sixty Pounds*."

ed, preferring another field of labor. The pulpit was then supplied for several years by the Rev. Albert W. Fisk, a man ever diligent in the performance of the duties of his profession, and at the present time Pastor of the Church in Kittery. In 1848 (Sept. 20,) the Rev. William Tobey, a preacher of uncommon excellence, was installed in the ministerial office. His eloquence, when preaching the great truths of the Gospel, was of that persuasive nature that proved his own entire interest and belief in them, while it moved the minds and hearts of his hearers to solemn reflection and deep feeling. In the midst of a life of usefulness, at the age of 41, having been but one year the Pastor of this people, he died of a prevalent disease, Sept. 10, 1849.* Rev. James Brown Thornton, the present highly esteemed pastor of this Church was ordained as the successor of Mr. Tobey June 4th, 1851. The House upon Oak Hill was built in 1799, and was demolished a few years since when the present neat and comfortable edifice was erected.

Dunstan was incorporated as a Parish in 1758, and from that time the clergyman ceased to be supported by the town as such, each parish supporting its own. Previously to the division of the town into parishes the Rev. Richard Elvins had been settled over the church at Dunstan, and was its minister at the time of the separation. He was ordained in Nov. 1744, and continued in the ministry there until Aug. 12th, 1776, the time

*For these brief notices of Rev. Messrs. Sewall, Fisk and Tobey, and also for the subjoined table the writer is indebted to the Rev. J. B. Thornton Rev. Wm. Thompson, . . Ord. June 26th 1728 Died Feb. 13, 1759, Aet. 62.

" Thos. Pierce,	" Nov. 24, 1762,	" Jan. 26, 1775,	" 38.
" Thos. Lancaster,	" Nov. 8, 1775,	" Jan. 12, 1831,	" 87.
" Thos. Jameson,	" June 29, 1825,	Dism Aug. 26, 1840.	
" Danl. Sewall, Inst.	Aug. 26, 1840,	" Oct. 3, 1842.	
" Wm. Tobey,	" Sept. 20, 1848,	Died Sept. 10, 1849,	Aet. 41.
" J. B. Thornton,	Ord. June 4, 1851.		

of his death. He came to this town from Salem, Mass. where he had been a Baker, but having his attention turned to religious subjects by the powerful preaching of Whitefield, he began seriously to consider them, and finally became "a useful minister of the sacred Word."* A sermon on "The obedience of faith," published in 1747, is the only production of his that is to be found in print; "this however," says Greenleaf, "is enough to convince posterity of the soundness of his mind, and the correctness of his religious sentiments." His wife was the widow of the Rev. Saml. Willard of Biddeford, whose son Joseph, the distinguished President of Harvard College, was educated, and trained for his future greatness, under the paternal direction of Mr. Elvins. Eunice, the youngest step-daughter of Mr. Elvins, was married to the Rev. Benjamin Chadwick his successor in the second Parish.† Mr. Chadwick

* Greenleaf's Eccl. Sketches.

† The following original verses, by Richard King, Esq., were found amongst the few relics of his literary diversions. Mr. King and the worthy parson were tried friends, and the former seems to have extended his interest in the latter even to the subject of these lines. We give them just as he left them.

"Parson Elvin's Old Mare.

I twenty years the faithful steed,
On which the Gospel Circuit rid
Three Hundred Miles from Peor to Salem,
Yet ne'er complained like Ass of Baalam

This annual Circuit too beside
I went and came, like constant Tide,
Where e'er the call to pray or chide,
Or Gossips, did his time divide;

Till nature failed my lord and me,
He could not ride, I could not see.
His people gathered at his Tent,
He had no use for me now spent,

was ordained Dec. 19, 1776, and labored with the people about eighteen years. In May, 1795 his mind became impaired by disease, thus preventing his continuance in the ministry. After his dismissal he occasionally preached to the people of his Parish as his health allowed. This worthy servant of Christ died in November 1819.

For five years after the dismissal of Mr. Chadwick the Second Parish was without a settled minister. December 10th, 1800 the Rev. Nathan Tilton was called to the charge of it, in which he continued until 1827. He remained a resident of the town until his death Oct. 4th, 1851. He was born in East Kingston, N. H. July 2, 1772, and graduated at Harvard 1796. The following is from an obituary notice of him written by one who well appreciated his many good qualities. "His natural character presented a marked combination of amiability and firmness; his clear and vigorous intellect was united with a rare modesty that often hid the charms which it enhanced. His pulpit efforts were highly appreciated wherever listened to, and he declined several urgent solicitations to a more enlarged sphere of usefulness, from a native diffidence and distrust of his own abilities, greatly increased by an early deafness.—Long will all who loved him, thank God for the grace that so pleasantly crowned a life of virtue with a death of piety and peace." In Sept. 1829, the Rev. Moses Sawyer was installed as the successor of Mr. Tilton, but after eighteen months service took

For shoeing me in former Day,
The Smith my body had in pay.
Who destitute of grass or hay,
Left me to perish in the way.

Thus thrown aside my skin was made
A scourge for every lazy Jade.
I do not mean *the Cloth* to sully
Although I died in Janup's Gully."*

* Jane's Gully, Blue Point.

up his connection with the Parish. Since that time this Parish has been without congregational preaching, and the large meeting-house, which was erected in 1800, has lately been torn down as serving no purpose but that of a silent reprover.

The first Methodist meeting held in town was at the house of Mr. Saml. Harmon in January, 1802. On that occasion the Rev. Mr. Taylor preached to a small, but deeply interested audience. The next year Mr. Timothy Waterhouse and others petitioned the General Court for the incorporation of a Methodist Society, to be collected out of Scarborough, Buxton and Saco. Their first house of worship was at that time erected in Dunstan, and the Rev. Asa Heath was appointed their minister. Mr. Heath's congregation consisted of about two hundred persons, of whom forty were communicants. In 1839 this Society built its present neat House.

In 1816 the religious movement under Jacob Cochran commenced in this town, and some of those concerned in it remain at the present time amongst his followers.

CHAPTER XI.

CIVIL AFFAIRS. WAR OF 1744, &c.

In 1719 the number of settlers had so increased that it was thought expedient to organize a town government. In March, 1720 the Proprietors of the town met together for the purpose of restoring the form of town government under which the previous settlers had lived. The Records, which had been carried to Boston for safety during the Indian troubles of 1690, were this year delivered to the town's agent who had been sent to Portsmouth to receive them. They were brought under seal from Boston to Portsmouth by Wm. Cotton who delivered them to the town authorities. On the record of this first meeting

are the names of the thirty-nine proprietors who were present, of whom a large proportion were from N. Hampshire. These proprietors were, Lieut. Gov. John Wentworth, Saml. Penhallow, Esq., Geo. Elliot Vaughan, Wm. Cotton, Elisha Plaisted, Esq., Thos. Cotton, Thomas Larrabee, John Milliken, Hezekiah Phillips, Danl. Fegg, John Libby, Wm. Libby, Matthew Libby, Saml. Libby, John Fogg, Job Burnham, John Libby, 2d, James Libby, Joseph Berry, Thos. Seavey, Eben. Seavey, Wm. Newbury, John Milliken, Jr., James Libby, 2d, John Larrabee, Roger Dearing, and several others.

Roger Dearing, John Milliken and Job Burnham were chosen the first Selectmen, Saml. Libby, Town Clerk, and Wm. Libby Constable. As an inducement to settlers it was voted at this meeting to give six acres "on the Hill behind Mr Penhallow's farm northerly" to every man who would settle thereon "to the approbation of the Selectmen," the number not to exceed twenty. It was also voted to hold the town meeting, and meetings for Divine worship, for the present in the house of Mr. John Fogg. From a vote of the town passed May 26th, of the same year, it appears how completely thirty years of desolation had obliterated the marks of the former flourishing settlement. The vote was "that John Boden and Henry Libby should go and show the old highway to the Selectmen." Boden and Libby were born at Black Point, had resided there before the desertion of the town, and were therefore well acquainted with the old land marks. A return of their proceedings is soon afterwards entered on the records; but, at this day, it is as difficult to determine, with these descriptions before us, where the old roads were as it was for the new settlers to find them without such help. For an example the following returns of April 24, 1721 will suffice—"a highway laid out from Black Point Ferry, and runs 4 poles wide, *as the way heretofore hath run and doth now run over Black Point*

Plains, and as the way is now to go to Jemeco, and as the old way went over Nonsuch River, crossing the river at the place where the bridge was, and as the old way went up to the end of Burridges' land and then goes to the Province Road." And another begins at "*Boden's Pint, where the old way begun, and keeps the old way that is now from Spurwink marked anew till it comes to that way that comes to Jemeco.*" These data would assist us materially in discovering the locality of these roads if we only knew where "the old way" and "Jemeco" were located. In 1746 the roads which now run back of Oak Hill and Beach Ridge were "lengthened out as far as the head of the Town."^{*}

For many years the lumbering business engaged the whole attention of most of the townsmen. The valley of the Nonsuch furnished much excellent timber, and the northern parts of the town were almost entirely uncleared. Saw mills were erected one after another in rapid succession, until one might number here ten or twelve of these "engines," as Hubbard quaintly expresses it, "so useful for the destruction of wood and timber," busily at work enriching their owners. These were mostly on the Nonsuch, where now the wood and water necessary for them are wanting. The first mill built in town was a "corn mill," which John Jocelyn says was in successful operation at Black Point while he was there in 1663. This probably was the property of Henry Jocelyn, and erected at his expense. The second was built at Dunstan by the Rev. Benj. Blackman in 1680, on the upper falls known in the last century as "Blackman's;" and the third was Aaron Jewett's on the "Alger Falls" close to the residence of Horatio Southgate, Esq

Lumber seems to have been the current medium of the day. Of all the various uses to which it is now put, there is none so

^{*}Town Records.

singular as that, to which as will soon appear, it was then often devoted—of *paying the schoolmasters*. The first movement towards the establishment of town schools here was in March 1729, when a committee of three was appointed “to see that there be a school carried on in town this year.”* In March, 1730, it was voted by the townsmen “that there be a Schoolmaster hired in town this year that can read and write well,” and also “that the school be kept the first quarter of a year at Dunstan, the second at Black Point, the third at Dunstan and the fourth at Black Point.”* From the latter extract it is evident that these two settlements were at that time nearly equal. In 1737 it was voted “that Mr. Robert Bailey be schoolmaster this year in this town; that it be kept *all the year on Black Point side*, and that Mr. Bailey be paid 75 pounds *in lumber* for his services.”* Mr. Bailey is the earliest school teacher in town of whom we have any account whatever. It was no doubt the custom of our early inhabitants, as it was of those of other towns in the Province, to look to the minister for the occasional instruction of their children. Four years later the same commodity was made use of in paying the schoolmaster, when Mr. Samuel Fogg was allowed “32 pounds in lumber for keeping school 6 months in Black Point Meeting House.”* Later in the history of the town, a strong effort was made by some of the principal townsmen to establish a grammar school here, such as the early Province laws provided for; but the attempt was frustrated by those who regarded only the first expense of such an undertaking.† From these items, and

* Town Records.

† The law referred to is that of May 1647, which is worth copying for its preamble. “It being one chief project of Satan to keep men from the knowledge of the Scriptures, as in former times keeping them in unknown tongues, so in these latter times by persuading from the use of tongues, that so at least the true sense and meaning of the original might be clouded and

others of a like character we may learn the comparative progress of the two principal settlements in the town. Throughout the latter half of the seventeenth century Black Point was the centre of influence and prosperity, in fact *the town*, while Dunstan, including the settlement at Blue Point, was the *country*. From 1729 to 1760 they were nearly equal in all respects, though it was not until 1755 that "one half of the Town's ammunition" was ordered to be "removed to the Dunstan side." But from 1760 to the present time the "village" has been at Dunstan.* In 1762 this flourishing settlement was visited with the most destructive fire which has occurred in its whole history. It took place in July during a very dry summer, and consumed six houses, two saw-mills, and several barns with their contents.†

The treaty with the Indians in 1725 secured to our inhabitants the longest season of peace with which they had been favored since the first war. The settlements in Maine had become very thrifty, and were rapidly increasing in prosperity under the kindly influences of this long peace, when the declaration of another war between England and France disturbed their pleasant condition. The Indians of Maine were

corrupted with false glosses of deceivers—to the end that learning may not be buried in the graves of our forefathers, in church and commonwealth the Lord assisting our endeavors: it is therefore ordered, that when any town shall increase to the number of 100 families or householders, they shall set up a grammar school, the master thereof being able to instruct youth so far as they may be fitted for the University." The penalty for neglect of this law was at first £5, but was afterwards increased to £20.

Anc. Charters & Col Laws p 186.

* In a plan of Dunstan, drawn by Phineas Jones, Surveyor, about 1728, there are marked 13 buildings at Dunstan *Landing*, 7 at the corner, 2 saw mills on Foxwell's Brook, one house a few rods N. W. of Blue Point bridge, and a bridge at the Landing.

† Smith's Journal.

still subject to French influence, ready as of old to declare their willingness and intention to remain neutral during the war, and equally ready to take part against the English settlers. In August, 1745 the Government was forced to declare war against the Indians, who once more commenced a series of petty depredations, more vexatious, if not more destructive to the settlers, than open battle with the Savages. In the course of the two following years the Indians were frequently in the neighborhood of Scarborough, killing the unprotected settlers, and destroying property, but carefully avoiding any contest with the scouts of soldiers, who, excited by the double desire of revenge and gain, eagerly pursued them from one settlement to another.*

In the Spring of 1747 the first appearance of the Indians was in Scarborough on the 14th of April. A number of them had secreted themselves in the woods near Scottow's Hill, and had been occupied during the day in making such arrangements as would enable them to surprise the garrison of David Libby on the Hill, which they intended to have done that night. Nathaniel Dresser, a young man residing in the garrison, going out to work on the west side of the Hill, got nearly into their midst before he discovered them. The Indians, not wishing to be seen, had allowed him to come very near the place where they were hidden without attempting to kill him; but as soon as Dresser perceived them he started towards the garrison, with three of the savages in pursuit of him, and run for his life. Some of his leaps were afterwards measured and found to be *twelve feet*. The Indians finding that Dresser would outrun them and so escape, all fired upon him just as he came

* The Gov. had proclaimed a bounty of £400 O. T; (about 165 dolls. in specie) for every Indian scalp procured by the soldiers. But the crafty Savages took such good care of their heads, that none of the soldiers got rich by scalping them.

up within a few feet of the garrison. One of the bullets missed him, a second cut all the fingers off his right hand, and the other passing directly through his neck lodged in the knot of his cravat. He fell upon his face and died without a struggle. One of the Indians came up and hastily cut off his scalp; as he turned to go, however, Capt. Daniel Harvey, the only man left in the garrison at the time, fired upon him and shattered his right arm. Having thus shown themselves, the Indians made no attempt upon the garrison, but went off towards Falmouth.*

The following letter found amongst the Pepperell MSS. gives an interesting account of the Indian movements in this neighborhood at that time.

"FALMO April 16th 1747.

HONOD SIR—

I am now to inform you that ye barbarous and cruel sons of violence, on ye 14th inst. killed and scalped Na· Dresser, a young man, within thirty yards of David Libby's house on Scottow's hill in Scarborough. Ye next morning they took a young man and his bror about 1-4 miles below Sacarappy in the road to Stroudwater and carried them off. A scout of what few soldiers were here, with some of our Inhabitants immediately followed, came athwart of Three Camps, and about 1-2 a mile above Gorham Town Garrison, where they found some beef and the skins of two cows. The woods seem full of Tracks, and (we) believe there is great numbers round us. That night (after) they killed Dresser, they fired two guns by wch we supposed they killed a steer about a mile and a half above us. We are in poor circumstances, having but about 15 or 20 soldiers (to se)out from Capt. Bean's to N. Yarmouth. Jordan's men, part are down to Topsham, by order, part stationed at N. Yarmouth; (so) that the people cannot pretend without the utmost hazard, to plant or sow, or carry on any other business, especially on ye most out and exposed parts. And unless immediate succor or assistance, I cannot perceive how Gorham Town, Marblehead* and Sacarappy can subsist—for they do not care to visit them or carry them necessaries of life unless they have more men. They found in ye above mentioned Camps eighteen spitts or sticks to roast their beef on, wch shows there were in that scout at least 18 Indians. Pray remember us in our distressed circumstances With dutiful regard I conclude, Honod Sir,

Your Dutiful Kinsman and

very humble Servant

HON. WM. PEPPERELL, Baronet—

CHAS. FROST."

* New Marblehead, now Windham. (w.)

The great event of this war, and the one in which our townsmen, in common with the inhabitants of N. England generally, were most ardently engaged, was the capture of Louisburg, the stronghold of the French power in North America. This occurred June 17, 1745, and the news of the glorious victory quickly spread through the land, causing everywhere more joy than the booming of cannon, the crackling of bonfires, and the ringing of huzzas could be made to express. One hundred and sixty of our townsmen were enlisted in Col. Waldo's Regiment some time before the attack upon Louisburg, but it does not appear how many of these continued in the service through that event, or who of them were present and assisted in the capture.* Richard King, who afterwards became one of the most honored inhabitants of the town, held at that time the office of Commissary, and was employed by Gov. Shirley until the end of the war. In 1746 a correspondence passed between Gov. Shirley and Mr. King relating to the settlement of Louisburg by English families. The following is the Governor's letter in reply to Mr. King's inquiries.

"MR. KING—

I have received your Letter desiring to know what Encouragement there is for families to go to Louisbourg. All that I can say in answer to that is, yt it will be a good place for a family to settle in, and provide for themselves and their children, if the family is industrious: and if the Husbands or sons who come within the Description of the inclosed printed Letter, will enlist into my Regiment, I will particularly recommend their families to the favour of the Governor at Louisbourg. Whatever service you can do me in providing men for my Regiment, shall be very acceptable to me; and I shall be glad of an Opportunity of shewing you yt is so by some favour in my power.

I am Your Friend and Servant

Boston March 29th 1746.

W. SHIRLEY.

Pray let me hear farther from you."

* Excepting Saml. Milliken, Roger Hunniwell, and Seth Fogg. Milliken was lost on the return thence, and Hunniwell had one arm shot off in the engagement.

Joseph Prout of this town also acted as Commissary here during the war, supplying the soldiers of this and the neighboring towns with the necessary provisions and clothing. The names of some of the soldiers enlisted in this war from Scarborough are preserved in the following lists.

" FALMOUTH June 29th 1747.

Mr. Commissary Proute,

Sir—I desire you to deliver Provision to these men there Listed in Scarborough; for which I have sent a list of their names by Lieut. Libby, and you will oblidg

Yours to serve

GEORGE BERRY."

"Capt. George Berry's Company—

Daniel Moody	Noah Libbee	James Libbee
Josiah Hunniwell	Saml. Larrabee	David Sawyer
John Libby	Richard Honewell	Lt. Danl. Field
Thomas Foss	Jethro Starbird	Walter Foss
Robert Munson	Richd Carter	Timo: Haines
Axel Roberts	Theod Moses	Daniel Mudy
Lt. John Libbee	Robert Munson "	

" And in Capt Thomas Perkins Company—

Isaac MacKene, James Libbee, Thomas Larrabee, Ephraim Andrews, Saml. Figuit (Fickett,) Elijah Bragdon, John Myrick."*

The former sad experience of our townsmen in Indian warfare served to put them on their guard for the future, so that the Indians were at this time able to effect very little compared with their murderous work of earlier years. They now found strong garrisons where before were unprotected houses, and their only resort was to waylay travelers, and those whose daily work led them beyond the ready refuge of the garrison. During the war of 1744 there were between fifteen and twenty garrisons occupied by our inhabitants. These were of various forms and sizes, but all adapted to the safe keeping of their inmates. Some were simply block-houses, built of squared logs, one and a half story high, about 20 feet square, and

* Prout family MSS. See also App. F.

having a row of port-holes on each side, very small and narrow without, but widened within so as to range about ninety degrees of the horizon. Of these the last was removed about thirty-five years ago. Others which were occupied in times of danger by a number of families were more extensive, and more thoroughly finished. Such an one was "Vaughan's Garrison," part of which remains to the present day in the house of Seth Storer, Esq. An old lady, who at the time of her death had nearly completed a hundred years,* and who attended school several years of her childhood in Vaughan's Garrison, has left a general description of its structure, which will give us an idea of its great strength and security. There were four flankers built of hewn timber, about sixteen feet square; and when the walls had been carried up ten feet, there was a floor laid, and the walls projected horizontally a foot or more, so as to give an opportunity to fire at any one who should attempt to scale the wall. These four flankers were connected with each other by a wall of timber about fifty feet on a side; and the garrison of course stood within the enclosure. To make "assurance doubly sure," the house thus protected by the wall of solid timber, was planked up with oak four inches in thickness, and these plank remain in the house now. *Eleven* families resided together in this garrison for *seven years* in perfect harmony, for "the war without made peace within." This house, and that occupied by Saml. Tompson, Esq., are the only garrisons now left standing. This mode of life, in the midst of constant dangers, in some instances afforded the women an opportunity of displaying with good effect their presence of mind and courage. Numerous examples of such exhibitions, as honorable to the sex as they are remarkable, occur in the history of the Indian Wars. We have room for but one relating to one of our own townswomen. Mrs. Saml. Plaisted of Winnock's

* Mrs. Anthony Libby.

Neck routed a force of some twenty savages with no other assistance than that of a child four years old. The Indians had entirely surrounded the house, and were on the point of entering before Mrs. P. discovered them. No sooner was she conscious of her danger than it occurred to her to employ a novel means of defence. She immediately began calling over several names in quick succession, being careful to use the names of persons whom the Indians feared as they did the Evil Spirit, and to shout loud enough to be distinctly heard by those about the house. She gave out orders for the defence, now directing this one, and now another, and at the same time driving an iron ramrod into an empty gun barrel with all the rattling possible ; while the little child, her only companion, obeyed orders perfectly by upsetting the chairs and everything else it could move. This was the work of a moment ; but it was a decisive moment with the Indians ; for hearing all this confusion, and not doubting in the least but that all the dreaded persons named by Mrs. P. were rushing out upon them, they were soon out of sight and hearing in the thick woods. Such were the mothers of the heroes of the last quarter of the eighteenth century.

In October 1748 a treaty of peace was concluded between England and France, and the next year a treaty with the Indians was ratified at Falmouth. Another war broke out in 1754, but this town was not visited by the enemy during it. New settlements had now sprung up along the frontier, which served as a protection to those on the coast by drawing off the attention of the enemy. The Indians would not attempt the fortified settlements, while there were those back from the coast when they could more easily effect their bloody purposes. After the peace of 1749 this town suffered little from the Indians. Few towns in N. England suffered so much in proportion to their population as Scarborough, during the first and second

Indian wars. Of the deaths by savage hands in town about one hundred are recorded, many others must have occurred of which there is no memorial. The settlement at Black Point being the largest suffered most, having furnished nine-tenths of the victims.

In 1758 Louisburg was again taken, and in the following year occurred the conquest of Quebec. These victories were the death-blow to French power in America and upon surrender of Montreal the whole of Canada was ceded to the English.*

* By resolve of the General Court the "French Neutrals" were distributed among the several Towns, the number for each being determined "agreeable to ye Province Tax and their circumstances." The following document gives an account of this distribution, and also shows the relative rank of the several Towns of the Province in 1760. It is a letter from Hon. John Hill the chairman of the committee on the apportionment of Neutrals.

"BERWICK July 18 1760.

HONORABLE SIR,

After due respect this comes to inform you that the French Neutrals that were sent to the County of York from the County of Middlesex, with those that were there before, have been apportioned to and among the several towns by the Committee appointed for the purpose as followeth—

		order
<i>York</i> —Francis Dousset, Wife and Nine Children,	(11.)	1.
<i>Kittery</i> —John King & Wife & Eight Children,	(10.)	2.
<i>Berwick</i> —Peter White " " Five "	(7.)	3.
<i>Arundel</i> —Joseph Deneore & Wife & one Child,	(3.)	6.
<i>Wells</i> —John Mitchell " " " Four Children,	(6.)	4.
<i>Biddeford</i> —Claude Boudrix " " One Child,	(3.)	6.
<i>Scarboro</i> —Joseph, John, Mary & Margaret		
Children of Claude Boudrix,	(4.)	5.
<i>Falmouth</i> —Paul Lablane, Wife & Nine Children,	(11.)	1.
<i>North Yarmouth</i>	(2.)	7.
<i>Georgetown</i>	(2)	7.
<i>Brunswick</i>	(2.)	7.

Total 61

(Orig. MSS. copied by J. W. Thornton, Esq.

The reception of this good news filled all New England with illuminations and thanksgivings; expressions of joy and gratitude in which our townsmen joined with all their hearts.

CHAPTER XII.

STATISTICS. SETTLEMENT OF MACHIAS. KING RIOT.

After the peace of 1749 the inhabitants generally returned to their wonted occupations, and were soon established again in the enjoyment of that undisturbed prosperity with which they had been favored during the long season of peace preceding the war. In 1761 a return was made of the polls and estates of this town, which shows a decided advance upon its former prosperous condition. The following are the most interesting items of this census: "310 taxable polls, 190 Houses, 17 Mills, 9 *slaves*, 297 Tons of shipping, 199 Horses, 448 oxen 633 Cows, 1067 Sheep, 257 Swine, 6613 Bushels of grain, 907 Tons of English Hay, 426 Tons meadow hay, 1467 Tons Salt Hay. The following year, 1762 the crops were almost wholly cut off by a remarkable drought. It was this circumstance which led to the settlement of Machias by several of our inhabitants. The particulars of this important movement are these: "In consequence of the drought which prevailed in the eastern part of Maine during the years 1761 and '62, the people living in the seaboard towns in that vicinity were accustomed to procure Hay for their cattle from the salt marshes on the rivers east of the Penobscot. In these visits, some of the inhabitants of Scarborough (particularly in 1672) went as far east as the Machias. On the western branch of this river, they not only found an abundance of the grass of which they were in search, but a fine water-power at the head of tide-water navigation, surrounded by unbroken forests of timber.

Upon their return from one of these visits in 1762, Isaiah Foster, Isaac Larrabee, of Scarborough, and others whose names are not now known, during the following winter, formed an association for the purpose of removing to Machias, there to build mills and engage in the business of lumbering. This association consisted of the following named persons :

Samuel Scott, Sylvanus Scott, (Brothers ;) Timothy Libby, David Libby, George Libby, (Brothers ;) Solomon Stone, John Stone, (Brothers ;) Daniel Hill, Japhet Hill, (Brothers ;) Isaiah Foster, Westbrook Berry, Isaac Larrabee, Daniel Fogg, all of Scarborough ; Thomas Buck of Plymouth, captain of a coaster, Jonathan Carlton of Sheepscoot, and Wm. Jones of Portsmouth, N. H ; making sixteen in all. Jones was a merchant, who was not expected to go, and did not go to Machias, but furnished supplies for the association. For this, he was to be entitled to an equal share in the mill proposed to be built, and all other privileges. In May 1763, they all (with the exception of Jones) embarked on board of a small vessel commanded by Buck, and arrived at Machias about the 20th of that month. Joel Bonney, Millwright, and Wooden Foster, Blacksmith, both of Scarborough, went with them, being engaged by the association as the principal mechanics to work on the mill, Larrabee and Berry took their wives and three children each with them at this time.

Upon their arrival they built a large double Log House within eight or ten rods of the falls where the mill was to be erected. Water Street now passes directly over the site of this house. This Mill was completed with all the despatch practicable, and finished in good season before the winter commenced. In August of this year the wives and families of nine others of the association were brought to Machias by Capt. Joseph Wallis, who was engaged by one of the Libbys. Wallis took with him a small supply of provisions, and received lumber

therefor the following season, 1764; during which year it is stated that over 1.500.000 ft. of boards were manufactured. The mill was built on the northern shore of the falls.

A part of the peninsula of land lying between the marsh of Middle River and the main river, was divided into 18 seven-acre lots, one of which was given to Bonney, one to Wooden Foster, and the others were owned and occupied in severally by the planters in the original association. These lots were seven rods wide, and contained seven acres each; the fronts of them now comprise the principal village of Machias, lying on the north side of the river.

In 1765 the following persons removed to Machias: Morris O'Brien, and his two sons then of age, Gideon and Jeremiah, and four minor children; Daniel Elliot, Joseph Holmes, Joseph Libby, Ebenezer Libby, Benj. Foster (brother of Wooden Foster) Joseph Sevey, Joseph Munson, — Balch, Ezekiel Foster, Joseph Getchell, Benj. Foss; all, or nearly all, of Scarborough, and John Underwood of Kittery. In 1769 the settlement had largely increased. Mills also had been erected on the east branch of the Machias, where the present village of East Machias now is, and farm lots taken up at Machias Port, East Machias, Middle river, and at other points within the limits of a tract of land eight miles by ten, for a grant of which a petition was presented this year to the Provincial Legislature of Massachusetts. The following names are upon the petition —and to these persons the township of Machias was granted in 1770.* Stephen Jones, 1766, from Connecticut, Jonathan Longfellow, 1766, Nova Scotia, originally from N. Hampshire, Isaiah Foster, 1763, Scarborough, Jeremiah Jenks, William Curtis, James Dillaway, Nova Scotia, George Scott, Scarborough, Samuel Scott, 1763, do. Joseph Sevey, 1765, Scarbo-

* The date of their settlement, and the place from which they came, where ascertained, are appended to the settlers' names.

rough, Wooden Foster, 1763, do. Arthur Dillaway, Nova Scotia, Aaron Hanscom, Scarb. Benj. Stone, Scarb. Jones Dyer, Scarb. John Crocker, Samuel Libby, Scarb. George Sevey, Scarb. Benjamin Foster Jr., Scarb. Obadiah Hill, Scarb. Jacob Libby, Scarb. Isaac Larrabee, 1763, Scarb. John Underwood, 1765, Kittery, Silvanus Scott, 1763, Scarb. John Wheland, Amos Boynton, Ebenezer Libby, 1765, Scarb. Joseph Libby, 1765, Scarb. Joseph Dubisont, Nathan Longfellow,† Timothy Libby, 1763, Scarb. Enoch Sanborn, Scarb. Job Burnam, Scarb. David Libby, 1763, Scarb. Gideon O'Brien, 1763, Scarb. Jeremiah O'Brien, 1765, Scarb. Samuel Burnam, Scarb. Samuel Kenney, Ezekiel Foster, 1765, Scarb. Ephraim Andrews, Scarb. Joseph Getchell, 1765, Scarb. Joseph Holmes, 1765, Scarb. Ezekiel Foster, Jr. Scarb. Samuel Rich, Benj. Foster, 1765, Scarb. Joseph Munson, 1765, Scarb. Henry Griffith, Josiah Libby, Scarb. Archelaus Hammond, Samuel Holmes, Scarb. Samuel Hill, Scarb. Jonathan Carlton, 1763, Scarb. Japhet Hill, 1763, Scarb. Stephen Parker, Westbrook Berry, 1763, Scarb. Bartholomew Bryant, Scarb. Jonathan Berry, 1763, Scarb. Jonathan Woodruff, Solomon Meserve, Daniel Stone, Scarb. John Berry, Scarb. Abial Sprague, Abial Sprague Jr. Reuben Libby, Scarb. Jacob Foster, Scarb. John W. Foster, Scarb. Sarah Libby (Widow,) Scarb. Solomon Stone, Scarb. Daniel Hill, 1763, Scarb. George Libby, 1763, Scarb. Thomas Libby, Scarb. Reuben Crocker, Nova Scotia. Eben Fittz, (blacksmith,) Scarb. John Scott, Scarb. Benjamin Holmes, Scarb. Benj. Getchell, Scarb. John C. Jones, Boston, John Bohannow, Samuel Stewart, Ichabod Jones, Boston, Morris O'Brien, 1763, Scarb."* Of these eighty signers it appears

* For this interesting sketch of the settlement of Machias, I am indebted to Peter Thacher, Esq., of that town. It was prepared, at his request, by Wm. B. Smith, Esq., Collector of Machias, and kindly forwarded for these pages.

† Newbury, Mass. (W.)

that no less than *fifty-four* were from Scarborough. "In regard to the cause of the original settlement of Machias a statement has got abroad and has obtained more or less currency, which is entirely unfounded. It has been said that Machias was settled by certain persons, who fled thither from Scarborough, to escape the punishment which was likely to overtake them for participating in the *King* riot. But this took place, as I am informed, as late as 1774.*. But however that may be, it is evident that it had no connection with the settlement of Machias; though it is not improbable that some of the culprits may have fled to this place to conceal themselves for a time among their former fellow townsmen."†

Mr. George Libby, one of the emigrants from this town, and a member of the association of sixteen, "did not remain a long time in Machias; for he is described as of Scarborough, in a conveyance bearing date June 8, 1774, from him to certain persons styled "a Committee appointed by the Proprietor and other Inhabitants of Machias," of a part of the seven acre lot, assigned to him as one of the original *sixteen*, "for to set a meeting house on and other public uses." On a part of this lot "sleep the rude forefathers of the hamlet." It has also been the site successively of two churches. In 1850 the old meeting house still standing on this lot, though not occupied for some years as a place of worship, was taken down by the town, which erected upon the same spot a large and handsome edifice, containing convenient and spacious rooms for two High Schools, and a commodious town hall. To this building, the town voted should be given the name of Libby Hall, in honor of George Libby, and in remembrance of his generous gift of the land to the people of Machias."‡

* The one referred to occurred March 19th, 1766.

† P. Thacher Esq's Letter.

‡ Ibid.

The period between the peace of 1749 and the opening of the Revolution was marked by only two events calculated to disturb the general order and quiet of the town. One of these was an act of domestic violence to which is attached a melancholy interest, both for its sad results, and for its being the first of the very few cases of murder recorded in the towns history. On the 15th. of February, 1749, William Dearing. of Blue Point in a fit of sudden passion, cruelly murdered his wife by striking her with an axe. No provocation had been offered on the part of Mrs. Dearing, who was an amiable woman, and a worthy member of the Black Point Church. Of all those who loved her none appear to have regretted her death so much as her murderer. He was apprehended the next day and lodged in jail, whence he escaped to Richmond's Island where he staid three weeks, being secretly fed and otherwise provided for by his friends in this town, until he took passage for Halifax. The remembrance of his crime drove him mad, and having been placed in confinement, he soon ended his life by dashing his head against a spike in the wall of his cell. Mrs. Dearing was the daughter of Charles and Grace Pine who were living here at the time of her death.* Mr. Dearing was the son of Roger Dearing, one of the worthiest of the townsmen of the second settlement.

The other event alluded to was one in which a greater number of the townsmen were concerned, hardly less disgraceful. At the time of which we write, Richard King was by far the wealthiest inhabitant of the town, and one of the most enterprising merchants in this vicinity. The inhabitants depended chiefly upon him for their supplies of foreign goods; and as many of them were poor, and unable to pay for these at

* When urged to take measures to bring his son-in-law to justice, Pine mildly refused, answering with much simplicity: "It will not bring Mary back again, and will break up the family of children."

once, a large number became more or less indebted to him, amongst which were of course some dishonest persons. Mr. King was easy almost to a fault with his debtors ; so that the accounts of some were by their own desire left undischarged for many years. A few dishonorable persons, thus indebted to Mr. King in considerable sums, who would not pay him unless compelled by law, contrived a plan to destroy the evidences of their indebtedness. To effect this plan, they disguised themselves as Indians, and on the night of March 19th, 1766, broke into Mr. King's storehouse and set about their work of destruction. From the store they went to his dwelling house, and there continued their search amongst his private papers, till having collected such as they wished to destroy, they heaped them together and burned them. Besides their own accounts they wantonly destroyed many papers and books, of great value to Mr. King, which would have been no hindrance to their dishonest purpose. They also cut up and burned a large amount of other property in the store and the dwelling house. Mr. King himself barely escaped with his life from these drunken vandals. It is said of him, that when the rioters, furious from the effects of their draughts of whiskey, came near the house, he fled into a little room in the attic and there concealed himself under the bed of a faithful old slave, who was lying sick upon it. As the gang went into the house the leader struck with his axe at *his own shadow* faintly traced on the inside door, supposing it to be no less a personage than Mr. King. The scar remains on the door to this day.* After securing what papers they wanted they searched the house for Mr. King, and coming to the room where he was concealed they opened the door, but seeing nothing there but a helpless negress, did not go in. Soon after this event, a letter was

* The house is that now occupied by Capt. Samuel Harford. It remains nearly as it was in Mr. King's day.

posted upon Mr. King's gate, threatening to burn his houses and barns, *and to cut him in pieces and burn him to ashes*, in case he should prosecute any person suspected of taking part in it. And immediately afterwards a barn, with all its contents, belonging to Mr. King, was burned to the ground by these same scoundrels. For a short time they went armed with clubs and muskets, and repeatedly threatened the life of the Sheriff who attempted to arrest them. By the well directed efforts of Mr. King's numerous friends, however, amongst whom Col. Samuel Waldo, Theophilus Bradbury, Stephen Longfellow and Enoch Freeman of Falmouth were most active, the perpetrators of this bare-faced outrage were brought to justice. Some of them escaped, through Mr. King's lenity, with paying a certain proportion of his loss, others went to prison. A few of the inhabitants who had previously been respectable men, were discovered to have been concerned in this affair as instigators and abettors, though not present in the mob. One such, Deacon Andrews of the Second Chh., many years afterward when he had grown infirm, and was relieved from the discharge of the active duties of his office by the appointment of an additional junior officer, was styled "*Arch-Deacon Andrews*" with reference to this riot. And it was to such that the following pointed verses were directed by Mr. King himself, whose composition they are;—

“ When Asaph's sons selected stand
To praise the Lord in vocal band,
With Hearts and Hands from violence free,
Nor stained with wilful perjury,
Descend, O Lord, to hear their song,
And with them bless the general Throng.

If, mixt with these, vile sons there are,
Who burn, and steal, and falsely swear,
Or made their gains by such foul deeds,
Select them, Lord, as vicious weeds.

Shall false confession save the soul
 Who still retains what he has stole ;
 Or having done his neighbor wrong,
 Will God be pleased with his song ?
Not half so strange was Nadab's fire
Nor Ananias so great a Liar."

The violent excitement against the Stamp Act had not subsided at the time of this mob, but in the May following the news of its repeal quieted for a time the spirit of revolt. During the few months of this Act's existence, the stamp officers, and those suspected of using stamps, frequently suffered from the violence of mobs similar to that which attacked Mr. King. But he was in no manner connected with the offensive stamps. There is not the slightest evidence that he ever used, or was suspected of using the stamped paper. When the General Court passed an Act indemnifying the sufferers by the Stamp Act riots, Mr. King's case was examined into at his request; and the decision of the Court, was that his losses were in no way connected with the excitement produced by the Stamp Act. The perpetrators of this crime had not then even the common objection of "toryism" to urge against the sufferer in their own defence; their only true plea against him was, that he was honestly their creditor, and was rich enough although their debts were unpaid.* Excepting the

* One of the rioters, while confined in the jail at Falmouth, wiled away the slow hours in writing letters to Mr. King, which are in many respects "curiosities of literature." We copy as a specimen (*verbatim et lit.*) one that has a particular turn in it.

"fallmouthe May the 17. 1773.

Sur I take this opertunity to Right to you to Let you know that I ame in good helth hoping this may find you and your family in good hellth Sur to Bee Confined to a pallice would soon Beecome a gale (jail) But to Bee Confined heere with in thies Barrs of iorn has a livly Resamblance of hell to me though threw the goodess of god Wee are prisners of hoope and thay are Beeyond the Reach of hoope and allso wee have water enuff and thay acord-

two events just narrated, nothing occurred to disturb the peace of our inhabitants until the time of the Revolution. The farmer's daily tasks in the field, and his evening enjoyments by the fireside, profitable and pleasant as they were to him during all this season of peace, afford no matter for historical record; so that even the chronicler of so slight a story as ours, must skip from act to act, unwillingly passing over the pleasing interludes—the happy scenes of peace between the frequent wars.

ing to Divars in the gospel they have noon Sur I ame heere Deprived of the Compney of an agreeable wife and the Dutyfull care of my poore chilldran which Strikes the Very Strings of my hearte with greaf which Blessed privlage you now injoy—But I Desire to Leave them in the hands of that god hoo changis the times and can Dispers the Dearkiest clouds Sur I can truly asure you that I feele mor thankfullness of heart for my small acomodations of Life in this gole than Ever I Did when I Lived at my one home in planty let it Bee posable for you to Bleive me I finde no mellis nor inry arising againste you or yours But I Sould have Bin angry at the poore ignorant high-barnion that Betrayed mee into your hands for a ginne wars it not that I thinke him as much Beneath my angor as hee is indesarving of my Love—But whether I am hilde heere Righthously or un-Rtously time will manifeste Mr Makintire of yorke came to see (me) by the Disire of mrs King as hee Solemly Declared wars to agrayate and abuis me threw the grats But when hee came to see my pitifull condishon his harte faled him where-upon hee tolde mee hee woulde treate mee But had no money I tolde him I had some and woulde treate him soo I gave him a dinor and two Boulls of tody and wee partid in pees—time Has Bin when our Efections wars somthing singlar with Respect to kindness But now thay seeme to Bee Some What remarkeable with Respect to Coldness Soo I conclude youre friend and humble Sarvt—Silas Burbank.”

Superscribed, “To Mr Richard king asqir Livng in Scarbrough.”

CHAPTER XIII.

The condition of Scarborough during the Revolution was like that of most of the small towns in New England, which were not called upon to take the lead in the contest. The town, as such, could only stand in the background and encourage those compelled to take the first and boldest step towards the maintenance of the rights of all. As far as resolutions and votes go in furtherance of an object, Scarborough did her duty in regard to the Revolution. Although her action as a town proved quite unimportant to the whole country, excepting its manifestation of an encouraging spirit, yet the part acted by her sturdy sons as individuals, as Americans, was more than that of merely encouraging the foremost in the fearful struggle. We by no means disparage the excellent Revolutionary soldiers of other New England towns, in claiming for our own a high rank amongst them. No town of the size of this furnished more, and few better soldiers than Scarborough; for almost every able-bodied man then living here took active part in the struggle at some period during the war.

A few facts have escaped oblivion which show the existence here at that time of a good degree of strong Revolutionary spirit. The first evidence of the dislike of our townsmen for the principle, which when carried out more fully involved England in the war of the Revolution, is in their partial opposition to the Excise Bill of 1754. This Bill not only touched their pockets, but reached even to their cups; interfered with the exhilarating beverages which gave life to all their weddings and funerals, their greetings and partings, their feast-days and fast-days, their "raisings," and "haulings," and "huskings," and "trainings;" in a word it affected the use and enjoyment of that one necessary of life without which nothing could be done in Church or State. At a *special* meeting of the townsmen held Sept. 30, 1754, it was solemnly "voted and declared;

against that part of the Bill called the Excise Bill, relating to the consumption of *Spiritous Liquors*." Considering the vast importance attached by the early townsmen to that one thing, at once a necessary and luxury to them, "good liquor," it is not surprising that their Revolutionary spirit should have showed itself first in that direction.

On the 21st of Sept. 1774, a Convention of delegates from the several towns of the County was held at Falmouth, for the purpose of effecting "a concert of action in relation to a non-importation agreement."* Scarborough was represented in this Convention by Capt. Timothy McDaniel, Capt. Reuben Foss, and Joshua Fabyan. Capt. McDaniel was one of the Committee appointed to draft resolutions for the Convention. This Committee reported a series of resolutions in which they "recommend a manly opposition to every measure which despotism can invent to abridge our English liberties." Our townsmen, however, were soon favored with an opportunity of showing their dislike of King George and his adherents, more effectually than by assenting to resolutions against them. In the course of the year the King's officers were sent to mark such trees on the Nonsuch, as were suitable for masts for the Royal Navy, on each of which they were to put the "broad R," as it was termed. But they no sooner arrived in town than they were met by a body of townsmen, who not only refused to allow them to proceed with their work, but also insisted upon their leaving town, and finally drove them out.

The enthusiasm with which the majority of our countrymen entered the Revolutionary contest, undoubtedly, hastened the happy result, but it also led to the commission of acts, as unnecessary to the attainment of the great object sought in the contest as they were painful to the sufferers by them. The

* For a full report of the proceedings of this Convention see Willis' Portland, p. II. App. V.

distinction of "whig" and "tory" was often justly made, and veritable tories there were in all parts of the country; yet all were not tories that suffered as such. The enthusiasm of the whigs was not so blinding as to prevent all distinction between real and suspected opponents, but was an occasional blur before their eyes that prevented them sometimes from distinguishing nicely. Instances during the Revolution, illustrating the truth of this remark will occur to many of our readers. We should notice these mistakes of some of the Revolutionary patriots, in justice to the memory of men equally patriotic with them, though less excitable; men who were tories only in the imagination of the whigs. In the midst of the excitement of 1774 two of our townsmen were mobbed by a party of soldiers from Gorham. One of these, afterwards an inhabitant of the town, was Dr. Abiathar Alden, an undisguised tory, and a very unfortunate one. He was originally from Plymouth Colony, and about 1765, established himself in Saco, where he acquired a small practice as a physician, which, however, was soon lost when his offensive politics came between him and his patients. While living at Saco in this unpleasant condition, a party of thirty or forty soldiers went from Gorham "at the ill-judged instigation, it is said, of Col. Phinney," for the purpose of bringing the Doctor to account for his toryism. Taking him out of his house, and placing him on the top of a hogshead, they stood around with their guns pointed towards him, and required a recantation of his opinions, on pain of instant death if he should refuse. They then read to him a confession, stating that he had done wrong in justifying the proceedings of Parliament, expressing his sorrow for every act of opposition to the whigs of which he had been guilty, and promising that for the future he would be peaceable in his deportment, and aid the cause of liberty as much as might be in his power. After signing this confession, he was compelled to say: "This I heartily promise

and bind myself to, and am very thankful for my life.'* He was then set at liberty, a hotter tory, undoubtedly, than ever before. Immediately afterwards he removed to this town, and took the house next to Mr. King's on the Landing road.

During June 1774 Mr. King sent a vessel, under the command of Capt. Mulberry Milliken, to Salem with a load of lumber. On the 14th of May previous, General Gage had entered Boston, and on June 1st that port was closed according to the act of Parliament. Capt. Milliken, however, obtained a license in Salem, from some one in authority under Gage, to carry his lumber around to Boston; and as it was wanted there to build barracks for the King's troops, he sold it for a very satisfactory price. This transaction took place without the consent of Mr. King, he being entirely ignorant of it. Capt. Milliken acted altogether on his own responsibility, and was the only person concerned to whom any blame could be justly attached. But Mr. King's prudence had never allowed him to commit himself to the whole extent of the principles of the most ardent whigs; so that he had been for some time regarded by them with a good deal of suspicion, though they had not as yet been able to discover any pretext upon which they could attack him with the least show of justice. When then it was ascertained that his lumber had been converted into barracks "for the Regulars," an occasion was no longer wanting to them. Matters having been arranged with Col. Phinney and his Gorham junto, a company of forty men from that town, under the command of one Capt. Whitmore, marched to Dunstan to call Mr. King to account. Dr. Alden happening to be in Saco that day, heard there of the intended movement towards Dunstan, and immediately started for home to give Mr. King timely notice of their approach. Whitmore and his company were refreshing themselves at the bar of Milliken's Tavern, on the

* Folsom's Saco and Biddeford p. 288.

corner of the Landing road when the Doctor appeared on his foaming horse evidently the bearer of some important news. The soldiers recognized their late victim, and, unable to resist the temptation to try the strength of his newly professed principles, stopped him in the road, rolled out a 'hogshead, and called on him to mount it and repeat his recantation. At first he refused to kneel, but the cocking of few muskets quickly brought him to his knees, and constrained him to comply with all their orders, in spite of a burning sense of their injustice.* Having amused themselves to their satisfaction with Dr. Alden, the soldiers proceeded to the Landing, where their Captain held a parley with Mr. King, and adjusted as well as he could their differences of opinion. To satisfy the soldiers, however, who seemed unwilling to let him off without an explanation in their own hearing, Mr. King was compelled to mount a table in front of his house, and to read (which he was allowed to do in a standing posture) a statement prepared by himself for the occasion. In the course of his reading he expressed the opinion, that the few and scattered inhabitants of this country had nothing to hope for in a contest with the first nation of the Old World, adding, that it was only his deep conviction of the truth of this, that kept him aloof from the whigs.† While

*“Is Dr. Alden with you? I heard of his being armed; hope he is upon no Quixotic plan. If the Dr. had not been possessed of the heroism and intrepidity of that renowned knight he would have yielded up the ghost before this.” (Rufus King's letters to Dr. R. Southgate, 1777.)

† As Mr King did not live to witness the result of the Revolution, he remained firm in this opinion until his death, and consequently, distrustful of the strong measures of opposition that were then being generally adopted by his countrymen. The only expression of his sentiments, respecting revolutionary topics, to be found amongst his papers is contained in the following, written in his own hand on a scrap of paper, and found in the midst of a parcel of old deeds and letters. As an argument from antiquity, against the expedient of calling in foreign aid in the Revolutionary struggle, it is very interesting.—“When foreign Nations pinched in War called on the Roman

repeating this part of his statement there was a rattling of arms amongst the soldiers, the meaning of which the Captain readily interpreted ; and, rudely addressing Mr. King, said : "*Down upon your knees, Sir, and erase that sentence ; these soldiers can't endure the sentiment.*" Mr. King submitted, and the mob went away, apparently as well satisfied as if they had overcome the whole army of British soldiers, and so saved their country. The effect of this scene upon Mr. King was sad indeed to his friends, as it hastened the death of this truly excellent man. Being possessed of much loftiness of spirit, and a high sense of personal honor, the mortification to

Senate for aid, 'tis true she seldom failed to send them what she called, and they received as such ; but it is as true that she thereby seldom failed to make the Conquerors, as well as the Conquered, her own Subjects or Tributaries in the End. Mankind are the same still, and our only Safety is in remaining firm to that Stock of which we are a Branch ; and as a Prudent Man that guards against a Pestilential Air when a plague is in the City, so should we guard against those false Patriots of the present day who advise us to resist, break off and prevent that grand circulation whereby we are become a great Plant, contributing to the Strength and Glory of the Stock, whose Branches cover in every Quarter of the Earth and with our own united force able to repel at least, if not totally conquer, any unity or power that can be formed against us on Earth or Sea. When ancient Rome was in her glory, each private Senator looked down with contempt upon the greatest crowned Head amongst the Nations that surrounded her ; yet Rome in her Glory was but a small Republick when compared with the Strength, and Extent of Dominions possessed by the British Empire. Can we then who are the happy subjects, inhabiting a country nowise inferior to the Land of Promise, under a mild and free government, can we merely out of Frowardness because we are rebuked for spurning at the demand, and refusing to pay the three-pence duty on Tea, which is not a Necessary but a Luxury of life, can we think of calling in foreign aid, and exchanging our fair Possessions for Servitude, our liberties for an Inquisition, and content ourselves to drag out the remainder of our Days in wooden Shoes ? Great God prevent our madness ! Why then this calling to arms ? Remember the Folly and Rasliness of the Tribe of Benjamin ; read the History in your own Houses, and let there not be a British Province wanting to Britain in America."

which he was subjected, together with bodily weakness, almost overturned his reason. Day and night his mind brooded over that scene of humiliation, until he became little else than an unhappy hypochondriac. His constitution, already enfeebled, could not long bear up under the weight of a crushed spirit; he died on the 28th of the following March, at the age of 57.

It is creditable to our town that the soldiers concerned in this outrage were not her own citizens. It seems at first somewhat singular that they should have come from Gorham purposely to disturb Mr. King; but a single fact will explain this matter, and also show to what extent they were influenced by a disinterested regard for the welfare of their country. In 1770 the inhabitants of Gorham petitioned the General Court that the Province taxes, laid on them for several years previous to the incorporation of the town, might be remitted and replaced on the other towns in the County, which, they said, had enjoyed the benefit of them. This petition was strongly opposed before the Court by Mr. King in behalf of the townsmen of Scarborough. When, therefore, the transaction of Capt. Milliken in Boston afforded the desired opportunity, those who had been so highly offended at Mr. King's efficient labors against their petition, felt themselves constrained to punish him for *toryism*. But a short time before his death, Mr. King contrived a plan for the future relief of the town, which he intended to submit to the townsmen for their approval and adoption, but did not live to accomplish it. He left the paper in an unfinished state, yet it contains enough to show the character of the proposed relief. There can be no doubt that the townsmen would have adopted this method of preserving themselves from embarrassment had Mr. King lived to propose it to them. It is certain that they afterwards suffered through want of it. Mr. King's draught of these proposals is this: "Whereas the unhappy and deplorable Publick State of this Province appears

to be on the verge of a civil War, Bloodshed, and Famine—and forasmuch as our situation and circumstances will render our case peculiarly distressing, unless some previous measures are taken towards our relief in such a day of Calamity as appears to be gathering over us; and although we repose our special Trust and Confidence in the Great Governour of the Universe at all Times, nevertheless as we are to expect such special Blessings only in the way of our Duty as Men—Therefore voted, That ——— be Trustees for and in behalf of this Town, and that they be and are hereby authorized and empowered to draw out of the Town Treasury of this Town, and from any and all other Persons whatsoever who may have in their hands any money in Trust or otherwise due or belonging to said Town, to the amount of ——— Pounds. And should the sums to be obtained as above be insufficient to make up the aforesaid sum of ———Pounds, that the said trustees be empowered and directed to hire of any Person within this Town, at six pr. cent a sufficiency to make up the sum aforesaid, which sum or sums so advanced and lent by any Inhabitant of this Town, as shall appear by a receipt from said Trustees, we will repay with six pr. cent interest thereon within one year from the date of said allowance. But should the several sums that may be obtained by any and all the means above proposed, be found insufficient &c, in such a case, at this exigency, in order to prevent and ward off as much as may be from ourselves, our wives and little ones, the distresses of Civil War, Famine, and Bloodshed, we think ourselves warranted from the laws of God and man, to make use of any Publick monies that have been by us paid into the hands of any of our Constables or Collectors, and now remaining in any of their hands, for the purposes hereafter mentioned. And we do hereby request of any and all such of our Constables and Collectors of Publick rates or taxes within this Town who may have in their hands any Public

monies that have been collected from us as aforesaid, that they, and any other person or persons within this Town possessed of such monies &c. respectively advance the same, or so much thereof to our Trustees as shall be sufficient (with the other sums they shall receive as above) to make up the sum of — Pounds. And that the Town of Scarborough will and shall be answerable to each and every of their Constables and Collectors for the sums by each and every of them so advanced to the said Trustees according to their respective receipts therefor, and will replace the same in their hands respectively in due season. In defect of which if any one or more of our Constables or Collectors aforesaid, having advanced any sum or sums of money to our Trustees, shall hereafter for want of the same be by lawful authority distrained upon therefor, we do hereby subject ourselves, our lands, goods and chattels equally with him and them so suffering or likely to suffer on account of such our defect. And that to such officer who may be duly authorized and lawfully and justly required to make distrainment upon any of our said Constables or Collectors, who may be in arrears on account of any sum of money by him or them advanced to our Trustees as aforesaid, we hereby respectively make liable our lands, goods and chattels equally with those of such Collector, to the amount of the sum by him so advanced to our Trustees; and furthermore as a Town, that we will indemnify each other for any loss in point of underprice, and for all costs and charges that may fall on any of us by means of any distrainment in case of defect as aforesaid." The meeting of the townsmen, to which Mr. King wished to submit this plan, occurred on the 20th of March 1775, only eight days before his death. From this it appears that almost the last act of his life was an attempt to provide for the welfare of his fellow townsmen; a circumstance which needs no comment.

On the 19th of April following occurred the battle of Lex-

ington. Twenty four hours after this engagement, the news of it reached the ears of our townsmen, and was soon the theme of every tongue. But their patriotic spirit would not allow them to sit still and talk about the fearful condition of the country ; with the first noise of war came to many here the determination to fight, and if need be to die, for their country. As soon as possible after the receipt of the intelligence of the skirmish at Lexington, every man who could be spared was armed and ready to go to the assistance of the Massachusetts soldiers. A company of fifty, under the command of Capt. John Rice of Dunstan immediately set out for Cambridge, and there joined the Regiment of Colonel Phinney. This Regiment was wholly raised in this County, and was distinguished in the army for containing an unusual number of "able bodied and noble-looking men." It was the first Regiment that marched into Boston after its evacuation by the British on the 17th of March 1776. It afterwards proceeded to Ticonderoga where it did the country excellent service.* Capt. Rice had commanded sailors a long while before he undertook the command of soldiers ; he proved himself equally ready and faithful in either situation. Something may be inferred of the spirit, in which he took part in the struggle, from the following letters to Dr. Robert Southgate.

CAMBRIDGE 7th July 1775.

DEAR FRIEND,

These few lines come with my sincere love and respect, hoping they will find you and spouse in good health as I am at present writing, blessed be God for it. I have not anything new to inform you of relative to the Army ; things remain peaceable at present, but we are making all the warlike prep-

* "Phinney's Regiment is ordered from Boston to Ticonderoga. I guess the pious Elder would as lieve tarry where he is ; but he was formerly fond of action—hope now he will be satisfied — — — Gen. Gates will doubtless make a stand at Ticonderoga." (Rufus King to Dr. R. Southgate, Aug. 6, 1776.)

arations against our avaricious enemies that can be, though we expect daily and hourly they will make us another visit, *when I hope through God we shall be able to make them turn their backs ashamed, while we become the victors over our perfidious enemy, and gain the prize of our most glorious Liberty*; please to send me a line the first opportunity—give my love and respects to Mrs. King and family and to all friends and acquaintances. I rest your sincere friend &c.

JOHN RICE "

Gen. Howe evacuated Boston on the 17th of March. The following letter, it will be noticed, was written during the previous week.

"CAMP, CAMBRIDGE March 9th, 1776.

DOCT. SOUTHGATE, SIR,

I take this opportunity to inform you that I am in a comfortable state of health at present, blessed be God for it, and am hoping these will find you in the like state. I would now inform you *that we have got an Entrenchment at Dorchester Hill, and there is a prospect of the Regular Troops withdrawing from Roston immediately, as they have sent by a Flag of truce that if we would suffer them to depart, without being disturbed from our forts, they would depart as fast as possible, and if they do not go voluntarily they will be obliged to go soon.* I received a line from Mr. Rufus* this day, and he is well. Nothing more at present but—remember my love to your wife and Mrs. King, and all enquiring friends; from Rprs. &c. JNO RICE."

On the 9th of May, Col. Thompson of Brunswick went to Falmouth with a company of about fifty men, designing to destroy Capt. Mowatts ship, then lying in the harbor. The inhabitants of Falmouth had no intention of molesting Mowatt, nor were they aware of the presence of Thompson's men, until they heard of the seizure of Capt. M. and two of his friends as they were walking together on Munjoy's Hill. This untimely affair, and the consequent threat of the ship's officer to burn the town, created an immense excitement, which extended to the neighboring towns; and the next day a body of militia to the number of 600 from Gorham, Stroudwater, Cape Elizabeth, and Scarborough, went to the assistance of Falmouth.† The

* Rufus King, at that time in Harvard College.

† Willis' Portland, P. II, p. 149.

difficulty, however, seems to have been only increased by the presence of so many, and such, soldiers, and Falmouth was exposed to the greatest danger while they remained. They were at last persuaded to retire to their homes, having secured no trophies but *two barrels of rum* to each company, which, however, they did not bring off with them. On the 18th of October our townsmen were again called to Falmouth to witness the threatened destruction of that town. It is said that there was not a single able-bodied man left in Scarborough on that eventful day. All rushed to the fearful scene of conflagration, but as resistance was impossible, they could only stand by the lamenting sufferers as witnesses for them against the cowardly desolators of their pleasant homes. They went home that night better prepared in spirit for the coming struggle than if they had not witnessed the ruthless devastation of Falmouth.

March 11th 1776, Capt. Timothy McDaniel and Solomon Bragdon were chosen the first Committee of correspondence for the town. Similar Committees were chosen in the neighboring towns, and all of them were in correspondence with the Boston Committee for the purpose of effecting that union of action, which proved so advantageous in the contest. The Town Records contain very few allusions to the interesting events of the Revolution; for our townsmen, as we have already said, were more engaged in it as individuals than as a body. One or two extracts will suffice for all the entries bearing on the subject. Oct. 1, 1776, "Voted that this Town consent that the present House of Representatives, with the Honorable Council of the State of Massachusetts form a constitution of Government for said State, and that each Town in said State have the perusal before ratified, agreeable to the resolve of said Court." At a meeting held June 30, 1777, "Samuel Small was chosen Moderator, and the Selectmen of the Town then presented a list in said meeting of sundry Persons whom *they*

had suspected of being inimical to the United States of America, viz — Abiather Alden, Robert Southgate, Rufus King, Abraham Leavitt, Joseph Moody — The vote was then put whether the above named persons should be returned for trial, agreeable to an act of the Great and General Court of Massachusetts and voted, that the above named persons should be returned for trial agreeable to said act. Voted, that Capt. Benj. Larrabee be the person to procure all such evidence as may be had against the afore-named persons on trial.”* It appears that no evidence was to “be had” in the case of these gentlemen ; for the next month a special meeting of the townsmen was held “to see if they would reconsider” the proceedings of the last meeting.† It is probable that the decision of this meeting was favorable to the accused, as they were soon afterwards restored to the favor of their townsmen generally.‡ This zealous regard for the welfare of the country was perhaps, in itself, quite as commendable in those patriotic townsmen as if they had discovered and presented for trial her actual enemies ; but fortunately she was beholden to them in this case only for the exhibition of zeal. To one acquainted with the whole lives of the men thus hastily accused of enmity to their country, these proceedings against them assume the appearance of one of those common and unfortunate mistakes, which attended the course of whig enthusiasm in the Revolution. One of these presented was engaged at the time in the manufacture of saltpetre, which the country made good use of against her foes. Another was just entering upon the studies, which in part fitted him for the lofty position of one of America’s noblest

* Town Records.

† I find the original warrant for this meeting on file, amongst the papers of Dr. Southgate, endorsed by his hand — “Warrant for Town Meeting 1777, *to Vote and make Tories.*”

‡ We must except Dr. Alden throughout.

statesmen, whose least service to his country was the honor reflected upon her by the personal distinction acquired for himself.*

March 16, 1778, "Voted that the Select Men and Committee of this Town, draw out of the town treasury 15 pounds L. M. to pay for the carriage of the soldiers' clothing collected by this town." Dec. 28, "Voted that 200 pounds (be raised) for the supply of the families of the men who are in the continental service for this town." From this extract it appears that the inhabitants were suffering from the want of some such system of relief as that drawn up by Mr. King. So many of the townsmen were obliged to neglect their estates for the sake of the country, that the want of the products, on which they chiefly depended for the support of their families, was inevitable, and, but for the incessant efforts of the few men left at home, would have resulted in complete famine. As early as 1775 it was found necessary to appoint an agent to procure one thousand bushels of corn for the use of the inhabitants. This was procured and placed under the care of Capt. Reuben Fogg, and Abraham Lord, for distribution. The price was fixed at twenty-eight shillings O. T. "when sold out of the vessel," and after stored, at thirty shillings in cash. Those unable to pay in money received four bushels in exchange for a thousand feet of "good merchantable boards," and five bushels for one thousand "good hogshead staves." It was also voted by the town that none of the corn should be sold to any person not an inhabitant, until one month after its landing. As an additional means of warding off the threatened famine, the Selectmen seized and distributed whatever stores of provisions

*"I write as if I expected no evil consequences from your being on the list in Scarboro', as in truth I do not. Fabyan &c. are your friends, and your salt-petre making is a sufficient proof of your good wishes in favor of your country." (Rufus King to Dr. R. Southgate.)

any of the townsmen had more than sufficient for their own support, granting them such remuneration as they thought proper. Many would have died here of starvation but for this careful distribution of food.

In 1778, Messrs. Saml. Small, Saml. March, Danl. Moulton, Jonathan Milliken and Thos. Libby, were the "Committee of correspondence, safety, and inspection of the Town." The next year Saml. Small was chosen to represent the town in the Convention held at Cambridge "to form a Government." March 13, 1780, "Voted £11 196 to purchase a quantity of beef for the Town." The great depreciation of paper currency, in which the grant was made, explains the necessity of an appropriation apparently so large.* This beef was probably purchased for the army, for on the 27th the town voted "to send to the agent to enquire what method to take concerning the Cattle purchased by the Town's Committee." The next year the town appointed a committee to enlist continental soldiers for three years, or during the war. Towards this object they appropriated one thousand dollars in "hard money," and subsequently an additional sum of *eighteen hundred and fifty* dollars. If we bear in mind the poor condition of most of the townsmen at that time, we can better appreciate the value of these offerings to their country's cause. By dint of great exertions and self-denial they were enabled to give much towards the support of the war. To say that in patriotic devotion they were surpassed by none of their companions in the struggle for freedom, is assigning them a high but deserved rank in the noble band of patriots. We are too apt to overlook the common soldiers of the Revolution while reviewing with just admiration the characters and deeds of the officers. When we

* In March 1780 a Spanish dollar was worth about 37 dollars in paper. The real value of the sum voted by the Town was nearly three hundred dollars in specie.

consider the inefficiency of an army without a skilful General, we should not forget to look at the other side of the picture, upon the weakness of the most skilful General without an army of devoted soldiers. One viewing this matter aright cannot but assent to the truth of the sentiment so well expressed in the following extract: "The names of all the officers and soldiers, to whose contempt of danger, patient endurance of unnumbered evils, and patriotic exertions, the whole country is under so great obligation, assuredly deserve to be kept in lasting remembrance, and to be inscribed in the annals of the towns and parishes to which they may have severally belonged.* A general history of the war distinguishes but few of the actors, those only whose elevated rank, or signal daring, placed them in situations where they could be separated from the mass of heroes. As on the field of battle, the solid phalanx, with its principal leaders, can alone be discerned, the individuals composing the valiant host sink inglorious, undistinguished, unhonored. It thus becomes the grateful duty of the local annalist, whose range is circumscribed, to recall the names of the obscurest persons, where it is practicable, who 'poured out their blood like water' in a noble cause, and award to them the meed of praise which is their due."†

By a return to the General Court, in 1777, of the number of males in this town of sixteen years and upwards, it appears that there were *four hundred and seventy one* such, including *six* belonging to Falmouth. A great proportion of these served

* Why might not this excellent suggestion be acted upon at once, before any more of these names are forgotten? The proposed register of each town might be transcribed into a State register, and each of the State registers into a National Register, which would be the least monument a grateful country could erect to the memory of the faithful soldiery that achieved her independence.

† Folsom.

in the army sometime during the war. In presenting the names of a few of these, we have to regret that we cannot record them all, and that so little is known respecting these whose names we have been able to obtain. Appended to each of the officers' names is the rank, and to all, where it could be ascertained, the name of the place where they were longest stationed.

Reuben Fogg, Colonel, Fishkill 1778, Samuel March, Lieut. Col. Cambridge 1776, Timothy McDaniel, Major, Benj. Larabee, Capt. Fishkill 1778, Abraham Tyler, Capt. Yorktown, Edward Milliken, Lieut. Elisha Meserve, Lieut. Solomon Meserve Ensign, Jonathan Andrews, Capt. John Skillins, Capt. killed at Skeensborough, William Hasty, Lieut. Saratoga, John March, Lieut. Jonathan Libby, Ensign, Wm. McKenney, Ensign, Joseph Pillsbury, Capt. John Rice, Capt. Cambridge, Capt. Silas Burbank, John Alger Milliken, Lieut., Moses Banks, Lieut. and Quarter Master. Amongst the Privates were the following—John Waterhouse, Solomon Harford, Cambridge, James Small, Saratoga. Mr. Small used to say that the service at Saratoga was acknowledged to have been the hardest day's work performed during the war. The Provincials gathered around Burgoyne at Stillwater during the night, and commenced the battle at day light. Burgoyne retreated during the day to Saratoga; breastworks were thrown up by the Americans in the afternoon and evening, and the whole army watched through the night. At ten o'clock the next morning the British troops laid down their arms, and were sent under an escort to Cambridge. The remainder of the American forces then marched directly to Albany, and drew their rations, having had nothing served out to them for *forty eight hours*. But one gun was fired by the British after they arrived at Saratoga. Mr. Small was exceedingly ashamed of ragged uniform when Burgoyne's finely equipped forces marched through the American lines; but without doubt the former were not at that

moment disposed to pride themselves on the contrast.* James Snow, Lemuel Milliken, David Fogg, John Foss, Geo. Vaughan, Joseph Richards, Cambridge, John Guilford, Isaac McKenney, Jos. McKenney, John Matthews, Newport, Daniel Moses, John Dearborn Isaac Smith, Lewis Shepherd, Junia (or Boston,) formerly a slave belonging Rev. Rich. Elvins, Thos. Thurston, Cambridge, Simeon Libby, Alison Libby, Edward Libby, James Libby, Edmund Libby, Thomas Libby, Zebulon Libby, Abner McKenney, James McKenny, Zachariah Foss, Saratoga, Eleazer Burbank, Nathaniel Westcott, Eben. Sevey, Reuben Sevey, Benj. Rice, Cambridge, Lemuel Rice, Pelatiah Fenderson Moses Harmon, Danl. Small, Saratoga, Andrew Tyler, Monmouth, James Rice, Cambridge, Nathaniel Waterhouse, Wm. McLaughlin, Fiskill. Amongst the draftsmen for the Continental Army were Edmund Higgins, Gideon Rice, Abner Milliken, Isaac Milliken, Joseph Hasty, Gibbins Edgecombe, Joseph Waterhouse, Robert Libby. In addition to these a large number of our townsmen were engaged in the disastrous expedition to "Bagaduce" (Castine) in 1779. Scarborough has the honor of having furnished the soldier who procured the only *trophy of victory*, which was brought back from the Penobscot by that expedition. This soldier was Joseph Waterhouse; the trophy, a British soldier's gun which he brought home with him. He had ventured down into the lower part of Castine alone, and coming suddenly upon an English soldier as he turned the corner of a street, he took him prisoner, and without ceremony marched him into the American Camp. The gun of the soldier he claimed, and received as the reward of his services. Arthur Bragdon was the only one of our towns-

* The substance of a narration to Rev. H. G. Storer by Mr. Small himself in 1841.

men wounded at Castine. He died of the wound soon after his return*.

So long as the Revolutionary War continued it was the engrossing subject of all hearts here. Intelligence of events that transpired did not travel through the land with the wonderful rapidity of our own times; nor were public Journals and gazettes in every hand, but the people depended for their information concerning the war mostly upon flying and uncertain rumors, passing from mouth to mouth, keeping all in anxiety and suspense from week to week. The only newspaper taken in Black Point at that time, (and it is said to have been the only one taken in the town,) was received by Capt. Timothy McDaniel. The meeting house was the place of assembly for the whole population, and the Sabbath the time. Regularly as that day returned, (if the *mail* returned so regularly†) did Capt. McDaniel take his seat on the door-step of the Black Point Meeting-house, at the close of the forenoon service; and while the Rev. Father Lancaster was refreshing himself for the labors of the afternoon, the worthy Captain regaled the whole congregation, gathered around him in respectful, and often breathless silence, with the tidings of the war.

The news of the surrender of Cornwallis was received here with unspeakable rejoicings, and was celebrated by a general

* The account of this unfortunate expedition, especially of the retreat through the trackless forests of Waldo and Lincoln, is said to contain a fund of entertainment. "Uncle Nat Moses," as he was styled by his townsmen here, one of the most peaceful men that ever lived, who then and there made his first and last campaign, could draw tears of laughter from his hearers by his child-like narration of the terrors, blunders, and accidents of that expedition.

† April 23th, 1786, Parson Smith of Falmouth writes in his Journal: "The post at last got in here, having been hindered near five weeks!" The first regular Post Office in Scarboro' was established at Dunstan in 1795. Eliphallet Smith was the Post Master.

assembly and bonfire at the house of Solomon Bragdon. Two of the most respectable of the townsmen could express their delight in no other way than by dancing together on the top of a small round table in the middle of the room. The whole people were alike mad with joy. Upon the declaration of Peace, burning tar-tubs were hoisted to the top of each of the three liberty poles in town,* three military companies assembled at the house of Lieut. Banks on Scottow's Hill, all the powder in town was consumed, (a vast quantity of liquors also,) a number of muskets were put into a field-piece and fired away as useless, and the whole celebration was closed with a dance that did not end until late the next morning. We may now leave our townsmen to the enjoyment of the peace so heartily welcomed. From the close of the Revolution up to the present time the condition of the town has been one of almost uninterrupted prosperity. Its history for that period is fresh in the memories of those who now enjoy the good results of the order and industry that distinguished their fathers' times. If written, it would show itself to be the single record of the blessings attending honest labor, and of the quiet pleasures of country firesides.

CHAPTER XIV.

In a former chapter we gave a brief account of the principal townsmen during the first settlement; in this we shall present similar notices of some of the second settlers. The family names most common in the town at present, are borne by descendants of settlers here early in the last century; except-

* These were upon Winnock's Neck, Scottow's Hill, and Blue Point. Around them the boys from 9 to 16 years old used to assemble weekly and train themselves for service in the war.

ing from this a few names whose descent from the first settlement will be noticed. The following sketches are necessarily brief and imperfect; and for want of information respecting them, we have omitted a few names altogether. So far as practicable the first of each name settled in the town has been taken as the subject of notice.

Jonathan Andrews, removed to this town from Ipswich, Mass. in 1732. None of his name preceded him here. He proved a valuable addition to the number of enterprising settlers, at a time when the young settlement stood greatly in need of such. *Amos Andrews* was an active citizen later in the town's history. After the division of the town into Parishes he became a leading man in the affairs of the Second Parish, and was many years a deacon of the church there. From these the name has been transmitted in the town.

John and Nathaniel Babb were early settled at Dunstan. Nathaniel was one of the emigrants from this town to Machias, and, together with Joseph Munson, another of the emigrants, was noted for his great strength. They won a wager of a barrel of rum at Machias by starting a stick of timber, which a yoke of oxen had vainly attempted to move; a feat requiring an amount of strength which only such a prize as that set before them could have brought out.

Dr. Alvan Bacon. This excellent citizen and physician came from Charlestown, Mass., and settled here about the close of the last century, taking the extensive practice just then resigned by Dr. Southgate. He continued until within a few years of his death in the successful pursuit of his profession. He died here after a long confinement by sickness. His sons are both distinguished physicians in this vicinity, but none of the family are at present residents in this town.

Moses Banks, originally from York, became an inhabitant of the town some years previous to the Revolutionary war, in which he served in Phinney's Regiment, with the rank of Lieutenant. He was well known in this vicinity as an excellent surveyor and draughtsman; and we have seen plans executed by him, which nearly equal engravings in their neat finish. His house stood on Scottow's Hill. The latter part of his life was spent in Saco, where he died in 1835 at the advanced age of 92 years, and where his descendants are still living. *Capt. Elias Banks*, an early resident of the town, was a sea captain for some time in the employ of Richard King and other early merchants.

Joseph Berry, was one of the thirty-nine present at the organization of the town government in 1720. Elisha Berry, brother of Joseph, removed to New Meadows (Brunswick) where he was living in 1783. There was also a John Berry amongst the early townsmen.

Joseph and Samuel Boothby. These brothers emigrated from Ireland to Kittery early in the last century, whence they came to this town. They settled in the westerly part of the town, on land lately set off to Saco, within the limits of which town most of their descendants reside. *Henry Boothby*, was an early townsman of another family. He was settled in the town before 1728, when he assisted in the organization of the Black Point Church. None of his descendants are now living in the town.

Arthur Bragdon was one of the very few early townsmen, to whose names was appended in law papers the title "gentleman." He removed to this town from York about 1725, and spent here the remainder of a long and useful life. *Capt.*

Solomon and *Gideon Bragdon* became inhabitants soon afterwards. From these to the present bearers of the name the descent is clear.

Job Burnam, one of the first board of Selectmen after the organization of 1720, died here in 1756, leaving a son *Job*, and having survived by a number of years his other son *Daniel*, who came with him to this town and settled on Blue Point. *Daniel's* children were *Daniel*, *Thomas*, *Robert*, *Samuel*, *Job*, *Rebecca*, and *Solomon*. These grandchildren of our worthy pioneer left a numerous posterity in the town.

Joseph Calfe (or *Calef*) purchased land on the Nonsuch of *Roger Dearing* in 1725, and afterwards removed to it from Boston, where he had been sometime engaged in the business of a tanner. He married *Hannah Jordan* a grand-daughter of *Rev. Robert Jordan* of *Spurwink*. Some of their descendants in the female line are living here.

John Coolbroth. This townsman was a native of England ; came to this country with several of his brothers, and settled in *Newington* near *Portsmouth*. He removed to this town about 1730. He had here a son *George*, whose son *Mr. Lemuel Coolbroth* is now enjoying the eighty third year of a useful life. His mother died at the ripe old age of *one hundred* years, in the full possession of her mental powers.

Roger Dearing came here from *Kittery* in 1716, and purchased of the heirs of *Rev. Robert Jordan* the valuable estate known for many years as the "Nonsuch Farm." During the troubles of the "three years war," immediately after the murder of his wife by the Indians, *Mr. Dearing* left the town, but returned soon after the declaration of peace. He died in

1741, having divided his large property by will between his widow, who retained the bulk of it, the Black Point church, and the "honest poor" of the town.

Henry Dresser, who was living in the town in 1729, resided on the heath at the foot of Scottow's Hill, which was known until within a few years as the "Dresser Place," and was occupied a long time by his descendants. Nathaniel Dresser, the young man slain by the Indians in 1747 was a member of this family. Richard settled here about the same time with Henry, and probably was his brother.

Robert Elliot was one of the principal inhabitants during the last years of the *first* settlement. He came to this town from Kittery about 1670. He was Selectman 1682, and the town's Deputy to General Court 1685. He died in 1720, leaving his estates in this town to the family of his son-in-law Col. George Vaughan of Portsmouth.

Joseph Emerson—for a number of years in the latter part of the last century, a successful trader at Dunsten. He was the town's Representative in the General Court; and in that, as in every other capacity in which he served, acquired the honor and esteem of his fellow townsmen. He removed with his family to Portland, where his descendants are living.

James Fly became an inhabitant of the town in 1716. Wm. Fly, probably a son of James, was the last of the name resident here; he removed to the eastern part of the State about 1760.

Daniel Fogg, one of the thirty-nine present at the meeting held for the purpose of organizing a town government in 1720, was originally from Kittery. His name appears on the Chh. Records of the first parish amongst those of the founders of

the society, and also on the list of the Machias Association of sixteen. He removed to Machias in May 1763. *John Fogg*, also one of the original proprietors of 1720, died here in 1749, leaving sons John, Jonathan, Joseph and Moses. *Seth Fogg*, another of the early townsmen, assisted in the capture of Louisburgh. The descendants of the last two remain in the town.

Benjamin Foss—removed with his family to Machias 1765. The descendants of another branch of this family are numerous in this town and vicinity.

Foster. Eight persons of this name were amongst the emigrants from this town to Machias. Isaiah, who was one of the original colony; Wooden, the blacksmith of the Association; Ezekiel, removed in 1765, and Benjamin, the same year, also, Ezekiel, Jr., Benjamin, Jr., Jacob, and John W. Col. Benj. Foster was one of the leaders of the little company of patriots that captured the British armed vessels near Machias in 1775.*

Caleb Graffam became an inhabitant in 1714. From 1727 to 1731 he lived at Dunstan as tenant of Wm. Vaughan of Portsmouth, who owned a portion of Robert Elliot's estates here. Graffam removed to Windham where he was living in 1783.

Daniel Hasty was settled here by 1735. He came to the town from Rye, N. H. The second of this name amongst our early townsmen was Wm. Hasty, who died here in 1787 aged 68; leaving sons Robert and William; the latter of whom married Anna Clarke, and had son John, married to Lydia daughter of Seth and Lydia Libby. Robert lived on the knoll directly in front of the house of Seth Storer, Esq.

* See Vol. 2d p. 242 Maine Hist. Coll.

Nicholas Hearne, the grandfather of the present townsman of this name, was the first of the family settled here. He was a native of the county of Waterford, Ireland, and came to this country while very young. The family tradition respecting him is, that he was found wandering about the streets of Boston, and was brought to Scarborough, by Richard King, with whom he lived many years. He did his adopted country good service at the taking of Louisburgh in 1745.

Samuel Harmon appears to have been the first of this family who became an inhabitant of the town. In 1726 he bought land at Black Point of Saml. Penhallow of Portsmouth. We find him living here in 1750.

Fergus Higgins came from Ireland to Black Point about 1750. Tully Higgins, his brother, came over with him and settled in Berwick. Fergus died here in 1777. *Dr. Edmund Higgins*, son of Fergus, married Anne daughter of Andrew Swanton of C. Elizabeth, and died in 1784, leaving six children, the eldest of whom, Dea. Edmund Higgins, was the father of Capt. Samuel now living at Black Point. The present Higgins estate is a part of the Cammock Patent, and is held by a title descended from Ambrose Boaden the first occupant in 1640.

George Hight, b. 1765, came to this town from Berwick in 1780. His mother was a granddaughter of Capt. John Hill of Saco. He died here June 17, 1828.

Hunniwell. The families of this name, which were here early in the second settlement, descended from Lieut. Richard Hunniwell, one of the most distinguished of the old settlers. Notices of the Lieut. may be found in the preceding pages.

After the second settlement one of the earliest townsmen was Roger Hunniwell, who died here July 13th, 1720. Later there was another Roger, son of the first, who lost his right arm in the engagement at Louisburgh, and was subsequently known here as "one-armed Hunniwell." The name has extended from this into some of the neighboring towns, and retains its honorable place here.

Aaron Jewett, one of the first lumber merchants in the town, built the first saw mill on "Alger's Falls" in Dunstan in 1727, and carried on what was then considered an extensive lumber business. He died here about 1735.

John Jones was a mason resident in Kittery in 1736, in which year he purchased of John Hardison of Portsmouth 300 acres on Nonsuch River, and immediately afterwards removed to the town with his family. This valuable farm which had been well known in the previous century as "Elliot's Plantation," having been *granted* by the town to Robt. Elliot in 1669, was purchased by Jones for *six hundred pounds* sterling.

Martin Jose was living here as early as 1729, and was the first of this name settled in the town. He lived on the farm now held by Mr. Richard Waterhouse, and was succeeded there by his son Martin.

Ivory Kilborn, the father of our present townsman of this name, was the first of the family resident in the town. He came from Rowley, Mass. about 1777.

Richard King. For some years prior to his settlement in this town, Mr. King was a respectable merchant in Watertown, Mass. He appears to have visited Scarborough for the first time in 1744. The next year he was engaged as Commissary

at Annapolis Royal, and upon his return from this service established himself in this town. The remainder of his life was spent here in agricultural and mercantile pursuits. He became the owner of nearly three thousand acres here, divided into several valuable farms, and was for many years one of the largest exporters of lumber in the District of Maine. The result of his efforts evinces great energy and industry ; he was also a man of inestimable worth of character. Although the care of his estates, and of his mercantile business required almost all his time, he was enabled, by good management to serve the public long and faithfully as a Justice, and in many other capacities ; and also to enrich a mind of superior natural endowments by a judicious course of reading. His talents were such as in another sphere of labor would have secured to him an honorable position amongst the intellectual men of his day. In public life he was honored and esteemed, in private life he was loved. It has been remarked by those who knew him that one of the most marked of his characteristics was his love of children ; this often constrained him to keep older customers in waiting, while he went to serve the children. To all these good qualities were added the graces of a christian life ; so that we know not how his whole character can be more truthfully described than by styling him—*a christian gentleman*.*

He died at his residence near Dunstan Landing March 27, 1775 Act. 57 years. His first wife was *Isabella Bragdon* of York, by whom he had children—*Rufus*, b. 1755 died April 29, 1829 ; *Mary* b. 1757, md. Dr. Robert Southgate June 23, 1773, died, March 30 1824—*Paulina* md. Dr. Aaron Porter April 13 1777. *Isabella*, the mother died Oct. 19 1759. The second wife of Richard King was *Mary*, dau. of *Saml. Black* of York, b. Oct. 8, 1736, md. January 31st 1762.

* See App. G. for an interesting specimen of Mr. King's literary composition.

Their children were *Richard*, b. Dec. 22, 1762, md. Hannah Larrabee Jan. 14, 1790; *Isabella*, b. Sept. 8, 1764, died Sept. 12, 1770; *Dorcas*, b. May 20, 1766, md. Joseph Leland Dec. 28th 1786; *William*, b. Feb. 9, 1768, died June 17, 1852; *Betsey*, b. Jan. 7th, 1770; *Cyrus*, born Sept. 6, 1772, md. Hannah Storer Oct. 1797, died April 25, 1817. *Mary* the second wife of Mr. King died May 25, 1816.

Mr. King had three brothers, David, Josiah, and William. David was sometime a merchant in Saco, and William was a sea-captain. There is no family or other record of the descent of Rich. King from the early N. England settlers of that name, but it is highly probable that he was descended from the Kings of Kittery who were settled there during the seventeenth century.

Rufus King, eldest son of the preceding, was a native of this town. After completing the preparatory course of studies at Byefield Academy, he entered Harvard College, where he graduated in 1777; he then removed to Newburyport where he studied law with the distinguished Judge Parsons. His career as a lawyer, Senator in Congress, and Minister of State, is well known. It is no small honor to Scarborough to have been the birth-place of a statesman who honored our whole country by his life. *Ex Gov. King* of Bath, lately deceased, was the third son of Richard, and was born in this town Feb. 9th, 1768. *Cyrus*, the fourth son, and youngest of the children, distinguished himself at the Bar, and in the halls of Congress. He died in Saco April 25, 1817.

Capt. Alexander Kirkwood lived on Prout's Neck, which was known during his residence there and subsequently as "Kirkwood's Neck." He was a Scotchman, and had been in the English Navy service. In 1743 he was wounded in the

head while fighting on board the *Dunkirk*, and was on that account a pensioner of the Chest at Chatham. Soon after his arrival here, he married Mary daughter of Timothy Prout, Esq., and built a two-story house with brick ends on the spot where Mr. Thos. Libby now resides. He left no children, and the name is not now to be found in this vicinity.

Nathan Knight received a grant of eighty acres from the new proprietors of the town in 1720, the date of his settlement here. He died in 1751 leaving two sons, *Westbrook*, of this town, and *Nathaniel* of Falmouth; also six daughters—*Mary*, wife of John Crockett of Falmouth, *Sarah* md. Anthony Brackett of do., *Margaret* md. Axel Roberts of Scarborough, *Elizabeth* md. Eben. Sevey of do., *Martha* md. John Elder of Biddeford, and *Hannah* md. John Sellea of do.

John Larrabee. The connection of this worthy pioneer with the little company from Lynn, his brave defence of the Fort against the Indians in 1703 &c. are described on another page. It is evident that he must have been one of the most valuable members of the little colony at Black Point; one, without whom the colonists would hardly have persevered in their hazardous enterprise. Mr. Thos. Larrabee, who with his son Anthony was slain by the Indians in 1723, was here as early as 1683. He removed in 1690, returned soon after the second settlement, and was present at the meeting for the organization of the town government in 1720. Thomas had another son, Benjamin, the grandfather of Mr. Joseph Larrabee of this town. The descendants of the other branches of this family are quite as numerous and respectable as those of this branch.

Henry Libby was the son of the first John Libby, of whom

we have a brief notice in the account of the first settlement. Henry was one of the original settlers of the second settlement, and came from Lynn in 1703, bringing with him three sons, Samuel, James and John. He died Oct. 21, 1732. Of the thirty-nine present at the first town meeting in 1720, seven were Libby's two Johns, two Jameses, William, Matthew and Samuel. William was the first constable under the organization of 1720, and Samuel the first Town Clerk. Of these seven, one, John was the brother of Henry, the other his son; one, James a brother of Henry, the other his son; Matthew was a brother of the same, and Samuel a son. All of these had large families of sons, amongst whom might have been found at once five or six bearing the same christian name; so that now the Libby genealogy has become an exceedingly complicate affair, to be classed with the "endless genealogies" against which we are warned.

Abraham Leavitt, well known to our old people as "Sheriff Leavitt," was the ancestor of all of this name living here. He was, without doubt, descended from Dea. John Leavitt of Hingham, who came over from England in 1627, and was settled at Hingham in 1636. Two of Dea. Leavitt's sons lived in Exeter, N., H. from which vicinity many of our early townsmen came. Sheriff Leavitt was one of the most estimable of the early townsmen, amongst whom he lived more than half a century. He was honored with the friendship and confidence of Sir Wm. Pepperell, with whom he had had in some way an intimate connection.

Wm. and *Robert McLaughlin* were brothers, and emigrated at the same time from Ireland to this town. William had three sons, Samuel, Robert and William. Samuel removed to Camden; Robert and Wm. continued here, where their descendants reside.

Capt. Timothy McDaniel came here about 1765 from England, was highly honored by our townsmen, and was altogether an estimable man. His connection with the family of Timothy Prout, Esq. is thus recorded in the Town Book: "Married Mr. Timothy McDaniel of St. Pauls Shadwell, London, to Miss Lydia Prout—May 22, 1766 by the Rev. John Wiswall Missionary." Capt. McDaniel's house stood near the Black Point Ferry. In 1805 he removed to Hollis where his descendants remain.

John McKenney, the first of this name in town, came about 1670, and in 1673 purchased land on the Nonsuch of Robert Jordan, upon which he lived. Robert McKenney, son of John, returned to the town at the time of the second settlement, and died here in July 1725. His children were John, Robert, Isaac, Henry, Rebecca married Daniel Burnam of this town, and Hannah married Wm. Groves of Damariscotta. Henry lived at Falmouth, the other sons in this town where some of their descendants are living.

John Milliken. At the death of John Alger, his daughter Elizabeth, wife of John Milliken of Boston, came into possession of a large part of the Alger estate. Mr. Milliken removed here in 1719 and took possession of his wife's claim at Dunstan. About 1730, John Milliken, Jr., Samuel M., Edward M., and Nathaniel M., the sons of John, purchased the right of the other Alger heirs to Dunstan and settled there. John, the father, became a very enterprising farmer, as will appear from the following extract from a letter written by him in 1746. "I have cleared a great deal of land, have made several miles of fence; this year I have planted as much land as *three bushels* of corn would plant, and sowed as much as *seven* bushels of peas would sow, and as much as *thirteen* bushels of oats and

barley would sow." Samuel was lost on the return from Louisburg in 1745. He was a very worthy man, and died while singing a hymn of praise to God. Edward was afterwards well known in this vicinity as "Justice Milliken," having been appointed a Judge of the Inferior Court in 1760, in which office he continued until 1771. The numerous families of this name in this town and vicinity are descended from John Milliken through these four sons.

Clement Meserve settled here in 1725, or earlier, as a joiner, and was succeeded by John and Daniel. Some of their descendants are living here, others in Portsmouth where the name has continued for many years. Lieut. Col. Nathaniel Meserve, the distinguished officer of the N. Hampshire Regiment in the expedition to Louisburg 1745, was a member of this family.

Daniel Moody, a maltster, settled at Black Point about 1724. Joshua Moody was another of the early settlers under the second occupation. All of this name in this vicinity are probably descended from Wm. Moody, "saddler," who came over from England in 1634 and settled at Ipswich, afterwards at Newbury.

George Moses lived on the Scottow Hill farm in 1754, then owned by Joseph Prout. Theodosius Moses appears amongst the soldiers enlisted in Scarborough in 1747. The name remains in town but we have not the means of tracing the descent from either of these early townsmen.

John Moulton came from Hampton, N. H., and was settled on Blue Point as early as 1680. *Daniel Moulton* was one of the most prominent of the townsmen under the second settle-

ment. The name has been transmitted in the town from 1680, or earlier, up to the present time.

Robert Munson settled at Dunstan in 1726 on the Milliken estate. He had two sons, Stephen and Joseph; the former died in 1751, and the latter removed to Machias in 1765.

William Newbury was one of the original proprietors of the town in 1720, and a famous hunter. As proprietor he had granted to him 100 acres of land on Pine Point, where he resided. The South East extremity of Pine Point is called "Newbury's Point" from this hunter. None of the name are at present inhabitants of the town

Morris O'Brien, an emigrant to this town from Cork, Ireland, arrived here about 1740. While a resident here he had a tailor's shop at Dunstan on the South corner of the Landing road. In 1765 he removed to Machias with his two sons then of age, Gideon and Jeremiah, and four minor children, John, William, Dennis and Joseph.

Joseph and Jonathan Pillsbury. These brothers came to Scarborough from Newbury, Mass., late in the last century. Jonathan died some years since, but Joseph is yet living (1852) at the advanced age of *ninety-eight* years. He did good service in the Revolutionary War, and is now the only pensioner left in the town. He retains his faculties almost perfect, and is a truly venerable specimen of those Revolutionary patriots, of whom so few are now left to tell the story of their struggle for liberty. William Pillsbury, the ancestor of our townsmen of this name, was from Staffordshire, Eng., and died in Newbury, June 19th, 1686.*

* Coffin's Newbury.

Aaron Plummer, probably the son of Joseph Plummer, Jr. of Newbury, and the great-grandson of Francis Plummer the first of the name in Newbury,* came to this town soon after the organization in 1720. He lived near the Nonsuch on the farm afterwards occupied by John Jones. His sons Moses and William also lived here. Moses came about 1730, and was living here in 1783. The father died about 1755.

Timothy Prout. This gentleman was descended from one of the oldest and most respectable families in Boston. In 1728 he purchased the Cammock Patent at Black Point of the heirs of Capt. Scottow, and during his residence here was highly esteemed by all his fellow townsmen. His wife was Lydia, daughter of Maj. Thos. Savage, a son-in-law of Capt. Scottow. His children, born between 1718 and 1728, were *Lydia, Ebenezer, Timothy, Joseph, Mary* and *Elizabeth*. Of these, Ebenezer and Joseph became residents of this town, and Mary married Capt. Alex. Kirkwood; the others lived in Boston. Timothy, the father, died here April 5th, 1768. Joseph Prout lived upon the Neck which still bears the family name.†

David Ring. This name appears on the Records amongst those of the sixteen original members of Black Point Church. This fixes his settlement here prior to 1728. He was famous in his day as the host of the Inn at Black Point, the favorite resort of such lovers of good fare, and the quiet enjoyment of it, as lived in the neighborhood, especially in Falmouth. The

* Coffin's Newbury.

† Amongst the members of the Old South Chh. 1740 are Timoty Prout, Jr., Lydia P., and Mary P. In a "plan of the lower floor of the Old South Meeting House in 1730," the "Governor" has the pew next the front door on the left hand, and "Prout" the pew on the right hand.

record of one of the many "good times" had there, is worth copying here, not less on account of the character of the persons concerned, than of the result of the frolic. In Smith's Journal under date of Feb. 4th, 1763, we find: "Wednesday Morning, *Brigadier Preble, Col. Waldo, Capt. Ross, Doct. Coffin, Nathl. Moody*, and their wives' and Tate,* eleven in all, set out on a frolic to *Ring's* and are not yet got back, nor like to be, the roads being not passable." On the 9th he writes: "We are everywhere shut up: people are discouraged making paths—They say there is 5 feet of snow upon a level, but it is mountainously drifted on the clear ground. It is a melancholy time, *near a famine for bread.*" "11th. Our frolickers returned from Black Point, having been gone *just ten days*. They got homeward as far as Long Creek last night, and with vast difficulty and expense reached home." Ring's tavern was on the corner opposite the old meeting house, just where the road to the Clay Pit meets the highway. The particulars of this memorable frolic are thus related by another: "Immediately upon the arrival of the 'Frolickers,' invitations were dispatched to all the Black Point gentry, and the house was filled to overflowing. Time passed so agreeably that no one mentioned a separation until five feet of snow had made a retreat impossible; and the festival which originated in choice was continued from necessity. The party, however, were not disposed to submit with a bad grace, and for *eight successive days*, the sabbath alone excepted, the howlings of the storm without were answered only by peals of laughter that indicated a more boisterous storm of merriment within. 'Mine host' alone was in trouble. If, as Father Smith says, it was 'near a famine for bread' throughout this section of the country, it is not to be wondered at that Mr. Ring's larder, subjected to such an unusual draught, at length became quite exhausted. From

* All of Falmouth.

garret to cellar the house was rummaged till the last article of food was consumed ; and a company of men was at last sent on snow-shoes to Falmouth to bring out fresh supplies. Some of our octogenarians remember well the account of that week's campaign, as they received it from the lips of their parents who were present ; and if there have ever occurred eight days in the history of the town when Sir John Falstaff would have relished a stay here, they were these eight in February 1763."

Ebenezer Sevey settled upon Blue Point in 1717. He and Thos. Sevey, who appears to have been his brother, were present at the first meeting of the town proprietors in 1720. Thomas settled here about the same time with Ebenezer. Joseph Sevey was one of the emigrants to Machias in 1765, and was followed by George Sevey. This family was from the vicinity of Portsmouth, where Wm. Sevey settled in the employ of Capt. Mason about 1634.

David Sawyer was an inhabitant previous to 1728, when he took part in the organization of the Black Point Church.

Edward Skillins became an inhabitant of the town about 1740. The family here was descended from John Skillins of Falmouth, 1651, whose widow removed with her family to Piscataqua about 1688.

Robert Southgate was born in Leicester, Mass. Oct. 26, 1741, and removed to this town June 29th, 1771. He came here on horseback, carrying with him his worldly possessions in a pair of saddle-bags, and commenced practice as a physician. His excellent natural abilities, with the aid of untiring perseverance and industry, enabled him to become an honored and useful citizen. The following, written soon after Dr. South-

gate's death by one who knew him intimately for more than 30 years, is a truthful sketch of his life and character. "The late Hon. Robert Southgate was distinguished for acute and discriminating intellectual powers. He originated in Leicester, Mass., and established himself here before the Revolution as a physician. In this profession he stood preëminent, but he relinquished the practice at the close of the last century, being then appointed Judge of the Court of Common Pleas; and although not bred a lawyer, but self-educated, he honored and dignified the office by his good sound sense, and was highly esteemed both by the bar and the public. He was a man simple and plain in his manners, of easy access, social in interview but rather severely laborious in his life. No individual in town ever performed more labor in the same period of time, or made greater improvements in husbandry than Judge Southgate. Agriculture was his delight. Few of his day better understood the adaptation of seeds to soils. Independent in property, he still devoted himself to all the duties of a practical farmer even in old age. He was consulted by the inhabitants in all their difficulties both public and private, who always found his responses faithful and true. His advice, always gratuitously bestowed, saved them hundreds of vexatious law-suits. Hence the remark became proverbial, that no lawyer could live by his profession in Scarborough while Judge Southgate survived. In one point of view perhaps he stood without a parallel, for he held a commission as Justice of the Peace nearly forty years, and no case, of the many decided by him, was ever known to be tried at a higher court. Having survived his wife, and eleven of twelve children, nine of whom lived to years of maturity, he closed his earthly career Nov. 2d, 1833, literally worn down with the weight and toil of *ninety-two* long but useful years. Scarborough may never see his like again."*

* From MS notes of the late Rev. Nathan Tilton.

William Tompson. We have already had occasion to notice the Rev. Wm. Tompson, the first of the name resident here. His eldest son was the Hon. Wm. Tompson, the excellent Chief Justice of the Court of Sessions for Cumberland Co. He was born in this town May 25, 1730, and died Feb. 1st, 1807. "If a meek and quiet spirit, if social and domestic virtues, if a deportment which gains the esteem of one's neighbors, if good sense and impartial justice, if integrity and uprightness, if piety and devotion, in a word, if the pure principles of the Christian religion are valuable traits in the character of a man, that of Justice Tompson was truly estimable."* The other children of the Rev. W. Tompson were Anna, married Joseph Gerrish of Kittery, and John minister at Standish, and afterwards at Berwick.

Paul Thompson lived at Blue Point as early as 1727, and, as nearly as we can ascertain, was the son of John Thompson of Kittery. In 1735 he bought a part of the Foxwell estate of Joseph Poak, who had received it of the Foxwell heirs. John Thompson, a brother or son of Paul, was an inhabitant of the town in 1748. The noted Brigadier Thompson of Brunswick was a native of this town, and a member of this family.

James Tyler came from Cape Porpoise (Arundel,) and settled on Blue Point in 1718. He died here in 1749, leaving four children, Abraham, Royal, Dorothy and Abigail. Capt. Abraham Tyler, the eldest son, was living in Andover, Mass., previous to the death of his father, but soon after that event settled in this town, and spent here the remainder of his long and useful life. He was the last ferryman at Blue Point, and for three years a soldier in the Revolution. Royal also lived

* Obituary notice.

and died at Blue Point. None of the family are now living in the town.

Elliot Vaughan removed to Scarborough from Portsmouth in 1742. He was the son of Lieut. Gov. George Vaughan of Portsmouth, and had commanded a ship in the London trade; but becoming dissatisfied with a sailor's life he abandoned it soon before his removal hither. He inherited a valuable farm near Dunstan from Robert Elliot his grandfather. In 1754 he returned with his family to Portsmouth. He left two sons, William and George. William afterwards resided here, and was one of the Selectmen for 1777. This family was of Welsh origin; and our townsman Elliot Vaughan was great grandson of the first of the name who emigrated to this country.

Walter Warren removed from Portsmouth to this town in 1750. He had sons *George*, b. 1750, *William Cotton*, b. 1752, *Daniel*, b. 1755, *Nathaniel*, b. 1757, and *Peter*, b. 1758.

Joseph Waterhouse was the son of Joseph W., of Portsmouth who emigrated from England early in the last century. Joseph the son, who came to this town about 1730, was a shoemaker, and lived at the foot of Scottow's Hill, upon the farm now held by one of his descendants. The late Nathaniel Waterhouse was his seventh son. The descendants of this settler are very numerous and respectable. Nathaniel, who was living in 1842 at the advanced age of 86, had at that time 134 descendants, of whom many yet remain here.

William Watson, who lived in 1748, near the mouth of the Spurrwink on what is now the Higgin's farm, was the first of the name resident here. He was killed by the Indians at

the mouth of Georges River. This family was originally from Ireland, and a portion of it settled in Warren in this State.* Of the sons, John was killed by the Indians, Samuel was lost at sea in 1770, and William lived and died at Warren.

Col. Thomas Westbrook. This distinguished officer was residing here as early as 1719, at which time he, with his lumbermen, and John Milliken Jr. were the only persons living at Dunstan. Mr. Westbrook was at that time a shipper of masts, and continued here a long while in the successful pursuit of that business. In 1728 we find him assisting in the organization of the Black Point Church. His career as a military officer is familiar to the readers of the history of the French and Indian Wars. In 1722 he was appointed Commander in Chief of the Massachusetts forces. His last days were spent in that part of ancient Falmouth which is now the town of *Westbrook*.†

Dr. Nathaniel Winslow removed from Falmouth to Scarborough about 1728. From Parson Smith's Journal it appears that in 1717 "there was only *one house* on Purpooduck side of the water, just built, and inhabited by one Doct. Winslow." His name stands third on the list of the members of the Black Point Church at its organization in 1728; and the second recorded vote of that church is "that Dr. Winslow be desired to provide the elements of the Lord's Table and distribute them at the communion until there be a choice made for the deacon's office." We can learn nothing further respecting him. None of his descendants live in the town.

* See Eaton's "Annals of Warren."

† For further notice of Col. W., see Willis Portland, Part 2.

APPENDIX.

A

Delivery of Possession, Cammock's Patent.

These are to certifie that the 23d. of maye 1633 Captayne Walter Neale did, (accordinge to order directed from the president & Counsell of New England) deliver possession unto Captayne Thomas Cammacke of all the lands containyd in a patent granted unto the sayde Thomas Cammacke dated the prime of November 1631 consistinge of fifteene hundred acres—beinge bounded to the Southward with the Baye of Sako, on the westward with blacke point river, to the Eastward with the small brooke called Spurwincke & soe runninge upp one mile from the entrance & on the west side of the sayd Spurwincke & from thence crossinge over with a straight line to the nearest part of the aforesayd black point river is appoynted the Northerne Limits. In testimony wherof I have hereunto subscribed.

Witnesses to the delivery
of the possession—

pr. me JOHN WYNTER.

ABRAHAM SHURT.

The mke of

RICHARD X SMYTH.

WA : NEALE.

This Transcript of poss
ession delivery Entered into
the new booke of ReCords for
ye County of Yorke pa : 84 thus
22 Septembr : 1670 : pr.

EDW : RISHWORTH

ReCor .

B

Cammock's Deed of Black Point Patent &c. to Jocelyn.

Know all men by these psents that I Tho: Cammock of Black point, In the Province of Main in New England in America, Gentl. for diverse good Causes & Considerations mee thereunto especially moving, as allso for the sum of fifty pounds sterling to me in hand pd before the insealing & Delivering of this psent deed, do at this Time declare my last will and Testament, wherein next after my Soule bequeathed in the Handes of Allmighty God my Saviour and Redeemer, I do freely and for the Causes abovesd, give and bequeath all my Land at Black pt. aforesd. together with all my buildings, Goods Cattle & chattells & all other my psonall estate whatsoever, unto my well beloved friend Henry Jocelyn Esq, to be by him possessed immediately after my decease out of this life & after ye decease of Margaret Cammock my now wife, & from thenceforth to be his own Lands & Goods forever to him, his heires and Assignes, according to the true intent aud meaning of these psents, for which Cause I the sd Thomas Cammock have appointed this my last will to be made my deed irrevokable, & for the true Performance hereof do bind myselfe and my wife Margaret in the sum of one hundred pounds sterling unto the sd Henry Jocelin his heires & Assignes. Provided allways that I Tho. Cammock do reserve only out of this my deed of Gift five hundred Acres of sd. Land to bestow at my pleasure, the Boundes thereof to begin at the River of Spurwinck, & so taking the Breadth thereof up the sd. River, so far as the Boundes of my Pattent goeth, & so towards Blackpoint till five hundred Acres be ended, & allso all my part of Cowes & Oather Cattell, now in my possession, & for all the rest of my Lands & goods aforesd. I do again upon mature deliberation bestow at the time aforesd, upon the sd. Henry Jocelin, whom I do by this psent deed declare to be my Heir of all my Lands & Goods, except before expected, in this psent deed. In wittnesse whereof I the sd Tho. Cammock, with the free Consent of Margaret my wife have caused this psent writing to be my Act & deed & have thereunto subscribed both our Handes & seales, this 2d day of Septembr. 1640.

Sealed & delivered with one Bason
of Alchimy in leiu of all the
rest the property of which was
altered in the presence of us,

GEORGE CLEEVES

RICHARD TUCKER.

THOMAS CAMMOCK &
a seall.

MARGARET CAMMOCK &
a seall.

vera Copia Compared
with the ReCord this 20th
day of Septembr. 1680. Pr.
EDW · RISHWORTH ReCor.

Saco in the Province of Main—

At a Court houlden here ye 18th of Octobr: 1643. Whereas Capt. Tho Cammock of Black pt Gentl: lately dyed in the West Indies having, by a certain writing under his hands and seall (being both his Will and deed Irrevokable) bearing date the 2d of Septembr: 1640 for the consideration therein expressed, given unto Henry Jocelin Esquire all his Lands—&c. as in & by the sd Deed more at large it doth and may appear, And whereas the sd Tho. Cammock made no other will (that we know) for the disposing of the Lands & Goods reserved out of the sd deed, an Inventory whereof is hereunto annexed, Wee therefore the Assistants of this Province do hereby Ordaine the aforesaid Margarette his wife to be Administratrix of ye sd Lands & Goods, & to pay the Debts of ye sd Tho Cammock (if any be) so far as the sd Lands & Goods shall extend, to every one proportionally, & if any things remaine the Debts being pd the sd remaindure to come to the Administratrix, & for confirmation hereof, we have set to our hands & the seall of this Province, the day & year first above written.

a [P. M.] seale.

RICH. VINES Dep Canc.

ROGER GARDE Recordr:

A copy of an Inventory of such Landes & Goods & chattells as Capt. Tho. Cammock was possessed of in his own right at the Time of his death, taken & prized by Richard Foxwell & Willm: Smith ye 14th day of Octobr. 1643.

Imprimis 500 Acres of Land at Blackpt valued at—£30: 00: 00

Item, all his part of Cowes & other

Cattell viz one Yoake of Oxen	. . .	13: 00: 00:
It. more 2 Cowes	. . .	9: 00: 00:
It. more one Yearling heifer	. . .	2: 10: 00:
It. more one heiffer calf	. . .	1: 10: 00:

 £56. 00: 00.

Vera Copia

RICH. VINES Dep. Cauc.

ROGER GARDE Recordr:

 C
Lease—Jocelyn to Bartlett.—1663.

This Indenture made ye 20th day of May 1663 & in the 15th yeare of ye Reigne of our Souvereigne Lord Charles ye 2nd betweene Henry Jocelyn of black point of ye one pty & George Bartlett fisherman of ye other pty

witnesseth yt ye sd Henry Jocelyn for himself his heires (&c.) doth give, bargain sell and confirme unto ye sd George Bartlett his heires forever fifty acres of land being upland and marsh lying & being neare ye westerne side of Spurwink River & within ye pattend of ye sd Jocelyn, bounded as followth: The Marsh to begin on ye easterne side of the Creeke yt runs into Spurwinck River up to ye plantn: yt formerly Andrew Heiffer deceased dwelt, & from thence by ye upland Eastward to ye Creeke yt bounds Samu-ell Oakemans Marsh, also an acre & halfe of upland meddowe formerly occupied by the sd Heiffer; likewise all yt upland abutting on ye sd marsh being bounded to ye Eastward with ye Swampe yt parts Samu-ell Oakeman's upland from it, & to ye Westward with ye aforesd Creeke yt runs up to ye place where ye sd Heiffer dwelt & from thence to ye marked trees & Rivulet that is the bounds of Elinor Jackson & her sonn John runing west north west so farr back into ye woodds until ye sd fifty acres be compleated & ended — — — also to have free Comming within the sd pattend in such land as is or shall be unfenced; to have & hold all & singuler ye pmisses herein specified to him ye sd George Bartlett his heires (&c.) of & from ye sd Henry Jocelyn his heires (&c.) — — forever in free & comon lottage, yielding & paying upon ye entrye hereof fifty shillings in money, and annually hereafter three daies worke forever to ye sd Jocelyn his heires or Assignes, yt is to say two daies worke in harvest or seede time, & one day in cuttinge of wood against ye feast of Christmas if it be lawfully demanded, & for not performance of ye same it shall be lawfull for ye sd Jocelyn his heires &c. to enter upon ye pmisses & distrayne, & ye distresse so taken to carry away & appraise ye same by 2 sworne men & pay himself his heires &c ye sd Rent & charge & deliver ye overplus of sd distresse unto ye owner thereof. To confirme the truth hereof ye pties abovesd have interchagneably set to their hands & seales ye day & yeare above written.

Witnesses

Signed sealed in the
presence of

The marke of GEORGE (B) BARTLETT,

} PEYTON COOKE
ye marke HENRY — ELLKINS
the marke of Jo: (WI) WARWICK

D

President Danforth's Deed of Scarborough, 1684.

This Indenture made the Twenty sixth day of July Anno Dom. One thousand six hundred eighty and four and in the thirty sixth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord Charles the Second by the Grace of God of England Scotlaud France and Ireland, King Defender of the Faith &c.

Between Thomas Danforth Esq president of his majesties province of Maine in New England, on the one party, and Capt. Joshua Scottow, Mr. Walter Gendall, Richard Honeywell, William Burr ridge, Andrew Brown, Ambrose Boaden, and John Tenney, Trustees on the behalf and for the sole use and Benefit of the Inhabitants of the Town of Scarborough within the above named province of Mayne on the other party. Witnesseth [that whereas the above named Thomas Danforth by the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Colony in New England the now Lord Proprietors of the above named province of Mayne, at a General Assembly held at Boston on the Eleventh day of May 1621 is fully authorized and empowered to make Legal Confirmation unto the Inhabitants of the said Province of Mayne of all their Lands or proprietys to them justly belonging or appertaining within the Limits or Bounds of said province. Now, know all men by these presents that the said Thomas Danforth pursuant to the trust in him reposed, and power to him given, as aforesaid, by and on the behalf of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Colony aforesaid, hath given, granted and confirmed, and by these presents doth fully, clearly, and absolutely, give, grant and confirm unto the above named Capt Joshua Scottow, Mr. Walter Gendall, Richard Honeywell, William Burr ridge, Andrew Brown, Ambrose Boaden, and John Tenney, Trustees as above expressed, all that tract or parcell of Land within the Township of Scarborough in said Province according to the Bounds and Limits of said Township to them formerly granted by Sir Ferdinando Gorges Knight, or by any of his agents or by the General Assembly of the Massachusetts with all priviledges and appurtenances to the same appertaining or in any wise belonging, all Royalties reserved to his Majesty by the Charter granted to Sir Ferdinando Gorges Knight, as also those by said Charter given to the said Ferdinando Gorges Knight, his heirs and assigns together with the Rivers, Streams, and Coves, contained within the limits or bounds of said Township always to be excepted and reserved, To have and to hold all the abovesaid tract of land by these presents granted and confirmed be the same more or less with all the priviledges and appurtenances to the same appertaining or in any wise belonging (excepting as is above excepted and reserved) to them the said Capt. Joshua Scottow, Mr. Walter Gendall, Richard Honeywell, William Burr ridge, Andrew Brown, Ambrose Boaden, and John Tenny as Trustees abovesaid forever to the only proper use and behoof of the Inhabitants of the said Town that now are, and to them that shall there survive and succeed from time to time and forevermore hereafter. And the above named Thomas Danforth for and on the behalf of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Colony, and forthir successors and assigns doth further covenant, promise, and grant to and with the above named Capt. Joshua Scottow, Mr. Walter Gendall, Richard

Honeywell, William Burridge, Andrew Brown, Ambrose Boaden, and John Tenny, their heirs and assigns Trustees as above expressed that they the said Capt. Joshua Scottow, Walter Gendall, Richard Honeywell, William Burridge, Andrew Brown, Ambrose Boaden, and John Tenny, shall and may at all times, and from time to time forever hereafter peaceably and quietly have, hold, occupy and enjoy all the above given and granted premises, without the let, denial, or contradiction of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Colony, or of any other person or persons whatsoever claiming and having any lawful right, title, or interest therein, or in any part or parcel thereof, thereby, from, or under them, the said Governor and Company or by any of their assigns. They the above named Inhabitants of the said Town of Scarborough for the time being, and in like manner that shall there be from time to time forever hereafter yielding and paying in consideration thereof to the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Colony, or to the president of the said Province of Mayne by them authorized and impowered for the time being, or to other their agent and lawful assignee or assignees, the Quit Rent to the said Governor and Company due and belonging according to the proposal made and mutually agreed upon at the General Assembly held in the above said province at York June 1681, Viz. That they the above named Inhabitants of the said Town of Scarborough for the time being, and in like manner that shall there be from time to time forever hereafter as an acknowledgment of said Ferdinando Gorges and his Assigns right to soyle and Government do pay twelve pence for every family whose single Country Rate is not above two shillings, and for all that exceed the sum of two shillings in a single rate to pay three shillings per family annually in money to the Treasurer of the said Province for the use of the Chief Proprietors thereof. and in case of omission or neglect on the part and behalf of the said Inhabitants to make full payment annually in manner as above expressed, and hath been mutually concerted and agreed unto, it shall then be lawful for the said president of the said Province for the time being, or for other the agent or agents, assignee or assignees of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Colony to levy and make distress upon the estates of any of the Inhabitants for the time being within the limits and bounds of the said Township, as well for said Quit Rent as also for all costs and charges occuring and arising upon the same. And the estates so levied and distrained to bear, drive, or carry away with so much as it shall cost to convey the same to the Treasurer of the Province for the time being, or to such place as he shall order and appoint. In witness whereof the parties above named to these present Indentures have interchangeably put their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

[A] THOMAS DANFORTH,
[Seal] Presidt;

{ Signed, Sealed and Delivered in presence of
us—JOHN HAYWARD
ELIAZER MOODY. (Noty. Pub.

E

Deposition of Peter Bass Concerning Walter Gendall.

The deposition of Peter Bass aged about 27 years—Being examined maketh oath yt hee heard the same for substance yt Phyneas Hull and Benjn. Barnard testifyeth two, onely hee remembreth not that Walter Gyndall sayd yt ye Indeans at Wells were as numerous as trees and stumpes, but Gyndall tould this deponent that there were one thousand Indeans double armed about the Town, and five hundred french ready to backe them when they had Occasion, and yrfore would Advise them to surrender there Garrisons, for hee looked at his condition better then ours, for Mogg sayd if they would not resigne yr Garrisons, hee would ly here this Moenth but hee would have ye Town, and the sayd Gyndall further sayd that hee and those 11 Indeans Mogg and ye rest, lay within shot of Joseph Storer's Garrison, that night before they came to demand Fran: Littlefields, and the sayd Indeans were soe sleepy in the morneing, that hee had much adoe to wake ym, and was forced to Ricke them rounde before hee could do it, and afterwards wñ the sunn was up they came into ye Town, and did mischeefe, and demanded our Garrisons, and further sayth not.

Taken upon oath this 3d day of March 1676 :
before mee Edw. Rishworth Asso'te.

F

Mr. Prout and Scarborough Soldiers 1747—49.

Boston April 17, 1747.

MR. JOSEPH PROUT,

Sir—These serve to enclose an Indent. for sundry provisions for Mr Johnson, for the Men intended down to guard the Frontiers; they are to be the Canada Men which have been provided with arms and ammunition already at the Country's cost. The meat you are to deliver out in the Mess pieces according to the Resolves of the General Assembly, being the present needful,

from yr Humble Servt.

TO MR. JOSEPH PROUT
Comissary at
Scarboro'

JO WHEELWRIGHT
Comissary Genl. of His
Majesty's Province of Mass. Bay

December 7th 1748.

MR. JOSEPH PROUT,

By Mr Libbee you have an Indent for provisions for the men retained in the service this winter, being the needful from Yours &c.

JNO WHEELWRIGHT.

Accompanying this was 5 hhds Bread, 8 bbls Pork, 1 bbl Peas, 1 bbl Rum. The correspondence commenced with the letter first copied continued until 1749, when as it appears from the subjoined Receipt the soldiers were withdrawn.

"SCARBOROUGH March 7th 1749.

Then rec'd of Jos. Prout upon the Province account, which I promise to deliver to John Wheelwright Esq. at I. W.) Boston : vizt. one cask of clothing : contents—13 Large Coats, 14 Jackits, 7 pr of Britches, 12 Shirts, 10 pr stockings, 7 pr Mens Shoes, marked as in the Margin—the danger of the sea excepted.

DAVID LIBBY."

Through the whole two years the supplies were by Capts. David Libby, and Elias Banks of the schooner "Willing Mind" of Scarboro'. When the soldiers started on the expedition in March 1748 the following supplies were afforded by Mr Prout.

"SCARBORO' March 28 1748.

Rec'd of John Libby on the acc't of Mr. Joseph Prout, six Hhds Bread, 8 bbls Pork, one tierce of Rum, 20 Blanketts, 10 Kettles, 20 Coats, 20 Jackits, 20 pr Britches, 20 pr Shoes, 20 pr. Stockings, 40 Shirts, 1 gall. Pot, 1 half pt do., 1 gill do., 1-2 bbl of powder, 1 bag bullets, & 200 flints—per me

GOVING FULTON."

"March 2, 1748, Jos : Waterhouse's Bill for Leather and *Work done for the Country*, vizt.

	£.	s.	d.
To leather straps and strings for Tomas Foss	0.	14.	0.
To a pr moksens for tomas Foss and strings	1.	16.	0.
To a pr moksens for Mr. Roberts	1.	16.	0.
To 2 leather strings & leather to mend snow shoes for <i>tira haues</i>	1.	0.	0.
To part making a pr snow shoes	1.	0.	0.
and leather &c by James Libby	0.	10.	0.
To leather for Walter Foss belt & two straps	0.	10.	0.
	6.	6.	0.

Foss, Roberts and Haines, enlisted from Scarborough. Besides the company from S. whose names we have given, there was another quartered here

in 1748 under Capt. Joseph Frye, and Lieut. John Wright. Of the 28 in this company only five or six were townsmen of Scarborough.

G

Richard King's Address to the Freeman of Scarborough 1769.

To the freeholders and others of the Town of Scarborough Who have a Right by Charter to give their voets for a Representative in the General Assembly of the first British Province in America.

Gentlemen, the King's Writ for that Purpose now calls upon us, amon the other towns of the Province, to give our aid at a time when the Rights of the Crown, and the Libertys of the subject, are the grand matters in Debate, and the most interesting Objects of attention both in Great Britain and her dominions in America. We are now to give aid to an Assembly, whose lott it is to take the Lead for her sister Colonies, on whose wise, firm and prudent conduct the Liberties of Millions may hereafter depend; and that too at a time when a Rod of Iron is stretched forth over us in the Capitol of the Province. Universal History can scarce furnish an Instance wherein any State had a louder call to exertion than this Province is under at this day. *Would to God that every town could furnish a Cato to serve our sinking country*, all that can be expected of us is but to lay aside every family, private and secret prejudice, and instead of enquiring, as luxurious Princes of old, who is the man we delight to honour, let our enquiry be for a faithful, upright man, who best understands the constitution of the British Government, the Rights of the Crown, her Charters and Compacts with her Colonies, and our natural rights as men; a man fearing God by whom Kings reign; that will with equal firmness render to the King the rights of the King, and nobly withstand any attempts, even of the King's servants however dignified, that have a manifest tendency to enslave the subjects of the King. The Person that has your votes this year is to consider himself as acting for millions now on the stage, and generations unborn; a thought sufficient to raise any man above private or selfish views. Nevertheless let your Instructions be given him for the rule of his conduct.

{ SCARBOROUGH May ye 13th
 { 1769.

A FREEMAN.

ARTICLE II.

HISTORY OF THE
BUNKER HILL MONUMENT.

BY PROFESSOR PACKARD
OF BOWDOIN COLLEGE.

HISTORY OF THE BUNKER HILL MONUMENT.

Soon after the celebration in honor of the completion of Bunker Hill Monument, it occurred to the writer, that a faithful record of this enterprise might possess value in future years, and that he would attempt the work with a view to the presentation of the facts here narrated. It may be due to others as well as himself, to declare, that no suggestion from any quarter prompted this effort. What he has done has been done throughout, wholly at his own instance. He has taken pains to obtain precise and accurate information, and has had access to sources of the highest authority, which in a few years may be wholly beyond the reach of any who may be curious enough to investigate the matters here contained.

BRUNSWICK, ME. MAY, 1852.

ALPHEUS S. PACKARD.

HISTORY.

THE writer proposes to give a brief history of the Monument on Bunker Hill. He thinks it desirable to record for future generations a true statement of the origin and progress of one of the most imposing monuments of modern times; of the sources from whence the means of erecting it were obtained; of the embarrassments which impeded or interrupted the work; and to secure the remembrance of those who were most efficient and laborious in an enterprise so honorable to them and to our common country. It is thought, that hereafter it may be a matter of curiosity to know the facts here stated. What makes the subject especially interesting is, that this noble structure was reared by voluntary contributions, with the exception only of a comparatively small amount granted for the purpose by the Legislature of Massachusetts; and when completed, the projectors and builders had no more property in it than any other citizens of the State. Moreover the accomplishment of the enterprise was owing mainly to the energy and munificence of a few, whose names, although in this matter they were as far from selfish or private aims as men can be, are not known as they ought to be. The statements here made have been obtained from the records of the Standing and Building Committees of the Bunker Hill Association, from printed documents issued under the sanction of the Association, from the "History of the Siege of Boston," a valuable work recently published

by Richard Frothingham, Jr. Esq., and from private sources of undoubted authority, to which the public could not have access.

We have the authority of Hon. Edward Everett for affirming, that the idea of such a monument was first conceived by William Tudor Esq. It is due to another gentleman of well known public spirit and who, as will be seen, was an active and efficient promoter of the enterprise, to state, that in April 1822 the following spirited paragraph appeared in the Boston Patriot, which is worthy of a place in this record, as being the first effort to call public attention to the object.

“FOR THE BOSTON PATRIOT.

BUNKER HILL.

A lot of ground, including the monument erected to the memory of Gen. Warren, and the remains of the ‘Breast Work,’ thrown up on the eve of the Battle fought on that spot on the 17 of June 1775, is advertised to be sold at auction the first day of May.

As a site so memorable should not be covered with buildings, it is hoped, that some patriotic gentlemen of wealth in the town of Charlestown will purchase this American Marathon and have it enclosed with a stone or iron fence, to be held sacred, as the spot where the defenders of the Republic first met the shock of battle “in times which tried men’s souls.”

No stranger from other States visits this part of the union who does not wish to stand where fought the Champions of Liberty. Future generations will hold that blood-stained height in proud remembrance. There repose the ashes of the brave ; there was planted the Tree of Liberty. Let not the glorious sepulchre of our Revolutionary warriors be profaned.”

Within a day or two after this paragraph appeared, Mr. Tudor, having ascertained from the Editor, that the writer was

Gen. H. A. S. Dearborn, called on him, and after referring to the article which had attracted his notice, consulted him on the measures which should be adopted to secure the land. An interest was soon excited in the minds of several gentlemen, and as the result of their conference on the expediency of securing the land as an area for a monument to commemorate the great event of which it was the theatre, Dr. J. C. Warren of Boston purchased the land in Nov. 1822 and held it until the Monument Association, subsequently formed, took it from his hands. It is honorable to Boston and to that generation, that many were ready to coöperate by more than good words and kind wishes in what was manifestly to prove an arduous and protracted labor. Several meetings of those interested in the project were held at Dr. Warren's house. A breakfast party of gentlemen consisting among others of Hon. Daniel Webster, Professor Ticknor, Dr. John C. Warren, Hon. William Sullivan, Hon. George Blake and William Tudor, Esq. assembled at the house of Col. Perkins, and then visited the land ground, and consulted on the subject of a monument. It was to this occasion, it is presumed, that Mr. Webster refers in his address at the completion of the monument when he remarks; that the first measures towards erecting the monument were adopted in the house of Thomas H. Perkins, Esq., where the projectors of the scheme assembled for the purpose. Soon after, a Circular dated May 10, 1823, signed by Messrs. Webster, William Tudor and Theodore Lyman, Jr., called the first public meeting of those friendly to the object, which was held at the Merchant's Exchange, when measures to obtain an act of Incorporation were adopted.

ORGANIZATION &c.

The following twenty-four individuals were incorporated under

the name of "The Bunker Hill Monument Association," "for the construction of a monument in Charlestown to perpetuate the memory of the early events of the American Revolution;" Joseph Story, Jesse Putman, Daniel Webster, Edward Everett, Samuel D. Harris, Samuel Swett, Theodore Lyman, Jr., Stephen Gorham, Jr., Thomas H. Perkins, William Tudor, Henry A. S. Dearborn, Benjamin Gorham, Franklin Dexter, William Sullivan, George Ticknor, Charles R. Codman, Warren Dutton, Isaac P. Davis, Thomas Harris, Seth Knowles, Benjamin Welles, John C. Warren, George Blake and Francis C. Gray. The act bears date June 7, 1823. By a subsequent act, the monument, on its completion, with the land on which it stands and its appurtenances, was to be assigned and transferred to the Commonwealth, on condition, that the State shall keep the monument and its appurtenances in good repair forever.

At a meeting, June 17, 1823, the Association made choice of Gov. Brooks for President. A by-law of the Association, passed at this meeting, requires a Board of thirteen Directors to be chosen at the annual meetings of the Corporation, who were to have the general control of the funds and the general direction of the affairs of the association. An additional by-law, June 19, increased the number of this Board to twenty-five, and by another, passed June 1825, the Directors were made responsible for any expenditure beyond the amount of funds actually collected for the purpose of building the monument.

WAYS AND MEANS, &c.

It may well be supposed, that much preliminary labor, of which the public knew little or nothing and which was done by a few individuals, was required before the structure could be commenced.

The first object was to awaken general interest in a project

which was to depend for its accomplishment mainly, if not entirely, on private contributions. The Directors accordingly, July 19, 1823, were empowered to elect Honorary members of the Association. At the same meeting all settled clergymen of New England were chosen honorary members. It was also voted, that all persons subscribing five dollars to the object should thereby become members; and that those subscribing a less sum than five dollars and not less than one, should have their names recorded in a manuscript prepared for the purpose; measures, which, it would seem, addressed the principle of patriotism in every New England bosom and were adapted to make the enterprise one of general concern. A year, however, passed before this appeal to the public was effectually made. At a meeting of the Directors, July 1824, a standing Committee of five was constituted to exercise the powers of the Directors in managing the affairs of the association, composed of the following gentlemen; Gen. H. A. S. Dearborn, Dr. John C. Warren. Hon. Edward Everett, George Blake Esq. and Samuel D. Harris Esq. This Committee, at their second meeting, August 9, took the first steps towards the vigorous prosecution of the enterprise in the following plan of proceedings, reported by Dr. Warren, for promoting the object of the association.

"1. That a letter explaining the object of the association be prepared and circulated among the members of the community able to promote its design by their aid or interest.

2. That a letter be addressed to the town of Charlestown requesting their coöperation and aid.

3. That a public appeal be made in the Newspapers upon the subject.

4. That letters be addressed to the young men of Boston, Charlestown and Salem, to engage their interest in the cause.

5. That Committees be appointed in the said meetings of the young men to procure subscriptions.

6. That an enlarged drawing of the Plan of the Monument be exhibited in conspicuous public places.

7. That subscription books be opened for different sums in different columns or pages ; as for sums of 5, 10 and to 500, and above 500 dollars.

8. That no effort be spared to forward the work in such a manner, that the corner stone of the monument may be laid June, 17, 1825."

Mr. Everett was requested to prepare a letter according to the first article, and Gen. Dearborn, to address a letter to the town of Charlestown agreeably to the second.

In pursuance of this general scheme a circular, subscribed by all the Directors, was sent to a large number of individuals throughout New England and the other States. Certain individuals were particularly addressed throughout the country and Americans residing in London and Paris, and their patronage was solicited for the object. Subscription books were prepared for general circulation in the more considerable towns, and letters were sent to gentlemen in other States, who were corresponding members of the association, requesting them to take charge of procuring subscriptions in their several States. Ward committees were appointed in Boston for the purpose of raising subscriptions. A large number of gentlemen of influence and distinction throughout New England were elected Associates, among whom were the members of the Senate and House of Representatives of Massachusetts, the Governors, Lieutenant Governors and Councilors of the several New England States, and special meetings of the Associates were recommended to be held in the leading towns. A Diploma with a vignette was prepared as a certificate of membership for such as subscribed the requisite sum. The clergymen of the Commonwealth were addressed by letter and requested to call the attention of their people to the object on the day of the Annual Thanksgiving.

The Subscription Books, two hundred in number, were returned, April, 1825 ; by which it appeared, that about 2500 individuals had subscribed sums varying from 5 to 500 dollars. To these were added the funds of the Washington Benevolent

Society, and the State Grant, March 1827, from which last the association received 6000 dollars. The sum total received from these sources was about \$65,000.

Three acres only were secured at the outset through the instrumentality of Dr. Warren. In consequence of difficulties connected with the purchase of additional land, an Act of the Legislature, Feb. 1825, was obtained, empowering the Association to take and appropriate land which might be needed, not exceeding five acres, with such provisions as are common in such Acts. As an illustration of the embarrassments from which even so noble and patriotic an enterprise was not exempted, it may be stated, that the Committee of the Association and the Proprietors of the land had agreed upon appraisers to appraise the land, all the Proprietors seeming heartily to concur in the wish, that the battle field should be secured by the Association. Each party entered into bonds, with a penalty, to abide by the decision of the appraisers. One of the owners, however, on being applied to for his deed, encouraged the Committee to go on and transact the business with the rest of the owners. After the remaining proprietors had conveyed their respective portions and he was applied to again for his deed, he deliberately paid over the forfeiture agreed upon, \$500, and demanded \$5000 for his land. The Committee were struck dumb; but perceiving, that his design was to take advantage of the urgency of the case and to drive a hard bargain, and reflecting, that a contention at that time might delay the whole enterprise for an indefinite period, they reluctantly paid the ungenerous and exorbitant exaction. The whole amount of land which the Association had now become possessed of was fifteen acres.

LAYING OF THE CORNER STONE.

The necessary arrangements were now made for the ceremony

of laying the Corner Stone. Nothing was omitted to make the occasion as impressive as possible and thus to give an impulse to the enterprise. The day selected for the ceremonial was the fiftieth anniversary of the battle. General Lafayette, at the time the nation's guest, had been invited to be present, and to assist in the ceremony. Many survivors of the Revolution, some of whom shared in the danger and glory of the 17th June, 1775, were to participate in the scenes of the day. Hon. Daniel Webster was to address the assembled multitude. Nothing was wanting to give dignity and interest to the occasion.—Providence smiled by granting a lovely day. All New England was largely represented, and great numbers were present from the other States of the Union. A procession was formed at the State House in Boston at an early hour, agreeably to a Programme, published in the newspapers, and marched to the summit of Bunker Hill in Charlestown. The van, composed of a large military escort in brilliant array, two hundred veterans of the Revolution in barouches, some wearing the equipments of their ancient and honorable service, a large body of the Masonic Fraternity in splendid regalia, an extended line of different societies with their badges and banners, and conspicuous among all, the honored guest of the Nation, General Lafayette, the streets thronged even to the house tops with a joyous multitude, all together presented a spectacle never before witnessed on this Continent. With appropriate solemnities the stone was laid in presence of the vast concourse by the Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, assisted by Hon. D. Webster, President of the Monument Association, and General Lafayette. The procession then moved to a spacious amphitheatre on the northern declivity of the hill to listen to the address of Mr. Webster. The arrangements were all happily devised and successfully executed. The address was in the highest degree worthy of the eminent orator and of the great

event which it commemorated and has become an abiding portion of the literature of our country.

DESIGNS FOR THE MONUMENT.

The corner stone was laid before the plan for the proposed monument was fully matured. An advertisement in the newspapers had offered a premium of one hundred dollars for the best design; and in consequence of this about fifty plans and designs were submitted by architects and men of taste, of which the obelisk and column were the prevailing forms.* Gentlemen of high cultivation and taste urged a design after some model of classical antiquity. The first committee to whom the subject was entrusted consisted of Daniel Webster, Loammi Baldwin, George Ticknor, Gilbert Stewart and Washington Allston, and scarcely could more artistic talent and taste have been found in any five men who might have been selected in the land. Much discussion on the most appropriate form ensued. The Debates in the Board of Directors were distinguished by great ability and extensive learning. At a special meeting, May 19, 1825, the various projects were reduced by vote to the two, of a column and obelisk. A new committee, consisting of H. A. S. Dearborn, Edward Everett, Seth Knowles, S. D. Harris and T. H. Perkins, were appointed to procure designs of both these forms with estimates. This Committee reported June 7; and after a long and animated discussion on the comparative merits of the two plans the question was decided. Of the sixteen directors present, on a

* The distinguished artist, HORATIO GREENOUGH, recently deceased, was then an undergraduate in Harvard College. He sent to the Committee a Design with an Essay, in which he advocated the obelisk with so much power and taste, as to excite the marked attention of the Board. The Design finally adopted was that of Greenough's modified by the taste and judgment of Col. Baldwin.

motion to adopt the column, five voted in the affirmative and eleven, in the negative. The form of the obelisk was then adopted, as being the most simple and imposing, most in accordance with the republican sentiment, and most appropriate to the character of the event to be commemorated. The following gentlemen were then appointed a Committee to report a design; Loammi Baldwin, (whose opinions in favor of the obelisk had been urged with great and convincing force,) George Ticknor, Jacob Bigelow, Samuel Swett and Washington Allston. This Committee reported a design or plan drawn by Solomon Willard, which was adopted, July 5, 1825. It may be stated, that after the decision, and after the work was commenced in earnest, a proposal was made to substitute for the obelisk a large and imposing edifice in gothic style, but the proposal was not entertained.

The design of the monument having been decided, it was found necessary to provide a new and more massive foundation. The stone laid before was deposited in the centre of the new foundation; and the box of deposits, which had been placed within it, is now enclosed in the present corner stone at the North Eastern angle of the structure looking towards the point where the enemy landed on the morning of the battle.

PROGRESS OF THE WORK.

At a meeting of the Directors, Oct. 17, 1825, a Building Committee, consisting of Dr. J. C. Warren, Gen. H. A. S. Dearborn, George Blake, Amos Lawrence and William Sullivan Esqs., was appointed and was constituted "a Standing Committee, with authority to exercise all the powers of the Directors in the management of the affairs of the Association." Their special duty was to commence and prosecute the building of the obelisk, to make the necessary contracts and to superintend the

work, subject in all things and in all respects to the control of the Directors. They were never to exceed the amount appropriated by the Directors, and were to make a quarterly exhibit in writing of their proceedings to the Board of Directors. It should be stated, that a vote establishing such a committee was passed several months, before gentlemen could be found who were willing to undertake the onerous and responsible service which it imposed.

The Building Committee at once made choice of Solomon Willard as their architect and Superintendent, and committed to him the execution of the work in all its details.

The merits of this noble spirited man deserve permanent record. On accepting the office, thus tendered him, he requested permission to discharge the duties of it without compensation ; a request, however, which was not granted, although only a nominal salary was given him of five hundred dollars a year. His zeal and devotion to the work knew no bounds. He walked more than three hundred miles to examine different quarries of stone, and labored incessantly and with skill and judgment possessed by few, with no other compensation than was sufficient to meet his necessary expenses. As an illustration of the spirit of this man, it may be added, that at a subsequent period, the Bunker Hill Ledge, of which we shall soon speak, having become greatly enhanced in value, was sold at a considerable advance to a Company, who paid him one thousand dollars for his share which he had held himself responsible for at the time of the first purchase. A friend proposed to him to lay aside that sum for a time of need ; but he decisively rejected the proposal with the remark : "Do you suppose I would soil my hands by making money out of the Bunker Hill Monument ?" He paid over the thousand dollars as a subscription to the object. Had other men, with much larger means, possessed the same spirit, the Monument would

have been completed at a much earlier period, and without the embarrassments and delays which caused the best friends of the project so much mortification and discomfort.

The Committee on the Design determined only the size of the obelisk, and that, not so much as a question of taste, as one of economy, which they were compelled to regard strictly, on account of the limited amount of funds which they could safely calculate upon. The details, indeed the whole execution of the work, was confided entirely to Mr. Willard, as Architect and Superintendent. Mr. James S. Savage was employed as Builder under Mr. Willard, and on account of his superior skill and fidelity deserves honorable mention. To have secured the services of two such men was of the greatest importance to the success of the undertaking.

After careful examination the Building Committee, under advice of Mr. Willard, purchased, Nov. 1825, four acres of the sienite granite of Quincy, eight miles distant from Boston, which had been already brought into favorable notice as a material for building. The portion then purchased was henceforth called "the Bunker Hill Ledge." The labor of quarrying was commenced at once. The first rail way in the United States was constructed in 1826 for the uses of the Monument Association, although under an entirely distinct organization, and a contract for the transportation of stone from the Ledge to Bunker Hill was authorized, Feb. 1827. The stone was conveyed by railway to the water in Quincy, thence in flat boats, towed by steam vessels, to the wharf in Charlestown, and to the summit of the Hill by teams running on an inclined plane. This mode of transportation, in consequence of the delay incident to a repeated transfer of heavy materials, and of the liability to accident and defacement, was subsequently abandoned, and the materials were conveyed by ox-teams directly from the quarry to the Hill.

All necessary arrangements having been made, the excavation for the the new foundation, which, as has been already stated, was found necessary, was commenced March 1827. Dr. Warren having declined acting as Chairman of the Building Committee, at the meeting of the Directors in June the Committee was constituted as follows: Hon. Thomas H. Perkins, William Sullivan Esq., Gen. Dearborn, Amos Lawrence Esq. and Dr. Warren.

In July the foundation was finished. This part of the structure is twelve feet deep, fifty feet square at the bottom, laid in lime with greatest care, and contains more than 1300 tons of stone and more than 30,000 feet of rough dressing.

In September 1828 the monument had been raised fourteen courses, nearly forty feet, and there was material on the spot sufficient to carry it eighteen feet higher. The Association had expended all their funds, and 1600 dollars had been borrowed of the Suffolk Bank on liberal terms, on the joint and several note of Messrs. Lawrence, Sullivan, Dearborn, Warren, and Perkins, the Building Committee, on the pledge of the land owned by the Association (reserving the square around the Monument.) A few days after, the additional sum of 5000 dollars, payable on demand, was borrowed of the same Bank on the joint and several note of the same gentlemen, and in Jan. 1829 another sum of 1400 dollars was borrowed in the same way. At this last date, it was voted, that as the Building Committee had gone to the full extent of the disposable property of the Association and as far as public opinion would require of them, all work at Quincy or elsewhere, attended with any expense to the Association, should be wholly suspended. Mr. Willard was discharged from the service of the Association with such expression of respect and regard as were due to his merits as an architect and his spirit as a man. Thus it appears, that at the time of this suspension of the work the Association

was indebted to the amount of 23000 dollars, for which five individuals were personally responsible. Unless measures were soon adopted to procure funds by subscription, or in some other way, the individuals thus exposed had no other means of relief than the sale of the land owned by the Association.

EMBARRASMENTS &c

We have arrived at a period in the history of the monument, which it is painful to review. Much labor, of which the public knew nothing, had been performed by the Directors and especially by the Committees under their direction, as the preceding statements will show. But the severest struggles and trials were to come, which, if foreseen at the outset, might have caused the most steadfast friends of the enterprise to shrink from the undertaking. It was scarcely to be expected, that so great a work could be accomplished by private means without a severe struggle; and while many suffered serious mortification at the delays and embarrassments experienced during the ten years in which it was almost entirely suspended, the world at large will accord the highest praise to the generation which at length by private energy completed it according to the original scheme. The few who exhibited unwearied perseverance amidst much discouragement are worthy of remembrance as lasting as the structure which their sacrifices contributed to rear. In truth had it not been for the energy and devotion of the few referred to, we cannot see, what would have prevented a failure which would have been an abiding mortification and a reproach.

It was supposed by many, that the sum originally obtained for the Monument was greater than it really was, and that it had been injudiciously expended. The records of the Standing and the Building Committees, which during the period of their

holding office, from July 1824 to June 1830, had more than fifty formal meetings, occurring almost weekly in the most urgent stages of the work, at which all the members were present with remarkable punctuality, will show, that no public work has received more constant or faithful supervision. These gentlemen bestowed their time and labors gratuitously and besides were liberal donors. A statement, however, published in 1830 by the Association, as also one published, after the monument was completed, by the Architect and Superintendent Mr. Willard, which for its clearness and thoroughness reflects great credit on the science and ability of the author, viewed in connection with the details given in the preceding pages, will correct the misapprehension just referred to.

The amount of subscriptions to August 1830, together with the grant of the State (\$6000) was in round numbers \$65,000. About \$23,000 was paid for the fifteen acres of land; the expenses of the occasion when the corner stone was laid, and for books, engravings, plans &c. increased this amount to more than \$30,000. If to these items be added the cost of hoisting and quarrying apparatus, indispensable in the prosecution of such a work, there was left scarcely more than \$30,000 for the building of the monument, the estimated cost of which at the outset was \$100,000, exclusive of the land. At the time of suspension, then, the forty feet which had been erected had cost \$53,000; but taking into view the amount of materials then on the ground and the amount already quarried, the work was computed to be two thirds completed: so that the prospect was fair, that the whole expense of the monument would fall within the original estimate. The statement of the architect, before referred to, shows, that, had no delays occurred, it would have fallen considerably *within* that estimate. When we reflect, that nothing is more common than for stone structures to exceed estimates, the preceding statement, drawn from the accounts of

the Building Committee and of the architect, make it plain, that there could not have been rash or unwarranted expenditure. The details furnished by the able and thorough exposition of Mr. Willard, which explain in the most satisfactory manner the methods employed in the work both at the quarry and at the obelisk, and also compare the actual cost of the work with the market prices for the same sort of work at the time and similar works elsewhere, may justify the assertion, that the monument on Bunker Hill is the cheapest work of the kind of modern times.

Among various expedients to relieve the embarrassments of the Association and to further the execution of the enterprise the following alone are worthy of notice. A committee of twenty was appointed by the Directors when the work was suspended, to devise some method of relief.—A sale of a portion of the land, divided into building lots, was urged by some, and strenuously opposed by others who were anxious to preserve the Battle Field from all incumbrance and occupancy forever, as an additional memorial of the great event commemorated.—Again in November 1829 a vote was passed in the Building Committee to recommend to the Directors to petition the Legislature for a Lottery, in order to raise funds for liquidating the debt for which the members of the Building Committee were personally liable, and to complete the monument.—Moreover, in January 1830, a proposition was received from Mrs. S. J. Hale to raise the requisite funds by an appeal to the ladies of New England, which was gratefully acknowledged and accepted.

These measures were without effect. The Committee of twenty early in 1829 prepared an address to the Public with the form of a subscription, but in consequence of the commercial depression then existing, it was deemed inexpedient to circulate it. The scheme of a Lottery was adopted by the

Directors, notwithstanding strenuous opposition of some of the Board, and a petition was introduced into the Legislature, but, to the great satisfaction of many, a passage was refused. The efforts of the Ladies resulted in the contribution of less than \$2000 to the funds of the Association. During these efforts earnest and eloquent appeals were made from time to time in Newspapers, which, if they excited attention, failed to produce a decisive movement.

The only remaining expedient for relief of the Association and the completion of the work, which in its unfinished state was unsightly and a constant reproach to the public spirit and patriotism of the community, was the sale of a large part of the land owned by the Association on the summit and sides of the Hill. The earliest, most constant and efficient friends of the project resisted to the last the sacrifice of a portion of the battle-field which they were anxious to preserve, as an open area which would be invaluable in future years in the midst of a dense population, and yet more, in order to perpetuate the identity of a spot celebrated as the theatre of a most momentous event of modern history. The views of these gentlemen were presented with great force in an appeal to the public prepared by Hon. Edward Everett in the summer of 1831, the tone and argument of which may be seen from the following extracts.

After urging that the proposed sale of the land would not yield any thing that could be applied to the *completion* of the monument, two considerations are presented adverse to cutting up the field into house lots and covering it with buildings.

The first is the desirableness of the open area which it would afford in the midst of a large and rapidly increasing population. "The open summit and sides of Bunker Hill will then be to this part of the population, what Boston Common now is to the community generally, and in particular to the immediate neigh-

Neighborhood of that delightful spot. In natural advantages of all kinds, Bunker Hill is equal to the Common—in command of prospect, superior. Nothing but a few trees are wanting to make it as attractive a spot, merely as a promenade, as any in the world. Suppose these trees to be planted and the noble monument to be completed,—is there an individual in the community, who, on the mere score of beauty, convenience of exercise, healthful recreation, and enjoyment of prospect, would endure the thought of cutting up such a spot in the heart of a crowded population into lots, and covering it with houses and the buildings connected with them? Is there a citizen of Boston, who would tolerate the idea of thus destroying the COMMON, supposing it could be legally done?”

“But we must confess, that these are not our strongest reasons, against selling Bunker Hill. Such a project is strongly forbidden by all the considerations, which make this spot dear to the patriotic heart. The great object of the Bunker Hill Monument Association was to *preserve* the Hill and to perpetuate its venerable features. It was stated in the first address of the Directors to the public, that it was their object, if possible, to rescue that field from the ploughshare. It was intended, from the first, to preserve the scene of the ever memorable sacrifice of the 17th June, 1775, free of all objects alien from its character; and sacred from every use, uncongenial with the feeling, which must be excited in the hearts of all who visit its holy soil. To what purpose will it have been rescued from the ploughshare, if it is to be surrendered to the shovel and the spade? What would have been said of the citizens of Athens, in the flourishing periods of the Republic, if, for the purpose of raising an inconsiderable sum of money, they had cut up the plain of Marathon, into house-lots? The person who would go about to sell Boston Common, would as it is, be held in detestation. But suppose, in addition to its present

hold on the affections of the people, it were endeared to them as the scene of the first great struggle of the revolution; and it were proposed not merely, that the beautiful sod which covers it, but the ashes of brave and patriotic men, resting beneath, should be surrendered to the pick-axe;—should be shoveled away and carted off,—would not the man who should under these circumstances insist on such a project, be regarded as an object of abhorrence?

When our fellow citizens, from a distance, shall come to explore the scene of the action, on which so much depended for the country and the world, and shall find it covered with brick buildings, its character changed, its identity destroyed, how will they exclaim against the want of patriotism in those who could permit such a violation! In vain will our children attempt to retrace the vestiges of this momentous event; to mark on the consecrated soil, the successive steps of the battle. Where, they will inquire, was the first position of the patriots? In what direction toward the scene of action did the British forces cross the river; and at what point did they strike the hill? Show us, they will say, the field, over which they advanced to attack the breastwork; and on which they received that first deadly fire, which taught them, that patriotism could supply the place of discipline, that the conquest of a people was not to be effected by mercenary legions, nor the love of country to quail beneath the terrors of a fierce soldiery? Where, they will ask, was the rail fence, and the connecting lines,—and the shore, where the British light infantry marched to out-flank the patriots, and were destroyed by a scattered fire from behind rocks and banks of earth? On which side did that weak column advance, which finally bore down our exhausted forces, and compelled them slowly, reluctantly, and with sullen obstinacy, to leave the redoubt, heaped with the killed and dying, and flowing with blood? Where stood the

brave PRESCOTT to superintend the labors of his little band, and watch the first rays of that eventful day, which was to bring on him the power of a British army? Where rode the gallant PUTMAN, fearlessly exposing himself to the fire of a thousand muskets; at one time restraining, and then urging on the ardor of his courageous, but inexperienced countrymen? Where is the spot on which the illustrious WARREN, the all-glorious volunteer of the day, ever the first where danger was to be encountered, the last where death was to be escaped,—where is the spot on which the martyr fell? Is this the field—are these the spots—are these the vestiges which we propose to obliterate and destroy?”

This appeal failed of its object, perhaps, as often happens in matters which do not touch individual interest, from neglect in following up the impulse, which it gave, by prompt and energetic measures. The causes of inaction or of delay need not be specified, even if it could be done with accuracy. There were however individuals who were ready, in the failure of other resources, to assume the responsibility of the work; as the writer feels justified in recording on the evidence of one of the individuals referred to, who was intimately acquainted with all the proceedings and actively participated in them.

To test the public sentiment one of the individuals* referred

*The late AMOS LAWRENCE, Esq., whose lamented decease since the manuscript was prepared for the press renders unnecessary any delicacy in publishing his name. His personal interest and efforts in behalf of the enterprise are material facts in its history, of which his characteristic energy and the ample resources with which Providence had crowned his exertions in mercantile life, added to distinguished munificence, and a noble patriotic spirit, enabled him to be an efficient promoter. It is now proper to record further what the writer has learned from a private memorandum which he has been permitted to use, that Mr. Lawrence made certain provisions by will as early as December, 1830, with a view to securing the battle-field, liquidating the debt of the Association, and completing the Monument. These provisions were superseded by another will executed April 1, 1833.

to, proposed, Sept. 1831, in a letter addressed to one of the earliest friends of the project, Dr. Warren, to subscribe \$5000, on condition, that \$50,000 should be raised within a year. The following passage in the letter will show the strength of feeling, cherished by the most zealous friends of the enterprise in its broadest aspects, on the subject of the *sale of the land*. "I think it inexpedient to allude to the sale of the land at Bunker Hill as a resource for paying the debt, except in a case of extreme necessity; and at this time I should personally sooner vote to sell ten acres of the Common in front of my house to pay the city debt, (of Boston,) than vote to sell the ten acres on Bunker Hill, until it shall appear that our citizens will not contribute the means of saving it." No movement followed this proposition. The same offer was renewed, by the same individual, June 1832, just before the Annual Meeting of the Association, in a letter to another gentleman, in which he pressed with great urgency the scheme of a subscription to be set on foot by the Association to obtain the necessary means for completing the Monument and preserving the land. The gen-

after his health had failed so as to forbid active participation in the affairs of business, an extract from which will show the views of the Testator. "I am of opinion that the land owned by the Bunker Hill Monument Association in Charles'town will be of great value to posterity, if left as public ground. The spot is the most interesting in the country; and it seems to me, it is calculated to impress the feelings of those who come after us with gratitude to the people of this generation, if we preserve it for them. The whole field contains about fifteen acres; and in the hope of preserving it entire, either as the property of the State, of this city, or of any other competent body, and with the further view of ensuring the completion of the monument, which now stands as a reproach to us, I have set apart a larger share of my property than would be necessary, had not the subject been presented to the public in such a manner as to discourage future attempts at raising the necessary funds by voluntary contributions." The amount thus devised for the Monument, in case that amount should not be raised in other ways, was \$50,000.

tleman thus addressed acted ; a movement was commenced, but fell through from want of some one or some few, it may be, to urge it forward. Again, in April 1833, when the commercial prosperity peculiarly favored such an effort, a note was addressed by the same gentleman to Hon. S. T. Armstrong, Hon. Charles Wells, J. T. Buckingham and J. P. Thorndike, Esqrs. members of the Massachusetts Charitable Mechanic Association, proposing to that Association to attempt the raising by an appeal to the public of \$50,000, to be paid or secured within three months, for completing the Monument and preserving the field, and accompanying the proposal with the offer of five thousand dollars, towards the amount or ten per cent on any less sum that might be raised—and the same sum, as a donation for the uses of the Charitable Mechanic Association. A public meeting in consequence of this proposal was called by this association to be held in Faneuil Hall, May 28, 1833, which was numerously attended and was addressed by Hon. Edward Everett among others, in one of his happiest efforts, as it was regarded at the time. His speech on that occasion was widely circulated through the press and forms an important part of the History of the Monument. It may be found in the recent edition of his works, vol. 1, page 354.

The meeting at Faneuil Hall, and especially the speech of Mr. Everett, was regarded as deciding the matter. Multitudes went their way under the excitement of that occasion, exclaiming, that the Monument was finished and the land saved. But this effort failed through want of some individual or individuals of high character and influence who would undertake to press and pursue the object in the freshness of the impulse which had been imparted.

RESUMPTION OF THE WORK.

Enough however was done through the instrumentality of the Mechanic Association to justify, it was thought, a resumption of the work in the following year. The Monument Association, May 5, 1834, empowered and requested the Mechanic Association to apply the moneys collected by them to the work of the obelisk "by raising the same to the elevation of 159 feet, 6 inches." It was also voted, that when the obelisk had reached that height, *it should be considered as completed*. At the same meeting a committee reported in favor of offering for sale the land owned by the Corporation, reserving the square now enclosed, in order to liquidate the debt of the Association.

This debt was contracted in the prosecution of the work, the Building Committee having borrowed money of one of the Boston Banks, for which they made themselves individually responsible. The Bank had been extremely liberal; but payment could be no longer delayed. The only security, which these gentlemen had, was a mortgage of the land in question; and the sacrifice, against which they had themselves struggled with great earnestness and perseverance, as preceding statements show, seemed inevitable.

The Monument Association voted, June 17, 1834, to offer the land for sale. The ten acres were divided into fifty shares at five hundred dollars each, double the market value, and were all taken and paid for by friends to the enterprise, with the provision, that the Association might redeem the land within a certain period, and in the hope that the field would be secured to the public. Thus was the Association relieved of its debt. One more effort to preserve the land, was made by a large proprietor* in the ownership, who proposed to the remaining

* Amos Lawrence, Esq

proprietors to take their shares at a certain value, and to transfer the land, thus conveyed, to the Monument Association, or to the State, or to any competent body, *to be kept open forever*. The proposal was not acceded to; and it having become evident, that the public would not prevent the sacrifice, the matter was left to take its course. The Association did not redeem the land; soon after it was offered for public sale, and was lost to the monument beyond recovery.

Through the instrumentality of the Mechanic Association nearly \$20,000 were collected. To this sum was added by vote of the Monument Association the Ladies Fund, then amounting to nearly \$3000; and the whole, excepting a balance of about \$800, was expended on the obelisk under direction of a Building Committee of the Mechanic Association consisting of Hon. Charles Wells, George Darracott, Jonathan Whitney, Charles Leighton and John P. Thorndike Esqrs. This Committee and the Association under which they acted deserve credit for faithfulness and assiduity in the discharge of a patriotic duty. The services of Mr. Willard, as Superintendent, were again secured; who was assisted by Mr. James S. Savage, as before. Mr. Charles Pratt was the master mason. By this effort the obelisk was raised to the height of eighty feet. At this point the work was again abandoned in consequence of the failure of funds.

COMPLETION OF THE MONUMENT.

Various schemes were again proposed to secure the means for completing the work. Public appeals were made in the newspapers, but nothing effectual was done during the succeeding four years to encourage the friends of the enterprise. At length early in 1839, a new proposal was made to the Mechanic Association by Amos Lawrence Esq., whose name may properly be mentioned as the matter became one of public notoriety.

Having learned that this Association contemplated a renewed effort, he addressed a note to George Darracott Esq., President of the Mechanic Association, in which after expressing regret, that his feeble and precarious health would not permit him to spend time in making personal application to the citizens of Boston, he adds: "The next best thing I can do is to give money. The Monument Association owe a debt. To discharge the debt, finish the monument, surround it with a handsome iron fence and otherwise ornament the ground as it deserves, will require \$40,000 more than it now has. If the Bunker Hill Monument Association will collect \$30,000 dollars the present year and pay off the debt, I will give to the Charitable Mechanic Association \$10,000 to enable it to complete the work in a manner that our fathers would have done, had they been here to direct it." Judah Touro of New Orleans, formerly a citizen of Boston, made a donation of the same amount. Thus encouraged the Mechanic Association proposed their subscription, but as it was thought inexpedient to press it, nothing further was done.

In the Annual Report of the Monument Association, June 1840, the doubt was expressed, whether the present generation would witness the completion of the Monument. This expression of the Report being repeated within a few days in a "sewing circle" of Boston, several ladies proposed the idea of a Fair in behalf of the object. The suggestion at once received favor; before the end of the month the formal sanction of the Board of Directors of the Monument Association was given to the new project and measures were taken immediately in furtherance of it. A circular recommending the plan was issued by a committee of the Directors, and appeals in its behalf were made through the public press. In the principal towns of New England, and indeed throughout the land, ladies were speedily busied in preparation of articles for the Fair.

Many towns sent contributions of money. The Fair was held in Quincy Hall, Boston, Sept. 1840, and continued seven days, exclusively under the direction of the ladies, although with the hearty coöperation and efficient aid of gentlemen who had, from the first, labored in behalf of the object. The Fair was admirably conducted. Every effort was made to prevent the common abuses of such methods of raising funds. Articles offered for sale were required to be good of their kind, and to be held at fair prices. Nothing was permitted to be done to extort money; no raffles or drawing by chances was allowed. The strictest decorum was maintained.—The project was successful beyond expectation. Thousands from city and country flocked to the scene; and the abundance, variety, and beauty of the articles exhibited, as well as the arrangements, were creditable in the highest degree to the industry, taste, skill, and spirit of the Ladies of New England.

The proceeds of the Fair, \$30,000, with the donation of Messrs. Lawrence and Touro of \$10,000 each, together with more than \$5000 from other sources, afforded the means of completing the Monument according to the original design. The vote of May 1834, that it should be regarded as finished when it had reached the height of 159 feet, was rescinded. Hon. Charles Wells, George Darracott, J. P. Thorndike and Charles Leighton Esqrs. were appointed a Building Committee by the Mechanic Association. In Nov. 1840 James S. Savage was contracted with to complete the obelisk according to the original design of the Architect, Solomon Willard, and under his superintendence. In May 1841 work was resumed; and at 6 o'clock on the morning of July 23, 1842, the last stone was raised in presence of the Officers of the Association, the American flag being waved from it during its ascent and under a salute from the Charlestown Artillery. The Monument now stands two hundred and twenty one feet high.

The writer ought now to state, that his object has not required him to record the names of individuals except so far as they were officially and immediately connected with the work. It is due however to several gentlemen whose names do not occur in the preceding history, or which are only mentioned incidentally on account of their official relation to the enterprise, to remark, that they expended much time and labor, of which the public know nothing, without any other reward than what is enjoyed by a consciousness of duty to a great and patriotic work faithfully discharged. For example Hon. Nathaniel P. Russell rendered gratuitous service for twenty five years as the able and efficient Treasurer of the Association. The importance of his trust may be estimated from the fact, that more than \$370,000 passed through his hands.

The Celebration in honor of the completion of the monument, June 17, 1843, which was similar in its arrangements to that which welcomed the commencement of the work in 1825 and scarcely less imposing, when the same eminent man, whose discourse had contributed so much to give dignity and distinction to the former occasion, was spared to crown by another of his matchless efforts the successful accomplishment of the enterprise, is the closing scene in the *History of the Bunker Hill Monument*.*

* Those who may be curious to know the details of the work on the Monument, the methods employed in quarrying, transporting and raising the stone, with the expense of the different experiments made during the progress of the work, will find their curiosity gratified by the Quarto Volume, "Plans and Sections of the obelisk on Bunker Hill &c. by Solomon Willard, Boston 1843." A more general statement may be found in a smaller volume; "Bunker Hill Battle and Monument, Charlestown, 1843;" and also in the account of the Monument near the close of the "History of the Siege of Boston," a valuable work from the hand of Richard Frothingham Jr. Esq, of Charlestown, published, Boston, 1849, which contains a summary of the receipts and expenditures on the work and an enumeration of the individuals whose services are specially acknowledged in the records of the Association

ARTICLE III.

A CONTRIBUTION.

TO THE

HISTORY OF BATH.

BY THE REV. WM. S. BARTLET

OF CHELSEA, MASS.

CONTRIBUTION TO THE HISTORY OF BATH.

IN the Second Volume of the Collections of the Maine Historical Society is a "History of Bath," by Gen. Joseph Sewall. A relation is given in that paper of interesting events which have transpired in the territory now divided into Woolwich, Phippsburg, Georgetown and Bath. The article contains a somewhat imperfect account of the Ecclesiastical history of this territory, and the object of the present communication is to supply in a degree the deficiencies of that portion of the paper spoken off. The materials for what follows are drawn partly from sources not generally accessible, and partly from original papers.

"From 1752 until 1765," says the writer of the History under notice, "the people were destitute of preaching." In the latter year, it is stated, that a Congregational minister was settled, who continued till 1779. This is the amount of what is said as to the provision for religious teaching in that section during the time spoken of.

The departure of the Presbyterian Minister from Georgetown in 1752 left the whole of the territory from the Androscoggin to the St. Croix destitute of a clergyman of any denomination. Two years after this a Romish priest made his appearance among the settlers at Frankfort, (now Dresden.) He came from a place within the limits of the present city of Augusta,

where he had a house, surrounded by a number of Indian wigwams. This priest endeavored to persuade some of the settlers at Frankfort to remove where they should be under his influence, promising to each family that would do so, two hundred acres of land. This proselyting movement was of sufficient importance to attract the attention of the General Court, and led to the building of the forts at Augusta and Winslow. Still no Protestant minister was to be found east of Brunswick.

In 1755 a petition was sent to the (English) "Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts" from "the Inhabitants of *Georgetown* on the *Kennebeck River*" and also one from "*Frankfort* on the same River," setting forth their poverty, "and that it saddens their soul to consider that they shall find it hard to keep alive the sparks of Religion in themselves without the Administration of God's Word and Sacraments, * * * unless the Society shall send a Missionary to officiate to and instruct them, &c. Governor *Shirley* and other very worthy persons recommending Mr. *Macclenaghan*, that he had been for many years a Dissenting Teacher,* but was become a Convert to the Church of England, as a proper Person for this Mission, * * The Society, Mr. *Macclenaghan* having been received into the Holy Orders of our Church, hath appointed him their Missionary to *George Town* and *Frankfort*, and to the neighboring Places on the Eastern Frontier of the *Province of Massachusetts Bay*."

A stipend of £50 sterling was appropriated to this Mission.

Mr. *Macclenaghan* arrived in *Kennebec* in May 1756, and took up his abode in *Fort Richmond*, just north of the present village of *Richmond*.

In his report to the Society above named in 1757, he informs them, "that he continues diligent in preaching the Gospel on

* Mr. *Macclenaghan* had officiated in *Georgetown* as a Presbyterian minister for ten years from 1734.

common Days, as well as the Lords Day; * * complains that there is no Church either at *George Town* or *Frankfort*, nor Glebe nor House, as was promised to the Society on his appointment; but he had to that Time resided in an old, dismantled Fort, wonderfully through God's mercy preserved from a merciless Enemy, to whom he is often exposed, &c. &c." Mr. McLennaghan remained with his family, officiating as a Church of England minister at Frankfort and Georgetown, until December 1758, when he removed to Pennsylvania.*

A petition was again sent to the same English Society from the inhabitants of Frankfort, and in answer to it the Rev. Jacob Bailey, a native of Rowley, Mass., was sent as an "Itinerant Missionary on the Eastern Frontiers of Massachusetts Bay." Mr. Bailey arrived at Frankfort in 1760, and continued there for nineteen years. He says "The first summer of my mission I officiated in Georgetown, every third Sunday." This place continued to be under his supervision and to enjoy a portion of his services while he remained in the neighborhood, with the exception hereafter to be stated.

Mr. Bailey says in his first report to the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, that "he found in the County of Lincoln, which contains 1500 families, scattered over a country 100 miles in length and 60 in breadth, no Teachers of any Denomination, except a number of illiterate Exhorters. In George-Town, where he has frequently preached and administered the Sacraments, the Dissenters, he thinks, incline so much to our Church, that had they a Missionary

* It appears from the journal of the Rev. Thomas Smith of Falmouth, that this Mr. Macclenaghan, whom he calls McClanethan, was installed at Cape Elizabeth Nov. 15, 1736, as a Presbyterian minister; that he stirred up an exciting religious controversy there, which ended in his dismissal after a short time. In 1748 he was preaching in Chelsea, Mass., and was invited to settle there. Smith's journal, Willis' ed. pp. 84, 85. [Ed.]

resident, they would probably come over to it. His communicants at George Town are 17."

The English Society which thus cared for the poor settlers on the Kennebec "received a petition from the Inhabitants of George Town and Harpswell, dated Decr. 11th, 1761, thankfully acknowledging the Society's charity to them, to which it is owing, under God, that a sense of Religion is preserved among them" and requesting an additional Missionary. They state that "they have begun to build a Church, which is now in great Forwardness, and engage in their present low and laborious state to give the Missionary the Society shall be pleased to send 20£ sterling *per Annum*, build him a Parsonage House, and, as their circumstances enlarge, give him from Time to Time such further Encouragement as may be a Proof how highly they value the Blessing they now petition for."

Seven years passed on without the Missionary being sent to reside at Georgetown, during which time Rev. Mr. Bailey gave the people as much clerical service as was in his power.

In 1768, the sum of £40, was appropriated to the Missionary who should officiate "at *George Town* and places adjacent on *Kennebeck River*." This was additional to £50 paid by the same Society to Rev. Mr. Bailey.

The Rev. Wm. Willard Wheeler, a native of Concord Mass., arrived in Georgetown as a Missionary of the Church of England in the Autumn of 1768. The next year he "acquaints the Society that his Parish extends near 20 miles westward and 12 eastward. His people have erected the frame of a church since his coming; he has statedly preached twice on Sundays, besides giving lectures on week days and has baptized 28 children."

Mr. Wheeler remained at Georgetown till April 1772, and then removed to Rhode Island.

On the departure of Mr. Wheeler Mr. Bailey resumed the

oversight of the Episcopalians at George Town and visited them as frequently as circumstances would allow, till he left the country in June 1779.

Those of his Journals that have been preserved contain frequent notices of his journeys to this place, mention among others the names of Drummond and Preble, and contain entries of official acts, such as baptisms, &c. In fact it was from the house of one of these families that Mr. Bailey departed when he left the country in the year before named.

The writer of the History of Bath, before spoken of says, (Maine Historical Collections II. p. 220) "The house of worship was near the Mansion House of the late Major Lithgow, where Mr. McLanathan usually officiated." There was, it is true, a house of worship at the place spoken of, but it is next to certain that it could not have been built during the time of Mr. MacLanathan's ministry, i. e. from 1734 to 1744. We may suppose that the erection of the Mansion of Maj. Lithgow, a large and elegant structure, had something to do in determining the location of this house of worship. But Major Lithgow's house was not built till 1763. Again, Rev. Mr. Wheeler reports that "his people have erected the frame of a church since his coming," i. e. in 1768. No other house of worship than the one referred to is known to have existed in the neighborhood. And as it is certain that Mr. Wheeler resided a part of the time, at least, in the family of Maj. Lithgow: this circumstance would seem to support the belief that the church was nigh at hand, and that in fact it was the building erroneously supposed by some to have been erected many years before the coming of this Missionary.

ARTICLE IV.

EXTRACT FROM "THE SECOND BOOK OF THE FIRST DECADE OF
THE HISTORIE OF TRAVAILE INTO VIRGINIA BRITANNIA,
ENTREATING OF THE FIRST DISCOVERIES OF THE COUNTRY &c.
AS ALSO OF THE NORTHERN COLONIE, SEATED UPON THE RIVER
SACHADEHOC, TRANSPORTED AT THE CHARGE OF SIR JOHN POP-
HAM, KNIGHT, LATE LORD CHIEFE JUSTICE OF ENGLAND.

GATHERED BY
WILLIAM STRACHEY, GENT.

THREE YEARS THITHER EMPLOYED SECRETARIE OF STATE, AND OF
COUNSAILE WITH THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LORD LA WARE,
HIS MAJESTIES LORD GOVERNOR AND CAPT. GENERALL OF THE
COLONY.

INTRODUCTION.

The Maine Historical Society has in its library the whole of Strachey's account as contained in the publications of the Hakluyt Society of London. Book Second was published last year by the Massachusetts Historical Society; still that part of it, which relates to the first colony attempted to be planted in Maine, has so peculiar an interest to our State, that this early authentic account of it, has an indisputable claim to a place in our own publications.

We copy our article from the one published by the Massachusetts Society instead of taking it from the Hakluyt Collections, because it contains some interesting notes in addition to those of the English editors. And our publication receives a very valuable addition from the introductory remarks and explanatory notes of the Rev. Wm. S. Bartlett, of Chelsea, Mass., who has taken a particular interest in this subject.

A question has been raised among us, in regard to the river, which a party of this colony ascended. whether the Androscoggin or Kennebec. The Narrative says, "To take possession of this land and goodly river for his Majestie, Capt. Weymouth thought it fit to make up to the head of the river, which he did well sixty miles in his barge; and as the stream trended westward into the mayne, and at that height yt began to narrow, so he there sett upp a crosse with his Majesties inscription thereon," &c.

The generally received opinion has been, that the river referred to was the Kennebec. But John McKeen Esq., controverts this idea, and proceeding on the fact stated in the account, that the river explored, *trended westward*, and other facts descriptive of the local scenery, with which Mr. McKeen, more than any other man, is familiar, he comes to the conclusion that the river visited was the Androscoggin and not the Kennebec. His interesting article on this subject will follow "Strachey's Account," and we refer our readers to it for much valuable information. W.

MR. BARTLET'S INTRODUCTION
TO
STRACHEY'S ACCOUNT.

THE importance of the following paper to the History of Maine will be readily perceived by the reader.

Of the colony which settled at Plymouth, Mass., some years after the date of the one which landed at Sagadahoc, we have tolerably full accounts.

But of the latter, little has heretofore been known, and even that has been rendered less certain by the influence of modern opinion, insomuch that the locality where the colonists passed the winter, though stated distinctly by the old writers, has been doubtfully assigned to an island, as well as the main land. The following narrative however settles that point beyond a question. It is copied from the publications of the Hakluyt Society (in England) for 1849. Strachey was the Secretary of the Southern Colony. Among the colonists which he found there in 1609, it may easily be supposed, that there were some who had been engaged in the Northern Colony two years previously. From them he might learn the incidents which he relates. Or, what is highly probable, a journal of the Colonists of Sagadahoc might have been kept, and to this Strachey in his official capac-

ity might have had access. At all events his narrative bears every mark of authenticity.

Little is known of Strachey. The English editor of his account has used much industry in his researches into the Secretary's history, and what follows is the substance of his gleanings. The name of William Strachey first occurs in the second patent to Virginia. *Vide* Stith's Virginia, Appendix, No. 2; Smith's Virginia; Hazards Historical Collections, Vol. I. 58 to 72. Strachey edited a quarto book accompanying Captain John Smith's Map of Virginia, Oxford, 1612.

He was in one of the vessels which left England to Virginia. May 15th, 1609. This vessel was wrecked upon the Bermudas. A description of this storm, written by Strachey may be found in Purchas, IV., 1734. On reaching Virginia, after leaving Bermuda, the new comers found the colony in such a condition from famine that all were about to return to England, when the opportune arrival of Lord Delaware, with a plentiful supply of provisions, determined them to remain. William Strachey was then appointed Secretary and Recorder. He was in England in 1612. The account by Strachey was probably written in 1618.

Says the English Editor: "Two copies of the manuscript, both in the author's handwriting, (for there are a sufficient number of instances of it in the British Museum to prove its identity,) are all that have come under the editors notice; one in the Sloane Collection, No. 1622, in the British Museum, from which the present publication has been transcribed: and the other among the Ashmolean Manuscripts, No. 1754. The only difference between these two is an alteration in the title of the second book, and the addition to the titles both of the first and second books of the motto, *Alget qui non ardet*. The Museum copy is dedicated to Sir Francis Bacon, 'Lord High Chancel-

lor;' and that in the Ashmolean Library to Sir Allen Apsley, Purveyor to His Majesty's Navie Royall.'"

The English Editor has a note (under the date of Aug. 18 in the narrative) commencing with the words, "Belknap in his American Biography," says that they landed on a peninsula. To this note should be added the following:

The late Governor James Sullivan wrote the paper referred to in the Massachusetts Historical Collections. He is the first writer who gave it as an opinion that this colony landed on an island. In this notion he is opposed by all who wrote before, whose writings on this part of American history had been published, e g. Purchas, Ogilby, &c. Strachey bears the same testimony. Perhaps if his expression "almost an island" had been written *peninsula*, the character of their landing place would appear to the reader—even more distinctly than it now does. The writer of this note is gratified in being able to cite the opinion of the Rev. Wm. Jenks, D. D. of Boston, but formerly of Bath, Me. who with a party of gentlemen visited the mouth of Kennebec River in 1807. He says "To the spot that bore evidence of the best claims to this distinction, and which is on a 'peninsula,' they gave the name of Point Popham, which it retains." It is trusted that the evidence now added may determine the locality of this colony beyond any further mistake, and that no more writers will follow Gov. Sullivan in his fancy on this point, as has heretofore been the case.

To any one who had the opportunity of examining the locality spoken of, the appropriateness of Strachey's language will be very striking. The writer of this note has just returned from a visit to this locality. Standing upon high ground near the centre of it, he saw at once that the phrase "being almost an island, of a good bignes," was a very accurate description. And from a pretty thorough examination of this peninsula, it

seemed as if the precise situation of the fort built by those early colonists might almost be settled. Conspicuous to all who enter or leave the mouth of the Kennebec is a two story dwelling house built by Maj. Shaw, standing a few rods from the sea coast and not far distant from the river just named. Near this house is a crescent-shaped pond, of *fresh* water, covering about five acres of ground. The land rises some forty feet on the north of this pond and then descends by an easy slope to the water of Atkins bay, giving sufficient space for the erection of a fort containing "fifty houses, besides a church and a store house." A large supply of fresh water would evidently be needed for such an establishment as this. At the present day the water in the wells on the peninsula is more or less brackish, which in all probability has always been the case. Such a pond then would be of great value to a fortress. This fact and the adaptation of the land to such a building seems to be decisive as to the locality of the fort.

EXTRACT FROM STRACHEY.

CAPUT VII.

Capt. George Weymouth's voyage, upon a right lyne (not seeking the wynde in the accustomed height of the West Indies,) and falling with Sachadehoc, and the discovery of that river.

MUCH was commended the diligence and relation of Capt. Gosnoll; howbeit this voyage alone could not satisfye his so intent a spiritt and ambition in so great and glorious an enterprise as his lordship, the foresaid Earle of Southampton, who laboured to have yt so beginne, as that it might be contynued with all due and prepared circumstances and saffety, and therefore would his lordship be concurrant the second tyme in a new survey and dispatch to be made thither with his brother in lawe,

Tho. Arundell, Baron of Warder who prepared a ship for Capt. Georg Weymouth, which set sayle from Ratcliff in March, anno 1605, and which, about the midst of Maye following, fell with the land, an island unto the mayne of the coast of America, in the height, as he found yt, of about 42, who from thence casting yt norward to 44,—what paines he tooke in discovering,—may witnes the many conveyent places upon the mayne, and isles, and rivers, together with that little one of Pamaquid, and of his search sixty miles up the most excellent and beneficyall river of Sachadehoc, which he found capable of shippinge for trafique of the greatest burden, a benefitt, indeed, alwaies to be accompted the richest treasure to any land ; for which we for our Severne and Thames, and Fraunce for Loire, Seine, and the river of Burdeaux, and the Lowe Countries for their ynnumerable navigable rivers, receave our and their greatest wealth. Next he found the land faire, and the whole coast bold to fall with, and then, a safe harbour for shipps to ride in, which hath besides, without the river, in the channell and soundes about the island, adjoyning to the mouth thereof, so desired a road, as yt is capable of an infinite number of shippes. The river, likewise, ytself, as yt runneth upp into the mayne for very neere forty miles towards the high inland mountaines, he found to beare in breadth a myle, sometymes three quarters, and half a mile the narrowest ; never under four or five fathom water hard by the shoare, and six, seven, eight, nine, and ten fathomes all along on both sides ; every half mile very gallant coves, some almost able to conteyene one hundred sayle, where the grownde ys soft ouze, with a tuffe clay under, for anchor hold, and where shipps maye lye without eyther anchor or cable, only moared to the shoare with a hauser ; and which floweth eighteen or twenty foot at high water, with fit docks apperteyning to graine or carine shippes of all burthens, secured from all windes, which is so necessarye and incomparable a benefit, that in few places

in England, or in any parts of Christendome, art, with great charges, can make the like ; besides, the bordering land most commodious and fertill, trending all along on both sides in an equall plaine, neither mountaynes nor rockye, but verged with a green border of grasse, sometymes three or four acres, sometymes eight or ten together, so making tender unto the eye of the surveyor her fertility and pleasure, and which would be much more if, by cleansing away her wooddes, shee were converted into goodly meadowe ; and the wodd she beareth is not shrubbish, fitt only for fuell, but goodly oake, birch, tall firre and spruse, which in many places grow not so thick together, but may, with small labor, be made feeding grownd, being plentifully stoard, like the outward islands, with fresh water springs, which streame downe in many places. The woddes here are full of deare, hares, and other beasts, and reasonably well inhabited by the natives, of mild and good condicions ; many provinces (as about us within the Chesapeake Bay, and about Roanoack) governed in chief by a principall commaunder or prince, whom they call Bashaba, who hath under him divers petty kings, which they call Sagamoes, the same which the Indians in our more sowardly parts call weroances, all rich in divers kinds of excellent furs.

To take possession of this land and goodly river for his Majestic, Captain Weymouth thought it fitt to make up to the head of the river, which he did well *sixty miles* in his barge ; and as the streame trended *westward* into the mayne, and at that height yt beganne to narrowe, so he there sett upp a crosse with his Majestic's inscription thereon, observing all the waye, that in noe place, eyther about the islands, or up in the mayne, or all alongst the river, there could be discerned any one token or signe, that any Christian had been there before, of which, eyther by cutting wodd, digging for water, or setting up crosses (memorials seldom omitted) by Christian travellers, they might

have perceaved some testimony, or mention might have been left; and after this search, Capt. Weymouth being well satisfied, with instruction and knowledg, of soe commodious a seat, sett sayle for England, and the eighteenth of July following arrived before Dartmouth.

Upon his returne, his goodly report joyning with Capt. Gosnoll's, cawsed the business with soe prosperous and faire starrs to be accompanied, as it not only encouraged the said Earle (the foresaid Lord Arundell being by [t]his tyme chaunged in his intendments this waye, and engaged so far to the Archduke, before returne of this ship, that he no more thought upon the accion,) but likewise called forth many firme and harty lovers, and some likewise long affected thereunto, who by comyng, therefore, humble petitioners to his Majestie for the advancement of the same (as for the only enterprise reserved unto his daies that was yet left unaccomplisht; whereas God might be abundantly made knowne; His name enlarged and honoured; a notable nation made fortunate; and ourselves famous,) yt well pleased his Majestie (whoe, in all his practizes and consultations, hath ever sought God more than himself, and the advancement of His glory, professing deadly enmity—noe prince soe much—with ignoraunce and errour,) adding to her Christian prænomen, Virginia, the surname of Britannia, to cause his letters to be made patents the tenth of Aprill, 1606, in the fourth yeare of his Majestie's raigne of England, and thirty-ninth of Scotland, for two colonyes; the one consisting of divers knights, gentlemen, marchants, and others of the citty of London, called the first colony;* and the other of sondry knights, gentlemen, and others of the citty of Bristoll, Exeter, and the towne of Plymouth, and other places, called the second colony.†

* Otherwise called the London Company.

† Otherwise called the Plymouth Company,

This last, since yt had his end so untymely, by the death of the upright and noble gentleman late Lord Chief Justice of England, chief patron of the same, Sir John Popham, knight; and since the order and methode of a full history doth clayme of me the remembrance of the most materiall poincts at least, as well of this northern colony as of the first planted more to the south, I have not thought yt amisse to epithomize a fewe things (and which have not yet by any one bene published, or written of) of the same; by which, likewise (as I maye the better descend into the occurraunces of our owne,) maie be the elierer confirmed the story of all three—the one by the other—where the congruity (meaninge the commodities of the country, nature of the soyle, and qualities of the people) betweene all three is so full and answerable.

CAPUT VIII.

A colonie sent out to settle, within the river of Sachadehoc, by the Honourable Sir John Popham, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of England, under the government of Capt. Popham and Capt. Gilbert; of the Spainards surprising of a ship of Bristoll, sent for the use of the colonie.

At what tyme the adventurers of the first colonie, anno 1606, had prepared all things fitt, with a fleet of three saile, for Capt. Christopher Newport to transport a colony of one hundred, to begynne the plantation within the Cheasapeak Bay, the foresaid Sir John Popham likewise prepared a tall ship well furnished, belonging to Bristoll and the river of Severne, with many planters, which sett out from Plymouth about Maye

,* Haines maister, to settle a plantacion in the river of Sachadehoc, which making his course for the islands of Flores and Cornez,† one morning, about the islande of Gratirosa, the

* A similar gap in the original.

† *i. e.* Corvo.

Spanish fleet comynge from Mexico, had sight of yt, gave yt chase, and soone tooke it; and understanding by examinacion whither she was outward bound, and for what purpose, they tooke the captaine whose name was Martyn Pryn, out of her, together with the maister and most of the passengers, dispersing them into divers shippes of their owne, and soe held their course, carrying ours along with them for Spaine; howbeyt one of the fleete, wherein three or four of the English were together, by the steerage of the English, who tooke their turnes at the helme, and not being observed, altered their course, or whither by contrary wynds compelled, true yt is upon observacion, the Spanish pilott not knowing where he was, unlooked for fell upon the coast of Fraunce, within the river of Burdeaux, where they would have concealed the English, and stowed them therefore under hatches, had they not happely bene perceaved by some of the French, which came abourd and obteyned them of the Spainaird, and carried them ashore, at what tyme one of them, Daniell Tucker, gent., made complaint unto the officers of the place of this wronge offred unto them, and, in his Majestie's name, caused this shipp to be staied and arrested untill the court in Paris might determyn of the same; but the Spainard had too golden an advocate, a West Indian purse comynge newly from thence, and therefore, after some litle attendaunce, easily freed himself from the incumbrance and made for Spaine, with malice inough to entreat the other captived English, whome they had dispersed and made slaves in their gallions.

Howbeyt, the aforesaid late Lord Chief Justice would not, for all this hard hansell and Spanish mischief give over his determinacion for planting of a colony within the aforesaid so goodly a country, upon the river of Sachadehoc; but against the next yeare prepared a greater number of planters, and better provisions, which in two shippes he sent thither; a fly boat, called the Gift of God, wherein a kinsman of his, George

Popham, commanded ; and a good ship, called the Mary and John, of London, wherein Raleigh Gilbert commanded ; which, with one hundred and twenty persons for planters, brake ground from Plymouth in June, 1607, which the twenty-fifth fell with Gratosia, and the twenty-eighth tooke in wood and water at Flores and Cornez, from whence they allways kept their course to the westward as much as wynd and weather would permit ; in which course to the west, and west nor-west, as the wynd would give leave, they ran two hundred leagues from Flores, and in the latitude of 42 degrees they found the compasse to be varied one whole pointe.

From whence they stood still to the westward untill the twenty-seventh of July, being then in the latitude of 43 and two thirds, where they threw out the dipsing lead, and had grownd, but twenty fathome and twenty-two fathome, upon a banck, and here they fisht some three howers, and tooke neere two hundred of cod, very great fish, and where they might have laden their ship in lyttle tyme.

From hence they stood in for the mayne, the wynd being at so-west, and as they ran in for the land, they alwaies sounded from this banck, and having run some twelve leagues from the banck nor-west, they sounded, and had sixty fathome ouze, ground black. The wynd now growing scant, they were con-streyned to stand for the so-ward, and south so-west way, and sounded againe the next daye, being the twenty-eighth of July, and had thirty fathome ; small stones and white shells, fishing grownd.

29. They made a west waie untill noone, and then sounded ; had one hundred and sixty fathome black ouze.

30. About * of the clock in the morniug, they had sight of the land, and yt bore of them nor-west. They sounded, being ten leagues from the shoar, and had one hundred

* A similar gap in the original.

fathomes black ouze. They made towards the shoare, but could not recover yt before the night tooke them; for which they were constrayned to beare of a little from the land, and lye a hull all that night, where they fooud aboundance of fish very large and great, and the water deepe hard abourd the the shoare, eighteen or twenty fathome.

31. Standing in for the shoare in the afternoone, they came to an anchor under an island, for all this coast is full of islands, but very sound and good for shipping to passe by them, and the water deepe hard abourd them; they had not bene at anchor two howers, when there came a Spanishe shallop to them from the shoare, in her eight salvadg men and a little salvadg boy, whoe at the first rowed about them and would not come abourd, notwithstanding they proffered them bread, knives, beades, and other small trifles; but having gazed awhile upon the ship they made shewe to departe; howbeyt when they were a little from them, they returned againe and boldly came up into the shipp, and three of them stayed all night abourd, the rest departed and went to the shoare, shewing by signes that they would returne the next daye.

The first of August, the same salvadges returned with three women with them in another biskey shallop, bringing with them many beaver skyns to exchaunge for knyves and beades; the saganio of that place they told them Messamot, seated upon a river not farr off, which they called Emanuell. The salvadges departing, they hoisted out their bote; and the pilot, Captain R. Davies, with twelve others, rowed into the bay wherein their ship road, and landed on a galland island, where they found gooseberries, strawberries, raspices, hurts,* and all the island full of hugh high trees of divers sorts: after they had delighted

* [Whortleberries,—the word still retained in heraldry.—Eds.]

themselves there a while, they returned abourd againe and observed the place to stand in 44 degrees one-third.*

2. About midnight, the moone shining bright and the wynd being fayre, at nor-east they departed from this place, setting their course so-west, for soe the coast lieth.

3. Early in the morning they were faire by the shoar, a league from yt, and saw many islands of great bignes and many great sownds going betwixt them, but made proofe of none of them, but found great stoare of fish all along the coast.

4. They were thwart of the cape or headland, which stands in 43 degrees,† the shipp being in 42 degrees 50 minutes ;

* The latitude here given would lead to the supposition that the island referred to was Mount Desert Island, in Frenchman's Bay ; but nearly all other histories record Manhegin Island as the point at which they first landed.

† In order to verify and define, in modern nomenclature, the description of the course held by the adventurers, as given in this and the following three pages, a very elaborate and beautiful manuscript map of this coast, in the British Museum, on a scale of two miles to an inch, has been consulted. The examination leads unequivocally to the inference, that the observation of the latitude, as here quoted, is incorrect by rather more than half a degree. The conclusion which, from a careful study of the map, the editor has adopted as most consistent with *all* the details here described, is, that the headland referred to is Cape Small Point, and that the three islands are Damiscove Island, Wood Island, and Outward Heron Island, with the Pumpkin Island ledges lying (as described) southward of the eastearnmost of the three. The two latter of the three islands lie agreeably with the description, east and west of each other, but Damiscove Island is to the *southward* of Wood Island. If no allowance be made for this discrepancy, it appears impossible to find any other trio of islands so nearly approaching the description, either as to their bearing with reference to each other and to the headland, or their distance respectively from Penobscot and the St. George's Islands. The inference that the headland is Cape Small Point is based on the fact, that no more southerly cape would offer a great number of islands between itself and the ship while lying southward of such cape ; and if we assume it to be more northerly, we wander still further from the latitude quoted by our author, and with still less correspondence with the description in other minor points ; this would be the case, for example, if we were to adopt the supposition, which

betwixt the place they were now at and the said cape or headland, yt is all full of islands and deepe sounds for any shipping to goe in by them, and where is exceeding good fishing for cod, great and small, bigger than what come from the banck of the Newfoundland. This cape is lowland, shewing white like sand, but yt is all whit rocks, and a strong tyde goeth there. They ran within half a league of the cape, and from thence the land fell awaye and falls in from this headland, nor-west and by nore, and nor-west. They keptt their course from this headland and came to three islands, where they found a ledge of rocks to the so-ward, which made them hale off from them, and the wynd being at nor-est, they passed them, keeping their coast still west and by south, and west so-west, untill twelve of the clock at night, and made from this headland, in all thirty leagues.

5. They made a west nor-west way, from four of the clock in the morning untill three of the clock in the afternoone, and made fifteen leagues, and then they saw the land againe; for from the cape before named, they saw noe more land but those three islands untill now, in which tyme they ran forty-five leagues, and the land bore of them, when they saw yt firste, nor-west and by north, and yt shewed yt self in this forme.



Nine leagues or more from yt, there be three high mountaynes that lie in on the land, the land called Segohquet, neere

the examination has sometimes suggested, that the Matinicus Islands and Moose Point were referred to.

about the river of Penobscot.* They stood towards this high land untill twelve of the clock noone the next daye, and they found the ship to be by observation in 43.

6. From twelve of the clock noon they kept their course due west and came neere unto the three islands, lying low and flat by the water, shewing white to the water as if it were sand; but yt is white rock, making shew afar off almost like Dover Clifles. There lyeth so-west from the easter-most of the three islands a white rockye island, and those other three islands lye one of the other east and west; soe they stood their course west fast by them, and as theys tooke to the westward, the highland before spoken made shewe of this forme, bearing of them then nore-nor-west.



From hence they kept still their course west and by nore towards three other islands, which they saw lying from those islands eight leagues; and about ten of the clock at night, having sent in their boat before to make yt, they bore in for one of them, the which they afterwards named St George his Island; they sounded all along as they came in, and found very deepe water, hard about forty fathome. In the morning they were envyrouned every way with islands, they told upward of thirty island from about their shipp, very good sayling out betweene them.

7. They weyed anchor, thereby to ride in more saffety how-soever the wind should happen to blow; how be yt before they put from the island they found a crosse set up, one of the same which Captain George Weyman, in his discovery, for all after

* The mountains of Penobscot stand in three clumps, each of which would probably have the appearance at a distance of a single mountain.

occasions, left upon this island. Having sayled to the westward, they brought the high land before spoken of to be north, and then it shewed thus,—



About midnight, Captain Gilbert caused his shipp's boat to be mannde with fourteen persons and the Indian Skidwares, (brought into England by Captain Wayman) and rowed to the westward from their shipp, to the river of Pamaquid, which they found to be four leagues distant from the shipp, where she road. The Indian brought them to the salvadges' houses, where they found a hundred men, women, and childrene; and their commander, or sagamo, amongst them, named Nahanada, who had been brought likewise into England by Captain Wayman, and returned thither by Captain Hanam, setting forth for those parts and some part of Canada the year before; at their first comyng the Indians betooke them to their armes, their bowes and arrowes; but after Nahanada had talked with Skidwares and perceaved that they were English men, he caused them to lay aside their bowes and arrowes, and he himself came unto them and ymbraced them, and made them much welcome, and entertayned them with much chierfulness, and did they likewise him; and after two howers thus enterchangeably spent, they returned abourd againe.

CAPUT IX.

Of some accidents happening in the firste settlement of this northern colonie.

9. Sonday, the chief of both the shippes, with the greatest part of all the company, landed on the island where the crosse

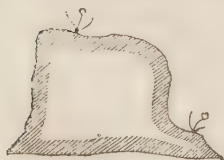
stood, the which they called St. George's Island, and heard a sermon delivered unto them by Mr. Seymour, his preacher, and soe returned abourd againe.

10. Captain Popham manned his shallop, and Captain Gilbert his ship boat, with fifty persons in both, and departed for the river of Pemaquid, carrying with them Skidwares, and arrived in the mouthe of the river ; there came forth Nahanada, with all his company of Indians with their bowes and arrowes in their handes. They being before his dwelling-house, would not willingly have all our people come on shoare, using them in all kind sort after their manner ; neverthelesse, after one hower, they all suddenly withdrew themselves into the woodes, nor was Skidwares desirous to returne with them any more abourd. Our people loth to proffer any vyolence unto them by drawing him by force, suffered him to stay behind, promising to returne to them the next day following, but he did not. After his departure they imbarcked themselves, and rowed to the further side of the river and there remayned on the shoare for that night.

11. They returned to their shippes towards the evening, where they still road under St. George's Island.*

12. They weyed anchors and sett saile to goe for the river of Sachadehoc ; they had little wynd and kept their course west.

13. They were south of the island of Sutquin,† a league from yt, and yt riseth in this form hereunder ; but they did not take yt to be Sutquin.



Sutquin, being sowth of it.



The high mountains being north from you rise thus.

* Captain John Smith makes them to fall in with Manhegin Island on the 11th of August.

† Seguin Island.

Soe the weather being very faire, they sought the islande further to the westward;* but at length fynding that they had overshott yt, they bore up helme, but were soon becalmed; by which means they were constreyned to remayne at sea, when about midnight there arose a mighty storme upon them, which put them in great danger, by reason they were so neere the shoare and could not gett off, the wynd all the while at south, and yt blew very stiffe, soe as they were compelled to turne yt to and agayne, hard abourd the lee shoare, many rocks and islands under their lee hard by them; but, God be thancked, they escaped untill yt was daye, the storme still contynuing untill noone the next daye.

14. Soe soone as the daye gave light, they perceaved that they were hard abourd the shore, in the bay that they were in the daie before, which made them look out for some place to thrust in the shipp to save their lives; for towing the long boat, yt laye suncke at the sterne two howers and more, yett would they not cutt her off, lyving in hope to save her; so bearing up helme, they stood in right with the shoare, when anon they perceaved two little islands, to which they made, and there they found (God be thancked) good anchoring, where they road untill the storme broak, which was the next daie after. Here they freed their boat, and had her ashore to repaire her, being much torne and spoiled. These islands are too leagues to the westward of Sachadehoc. Upon one of them they went on shoare, and found four salvadges and one woman. The islands all rockye and full of pine trees.

15. The storme ended, and the wynd came faire for them to goe for Sachadehoc, the river whether they were bound to and enjoyned to make their plantacion in; soe they weyed anchor and sett sayle, and came to the eastward and found the island of Sutquin, and anchored under yt, for the wynd was of the

* Damiscove Island.

shoare, by which they could not gett into Sachadehoc; yet Capt. Popham, with the fly-boat, gott in.

16. In the morning, Capt. Popham sent his shallop to helpe in the Mary and John, which weyed anchors, and being calme, was soone towed in and anchored by the Guift's side.*

17. Capt. Popham, in his pynnace, with thirty persons, and Capt. Gilbert in his long boat, with eighteen persons more, went early in the morning from their shipp in the river Sachadehoc, to view the river, and to search where they might find a fitt place for their plantation. They sayled up into the river neere forty leagues, and found yt to be a very gallant river, very deepe, and seldome lesse water than three fathome, when they found sest;† whereupon they proceeded no farther, but in their returne homewards they observed many goodly islands therein, and many braunches of other small rivers falling into yt.

18. They all went ashore, and there made choise of a place for their plantacion,‡ at the mouth or entry of the ryver on the

* This ship, it will be remembered, was called the "Gift of God."

† Query, rest,—as in our old word "zest," an afternoon's nap; as, "to go to one's zest,"—from "siesta."—*Port.*

‡ Belknap, in his "American Biography," says that they landed on a peninsula; but in the Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society it is called Parker's Island, which according to the MS. map already alluded to, is formed by the waters of the Kennebec on the west, Jeremysquam Bay on the east, the sea on the south, and a small strait dividing it from Arrowsick Island on the north. It is called Parker's Island because it was purchased of the natives, in 1650, by one John Parker, who was the first occupant after the year 1608, when this colony was broken up.

[Strachey says, "They all went ashore, and there made choise of a place for their plantacion, at the mouth or entry of the ryver on the west side, . . . being almost an island" If he had changed the last three words of the foregoing into the term *peninsula*, which exactly expresses the idea, there could have been no pretence that the colonists landed on an island. In fact, no writer but the late Governor James Sullivan, who wrote the paper in the Massachusetts Historical Collections referred to by the English editor, has

west side (for the river bendeth yt self towards the nor-east, and by east,) being almost an island, of a good bignes, being in a province called by the Indians Sabino, so called of a sagamo or chief commander under the ground bassaba. As they were ashoare, three canoas full of Indians came to them, but would not come neere, but rowed away up the river.

19. They all went ashoare where they had made choise of their plantation and where they had a sermon delivered unto them by their preacher; and after the sermon, the president's commission was read, with the lawes to be observed and kept. George Popham, gent., was nominated president; Captain Raleigh Gilbert, James Davies, Richard Seymer, preacher, Captain Richard Davies, Captain Harlow, the same who brought away the salvadges at this tyme shewed in London, from the river of Canada, were all sworne assistants; and soe they returned back againe.

20. All went to shoare again, and there began to entrench and make a fort, and to buyld a storehouse, soe contynewing the 21st, 22nd, 23rd, 24th, 25th, 26th, 27th.

28. Whilst most of the hands laboured hard about the fort and the carpenters about the buylding of a small pinnace, the president overseeing and applying every one to his worke, Captain Gilbert departed in the shallop upon a discovery to the westward, and sayled all the daye by many gallant islands.

advanced the idea that an island was the first landing place of the colony.—
W. S. B.]

[In 1807, and the completion of two centuries from the landing described above, a party of gentlemen from Bath visited the mouth of Kennebec River, and examined the supposed place where these colonists attempted to form their settlement. To the spot that bore evidence of the best claim to this distinction, and which is on a "peninsula," they gave the name of Point Popham, which it retains. There are, besides, abundant evidences of settlements, anciently, on the southern extremity of Parker's Island, as well as at Stage Island, from which the inhabitants were driven by the natives about 1680.—Eds.]

The wynd at night comyng contrary, they came to anchor that night under a headland, by the Indians called Semiamis;* the land exceeding good and fertile, as appeared by the trees growing thereon being goodly and great, most oake and walnutt, with spacious passages betweene, and noe rubbish under, and a place most fitt to fortifye on, being by nature fortified on two sides with a spring of water under yt.

29. They departed from this headland Semiamis, in the height of 43 1-2 degrees, and rowed along the shoar to the westward, for that the wynd was against them, and which blewe so hard that they reached no farther than an island two leagues off, where, whilst they anchored, two canoas passed by them but would not come neere them.

30. They returned homewards before the wynd, sayling by many goodly and gallant islands; for betwixt the said headland and Semiamis, and the river of Sachadehoc, is a very great bay;† in the which there lyeth soe many islands and so thicke and neere together, that can hardly be discerned the number, yet may any shipp passe betwixt, the greatest parte of them having seldome lesse water than eight or ten fathome about them. These islands are all overgrowne with woods, as oak, walnutt, pine, spruse trees, hasell nutts, sarsaparilla, and hurts in abundaunce, only they found no saxafras at all in the country, and this night they arrived at the fort againe.

31. And 1st of September, 2nd, 3rd, and 4th, nothing was done, but only for the furtheraunce and buyldinge of the fort and storehouse to receave ashore their victualls.

5. About noone, there came into the entraunce of the river of Sachadehoc and soe unto the fort, as our people were at their worke, nine canoes with forty salvadges in them, men,

* Cape Elizabeth.

† Casco Bay, which is said to contain as many islands as there are days in the year.

women and children, and amongst them was Nahanada and Skidwares. They came up into the fort, and the president gave them meat and drinck, and used them exceeding kindly. Two or three howers they remayned there and they parted, Skidwares and an other salvadge staying still, with whome at night Captain Gilbert, James Davies, and Ellis Beast, went over to the farthest side of the river, whether all the rest had withdrawen themselves, and there remayned with them all the night; and early in the morninge, the salvadges departed in their canoas for the river of Pamaquid, promising Captain Gilbert to accompany him in their canoas to the river of Penobscott, where the bassaba dwells.

6. And 7th, the busines of the fort only attended.

8. Captain Gilbert, with twenty-two others, departed in the shallop for the river of Penobscot, taking with him divers sorts of marchandize to trade with the bassaba; but by reason the wynd held easterly, being contrary, yt was three daies before he gott into the river of Penobscot.

11. Early in the morning they came into the river of Pamaquid, there to call Nahanada and Skidwares to goe along with them; but, being arrived there, they found that they were all gone from thence unto the river of Penobscot before, wherefore, they sett sayle for that river; and all that day, as likewise the 12th and 13th, they sayled and searched to the eastward, yet by noe meanes could find the river, for which they returned, their victuals spent, and the wynd large and good, and in too dayes arrived againe at the fort, having had a sight, the 15th in the morning, of a blasing starr in the nor-east of them.

The 16th, 17th, 18th, 19th, 20th, 21st, 22nd, all labored about the fort and buylding up of the storehouse.

CAPUT X.

The death of Capt. Popham; Capt. Gilbert disposeth of himself for England when the companie woud then stay no longer; albeit Capt. Davies returned unto them with a great supply from England.

23. Captain Gilbert, accompanied with nineteen others, departed in his shallop, to goe for the head of the river of Sachadehoc. They sayled all this daye, and the 24th the like, untill six of the clock in the afternoone, when they landed on the river's side, where they found a champion land and very fertile, where they remayned all that night.

25. In the morning, they departed from thence and sayled up the river and came to a flatt low island where ys a great cataract or downfall of water, which runneth by both sides of this island very shold and swift.* In this island they found

* Query, Swan Island, a few miles up the river; the fall of water round which may be more properly called a downfall of water than a cataract. The first great fall of water from the mouth of the river is that at Waterville: but there is no island at that spot laid down in the best modern maps.

[To any one acquainted with the Kennebec River in the neighborhood of Swan Island the theory of the English editor in the above note will at once appear to be absolutely without foundation, as the navigation on the West Side of said Island is as smooth as in any part of the river, while on the East side the current, though interrupted by rocks, has always allowed of vessels of every class sailing through. The building of the dam across the Kennebec at Augusta, by causing the water to flow back some distance, has of course changed to a degree some of the natural features of the territory in the neighborhood. Before this dam was built there was, as I am credibly informed, just above it a low, flat island, called of late years "Coney Island." By the shores of this island the water was very rapid, so that boats were accustomed to "warp" through, unless they had a very strong fair wind. A few miles above is the "Six mile fall," so called, impassable to a keel boat. Here without doubt, were the "flatt low island" the "great cataract or downfall of water" which the explorers came to on the 25th September, and "another downfall," which on the following day entirely prevented their further progress.—W. S. B.]

great store of grapes, both red and white ; good hopps, as also chiballs and garlike ; they haled their boat with a strong rope through this downfall perforce, and went neere a league further up, and here they lay all night ; and in the first of the night there called certaine salvages on the further side of the river unto them in broken English ; they answered them againe and parted long with them, when towards morning they departed.

26. In the morning there came a canoa unto them, and in her a Sagamo and four salvages, some of those which spoke to them the night before. The Sagamo called his name Sebenoa, and told us how he was lord of the river Sachadehoc. They entertayned him friendly, and tooke him into their boat and presented with some triffling things, which he accepted ; howbeyt, he desired some one of our men to be put into his canoa as a pawne of his safety, whereupon Captain Gilbert sent in a man of his, when presently the canoa rowed away from them with all the speed they could make up the river. They followed with the shallop, having great care that the Sagamo should not leape overboard. The canoa quickly rowed from them and landed, and the men made to their howses, being neere a league on the land from the river's side, and carried our man with them. The shallop making good waye, at length came to another downefall, which was so shallowe and soe swift, that by no meanes they could pass any further, for which, Captain Gilbert, with nine others, landed and tooke their fare, the salvadge Sagamo, with them, and went in search after those other salvages, whose howses, the Sagamo told Capain Gilbert, were not farr off ; and after a good tedious march, they came indeed at length unto those salvages' howses wheere found neere fifty able men very strong and tall, such as their like before they had not seene ; all newly painted and armed with their bowes and arrowes. Howbeyt, after that the Sagamo had talked with them, they delivered back again the man, and used all the rest

very friendly, as did ours the like by them, who shewed them their comodities of beads, knives, and some copper, of which they seemed very fond ; and by waye of trade, made shew that they would come downe to the boat and there bring such things as they had to exchange them for ours. Soe Captain Gilbert departed from them, and within half an howre after he had gotten to his boat, there came three canoas down unto them, and in them sixteen salvages, and brought with them some tobacco and certayne small skynes, which where of no value ; which Captain Gilbert perceaving, and that they had nothing ells wherewith to trade, he caused all his men to come abourd, and as he would have putt from the shore ; the salvadges perceiving so much, subtilely devised how they might put out the fier in the shallop, by which meanes they sawe they should be free from the danger of our men's pieces, and to performe the same, one of the salvadges came into the shallop and taking the fier brand which one of our company held in his hand thereby to light the matches, as if he would light a pipe of tobacco, as sone as he had gotten yt into his hand he presently threw it into the water and leapt out of the shallop. Captain Gilbert seeing that, suddenly commanded his men to betake them to their musketts and the targettiers too, from the head of the boat, and bad one of the men before, with his targett on his arme, to stepp on the shore for more fier ; the salvages resisted him and would not suffer him to take any, and some others holding fast the boat roap that the shallop could not putt off. Captain Gilbert caused the musquettiers to present their peeces, the which, the salvages seeing, presently let go the boatroap and betooke them to their bowes and arrowes, and ran into the bushes, nocking their arrowes, but did not shoot, neither did ours at them. So the shallop departed from them to the further side of the river, where one of the canoas came unto them, and would have excused the fault of the others. Captain Gilbert made shew as if

he were still friends, and entertayned them kindlye and soe left them, returning to the place where he had lodged the night before, and there came to an anchor for that night. The head of the river standeth in 45 degrees and odd mynutts. Upon the continent they found abundance of spruse trees such as are able to maast the greatest ship his majestic hath, and many other trees, oke, walnutt, pineaple; fish, abundance; great store of grapes, hopps, chiballs, also they found certaine codd in which they supposed the cotton wooll to grow, and also upon the bancks many shells of pearle.

27. Here they sett up a crosse and then returned homeward, in the way seeking the by river of some note called Sasanoa. This daye and the next they sought yt, when the weather turned fowle and full of fog and raine, they made all hast to the fort before which, the 29th, they arrived.

30. and 1 and 2 of October, all busye about the fort.

3. There came a canoa unto some of the people of the fort as they were fishing on the sand, in which was Skidwares, who badd them tell their president that Nahanada, with the Bashabacs brother and others, were on the further side of the river, and the next daie would come and visitt him.

4. There came two canoas to the fort, in which were Nahanada and his wife, and Skidwares, and the Basshabacs brother, and one other called Amenquin, a Sagamo; all whome the president feasted and entertayned with all kindnes, both that day and the next, which being Sondaye, the president carried them with him to the place of publike prayers, which they were at both morning and evening, attending yt with great reverence and silence.

6. The salvages departed all except Amenquin the Sagamo, who would needes staye amongst our people a longer tyme. Upon the departure of the others, the president gave unto every one of them copper beades, or knives, which contented

them not a little, as also delivered a present unto the Basshabae's brother, and another for his wife, giving him to understand that he would come unto his court in the river of Penobscot, and see him very shortly, bringing many such like of his country commodities with him.

You maie please to understand how, whilst this business was thus followed here, soone after their first arrivall, that had dispatch't away Capt. Robert Davies, in the Mary and John to advertise of their safe arrival and forwardnes of their plantacion within this river of Sacadehoc, with letters to the Lord Chief Justice, ymportuninge a supply for the most necessary wants to the subsisting of a colony, to be sent unto them betymes the next yeare.

After Capt. Davies' departure they fully finished the fort, trencht, and fortified yt with twelve pieces of ordinaunce, and built fifty howses therein, besides a church and a store-howse; and the carpenters framed a pretty Pynace of about some thirty tonne, which they called the Virginia; the chief ship wright being one Digby of London.

Many discoveries likewise had been made both to the mayne and unto the neighbour rivers, and the frontier nations fully discovered by the dilligence of Capt. Gilbert, had not the wynter proved soe extreame unseasonable and frosty; for yt being in the yeare 1607, when the extraordinary frost was felt in most parts of Europe, yt was here likewise as vehement, by which noe boat could stir upon any busines. Howbeyt, as tyme and occasyon gave leave, there was nothing omitted which could add unto the benefit or knowledg of the planters, for which when Capt. Davies arrived there in the yeare following (sett out from Topsam, the port towne of Exciter, with a shipp laden full of vitualls, armes, instruments and tooles, etc.,) albeyt, he found Mr. George Popham, the president, and some other dead, yet he found all things in good forwardness, and many kinds of furr

obteyned from the Indians by way of trade ; good store of sarsaparilla gathered, and the new pynace all finished. But by reason that Capt. Gilbert received letters that his brother was newly dead, and a faire portion of land fallen unto his share, which required his repaier home, and noe mynes discovered, nor hope thereof, being the mayne intended benefit expected to uphold the charge of this plantacion, and the feare that all other wynters would prove like the first, the company by no means would stay any longer in the country, especyally Capt. Gilbert being to leave them, and Mr. Popham, as aforesaid, dead ; wherefore they all ymbarqued in this new arrived shipp, and in the new pynace, the Virginia, and sett saile for England. And this was the end of that northerne colony uppon the river Sachadehoc.

ARTICLE V.

SOME ACCOUNT OF THE EARLY SETTLEMENTS AT SAGADAHOCK

AND ON THE ANDROSCOGGIN RIVER ;

WITH A SUGGESTION THAT THE EXPLORATION BY POPHAM'S COLONY WAS
UP THE ANDROSCOGGIN RIVER, AND NOT THE KENNEBEC.

BY JOHN MCKEEN, ESQ., OF BRUNSWICK.

It appears from the Collections of William Strachey, published by the Hakluyt Society in London in 1849, that Capt. George Weymouth visited the Sagadahock in the spring of 1605. He wended his way in his barge some sixty miles up the river which "trended westward into the maine". The next year, in the month of August, Capt. George Popham arrived at Sagadahock, designing to establish a colony there. He went up the river forty leagues, and finally concluded to settle his colony at the mouth of the river. It is doubtful which course these adventurers took after leaving the ancient Sagadahock—whether they went up the Kennebec or the Pejepscot. But whichever way they went it will be difficult to reconcile it with their narration. It will be attempted to show, that the river they ascended on leaving the Sagadahock, was, to a certain extent the Pejepscot river, and farther and continuous was the Androscoggin.—In the remarks and suggestions to be made in our progress up the river we shall give some historical facts, present some considerations in their connection, and correct some statements

which have crept into several accounts relating to our early history.

The exact whereabouts of Popham's settlement has not been fully determined ; and as inquiry is being made, and as the subject of the Sagadahock, its settlements and its description would require a chapter of some considerable length, we leave it to be prepared by another hand, at some future day.*

Of the names given by the Indians to the rivers and the several localities upon them, and their signification, we can say but little. Many of their names, were, no doubt, generally indicative of some property in the subject of them, but the peculiarity in the pronunciation of the language has involved in obscurity their orthography to such a degree, that it is very difficult to arrive at a knowledge of the signification of their names. Thus the name of Sagadahock has lost every original characteristic, which to those acquainted with the language might lead to its original import; yet its meaning is the mouth of a river. We are indebted to the Indians themselves for the explanation. † In leaving the Sagadahock we pass on in a northerly course through a narrow strait called the Chop's, into Merrymeeting Bay, originally called by the Indians, Quabacook. ‡ It presents from this position, a long, broad expanse of water, three or four miles in length, and a mile or more in breadth, and extends westerly at about right angles with the Sagadahock. The shores appear to be considerably indented, exhibiting several coves, inlets, points of land, and headlands. And at this point there is no decided appearance of the ingress of any river, so that an entire stranger in those early times, would be likely to wend his way, and follow this long and broad expanse of water before

* It is understood that Bishop Burgess and some other members of our Society have this matter in hand.—[ED.]

† See Dep. of Wm. Lithgow among Pejepscot papers in Me. His. Society.

‡ Dep. of Pierpole an Indian.

him, taking the same for the principal river. This bay receives the waters of five rivers, of which the two principal are the Kennebec and Pejepscot—the former trending north-easterly, the latter a little north of west. The other rivers are comparatively inconsiderable, viz: the Abbacadusset, which flows into the bay a little northerly of the Kennebec—the point of junction of the two rivers is called Abbacadusset point. Further west the Cathance river enters, and both are navigable some three or four miles. The point of land at the mouth of the Cathance is called Somerset point. Muddy river is very small, and comes in near the Pejepscot, and the point made with it, is called Pleasant point. On the south of the bay lies what is now called Butler's cove—and the headland on the east side of the cove, makes the point coming into the bay from the Pejepscot. This bay was called Merrymeeting Bay by the English, on account of its being the place of rendezvous of the several tribes, whose locations were on these rivers having their confluence in this collection of waters. Here about this bay, on its points, headlands, and coves, they assembled, deliberated and concerted their plans; mutually receiving and imparting information, feasting, drinking and revelling. The principal places of meeting for these purposes were on the northerly side of the bay, where they were less exposed to attack from the English, at Abbacadusset, Somerset, and Pleasant points. It was at Somerset point that Col. Harmon and Major Moody met those Indians, who were returning from the burning of Brunswick and the massacre of its inhabitants,* the last of June or first of July

* This destruction of Brunswick was in retaliation for the attack made on Norridgewock the year proceeding, by Col. Westbrook. Following this event, the next season, Capt's. Harmon, Moulton and others surprised Norridgewock, and effectually subdued the Indians. It was Richard Jacques, who killed Ralle; he was son in law of Capt. Harmon, having married his daughter Sarah. Both Harmon and Jacques moved to Harpswell in 1727. The former died there. Jacques received a mortal wound in a skirmish with

1722, and killed nearly all of them. They had retired to this place, where they supposed themselves safe, and, after a scene of rioting and drunkenness, had fallen asleep around their fires, when they were overtaken and killed. It was to one of these points of land that a deputation was sent from Brunswick to meet Ralle, to be informed as to his character and intentions, who returned and reported that they "believed him an incendiary of mischief."* It was at the Chops, entering the bay on the east side, that Job Lewis and Arthur Noble and their associates erected a Fort, capable of defending the passage, and applied to Gov. Shirley in 1746 for soldiers to be placed there at the expense of the Colony.†

This Bay from being formerly deep and navigable for any vessels of that day, has long since become shallow; being filled up with sand brought down and deposited from the several rivers emptying into it. The channels through the bay from these rivers vary and change from year to year, with almost every freshet.

In going out of Merrymeeting Bay, the Quabacook of the Indians, westerly, we enter the ancient Pejepscot river. On the right bank, at Pleasant Point, Mr. Thomas Gyles lived.‡ He settled there some years prior to 1666. He was the father of Capt. John Gyles, who was for a long time in the service of the Government, as an interpreter to the Indians among whom he had been a prisoner many years. He built Fort George in

the Indians along our eastern shore; he was brought home and died in Harpswell. They came to Harpswell to York. Jacques family came from Newbury, Mass.

* Brunswick Records.

† Pejepscot papers in Hist. Soc. Library.

‡ This Thomas Gyles afterward lived at Pemaquid and was killed there by the Indians in 1689. His sons John and Thomas lived and died in Boston or immediate vicinity, their sister Mary married a Brewer and Margaret married a Webber. All lived and died in the vicinity of Boston.

Brunswick in 1715, and was commander of it, and was otherwise in public service for many years. At the commencement of King Philip's war, Mr. Gyles, the father, was taken prisoner and his wife was killed while in the garden picking beans. On the left side, in what is now called Brunswick, Mr. Thomas Stevens once lived. He was an ancient planter. He purchased of the Indians in 1675 from Robinhood, Eramket Daniels and Manessumet, Indian Sagamores,* also of Mr. Thomas Purchas previously. Mr. Stevens lived near the path or carrying place to the New Meadows river, which is an arm or creek making up northerly from Casco Bay, and which is not more than a mile across. Mr. Stevens was driven away and his house burnt in 1676. His widow Margaret Stevens lived afterward up the Kennebec river, near Swan Island. In going further up the Pejepscot, and passing by sundry small islands, we come to the lands of Jas. Thomas† and Samuel York‡ who dwelt on the north side of the river, in what is now called Topsham.§ They purchased of Jeromkin Daniels and Robin-Hood, July 20, 1670. Their right extended up as far as Terimugus cove, near where the Rail Road Bridge has been recently built. The above titles on both sides of the river are the only Indian deeds known to have been given. With the termination of these rights we may believe the Indians admitted the commencement of the much talked of Patent of Thomas Purchas, as we never hear of any other claims set up to any lands,

* Pejepscot papers.

† Thomas lived subsequently in North Hampton, N. H. His heirs have lived in other places. Benj. lived at Stonington, his daughter Abigail lived in Durham, N. H., and married a Leathers. Their brother Joseph lived in Durham, N. H.

‡ He afterward lived in Cape Ann where his children also lived.

§ Topsham so named from the fact that Robert Temple brought emigrants there from Topsham, England.

supposed to have been embraced in the grant to Thomas Purchas and George Way, and which extended up the Pejepscot river eight or ten miles. Here the land on both sides of the river together with the river and falls went by the name of Pejepscot. At the lower part of the falls, on what might have been a point of land or rocks, now an Island, where the toll house of the Bridge now stands, tradition informs us that there were formerly what appeared to be the remains of a Fort, and that there were many Indian skeletons strewed over the ground. The explanation has been, that the original tribe residing there had been carried off by the plague, or some destructive pestilence, and that the remnant joined other tribes. In the middle of the falls are three or four islands, which, there is reason to believe, were formerly but one, with water running rapidly on both sides. The island would have contained four or five acres or more, and would have been almost covered with water in high freshets. Salmon and sturgeon were formerly very abundant in and about these falls—the latter never went above, but were always in the vicinity below. This place was an Indian thoroughfare on their passage from Merrymeeting and Casco Bays, toward Canada, and to their settlements along the river and vicinity. When Abijah Young and Molly Phinney were taken prisoners, about Casco Bay, May 5, 1755, on their way to Canada, they passed so near to Fort George in the morning as to hear the cock crow in the Fort; they went to Sabattis's river, and over the pond of the same name toward the Canadas. It was at this place, then called Pejepscot, that Mr. Thomas Purchas settled and had his residence near the falls—on a tract of land *not purchased from the Indians*, but held under a grant or patent from the King, through the council of Plymouth, made to himself and Mr. Way of Dorchester, England. This patent conveyed the land and gave them its jurisdiction on both sides of the river. The existence of the patent has been doubted, but it has been

recognized in many ancient transaction, and especially from the fact that Mr. Purchas conveyed the jurisdiction to Massachusetts in 1639 in an indenture with John Winthrop, the Gov. of the State. At this early period the grant must have been known and recognized, or Gov. Winthrop would not have purchased it.

Under this right or patent, Mr. Purchas took possession in the third year of the reign of Charles I, 1628, and pitched his habitation near the foot of Pejepscot Falls. It is said of him, that he was a planter, and improved the soil; that he was a trader in fur and peltry, catching, curing and packing salmon and sturgeon for a foreign market. The house he first built and occupied was burned and the copy of his patent with it. He afterward built "a fair stone house." It is believed that he was the first and only settler for some years above the Sagadahock. And indeed we have no account of any settlement being made on the Kennebec, above Merrymeeting Bay, prior to the settlement at Pejepscot. Christopher Lawson, it is believed, was the first and the pioneer settler on the Kennebec, and he had been previously in the employ of Mr. Purchas. After the jurisdiction of his patent had been conveyed to Massachusetts, there was a meeting at the house of Thomas Ashley, at Merrymeeting Bay, when Mr. Purchas, with other inhabitants appeared and took the oath of allegiance to the temporary government established there by Massachusetts. He was one of the assistants. He was also a magistrate or commissioner under Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Mr. Rigby. There were a number of persons who settled around him at Pejepscot Falls, and a number about Maquoit Bay and Mare Point, who purchased their lands of Mr. Purchas, and the settlement began to assume considerable importance in this part of the country. When Sir Christopher Gardiner fled from Massachusetts to avoid deserved punishment for his misconduct, it is related in Morton's Memorial, that he

went among *the Indians*. It is certain that he came to Pejepscot and took up his abode with Mr. Purchas; and it would seem from the Records of Court that he made no improvement in his character and reputation.* Mr. Purchas continued at Pejepscot actively engaged in business until 1676 when he was driven away by the Indians in Philip's war. After peace was concluded with the Indians, he returned to reclaim his possessions. He continued here a short time, then concluded to return to England in quest of his patent. He went to Boston with Captain Richard Collicut in his coaster, and soon after embarked for England. Capt. Collicut states the fact, and that he never returned to this country after.†

The general appearance of the land, soil and growth presented a very different aspect at this early period from what it has been since—particularly at Pejepscot. Instead of pines and evergreens, indicating a barren soil, we have reason to believe that the land was more fertile and productive. Some

* In Savage's gleanings, Mass. Hist. Col. 3d series, 320, is a letter from Thomas Wiggin, dated Aug. 1632, relating to Sir Christopher Gardner, "who is lately arrived here in Bristol out of New England," which says that Gardner had two wives in London: "about two years and some odd months, he went from them both with a harlot into New England." Here he was found and arrested. The letter adds; "And there one Purchass, a man who liveth in the eastern part of N. E. cominge to the Massatusets, there did he marry with this Gardner's wench, and take her awaye and this Gardner both with him, which was done about a 12 month since, where this Gardner remained ever since, till the 15th of August last he appeared here in Bristol." In Young's Chronicles of Mass. P. 333, is a letter from Thomas Dudley of Boston to the Countess of Lincoln, which says that Gardner was no knight, and that the woman he lived with in this country, was named *Mary Grove*, and that her mother lived 8 miles from Boirdly in Salopshire. Dudley adds, "we have taken order to send her to the two wives in Old England to search her further." In the meantime Purchase probably stopped her and bore off the spoil.—[W.]

† See Dep. of Richard Collicut among Pejepscot papers.

general conflagration had destroyed the former growth and consequently the soil had deteriorated. Our first settlers early in the last century found evidence of the fact, in the hard wood lying upon the ground, decayed and partially burned, and in the general appearance of the forest.

The river being long, coming from a mountainous region, narrow and rapid, discharging more water than any other river in New England,* must, by its periodical freshets, have altered its banks and channels materially, bringing to view ripples, increasing the falls, and filling up places, where the water was more quiet. Hundreds of acres of land may be found in and about Merrymeeting Bay, where were formerly deep and navigable waters. To these causes may be attributed great changes at Pejepscot falls and other places on the river. At this early period in the seventeenth century, there can be no doubt that vessels of almost any burden might come to the foot of Pejepscot falls, and that boats might have *been towed over the rapids*. It should have been mentioned before, that we have the Deposition of an Indian, which gives the signification of Pejepscot, which is, "crooked, like a diving snake." The northerly side of the river was called by the Indians, Sawacook.† Both sides were sometimes called *ah-me-lah-cog-netur-cook*, the signification of which, as given by the Indians, was a "place famous for dried meats." But the more general name of the region around the falls, was Pejepscot, taking the name of the river. There was a Fort here, prior to the one erected by Gov. Edmund Andross in 1688-9. The Warumbee deed was executed at the Fort at Pejepscot in July 1684, to Richard Wharton, a lawyer in Boston, and a member of the council of Andross. But the location of this Fort is not definitely known. Some have conjectured that it stood upon the point of rocks at the falls, on the

* Col. Baldwin.

† Lithgow's Deposition.

northerly side of the river, and cite a tradition of the remains of one having been found there. It is more probable that the Fort in which the Warumbsee deed was executed was "the fair stone house" erected and occupied by Thomas Purchas, which we believe stood on the hill that has from time immemorial been called "fish house hill," on the high banks of the river at Brunswick, now owned and occupied by Miss N. Stone. As there were no vestiges of this stone building, it may be presumed that the materials were taken to build the Fort erected in 1688-9 every structure having been demolished by the Indians.*

As mention is made of this transaction of Mr. Wharton and the Indian Sagamores, it may not be an uninteresting digression to give some account of this purchase. The whole region had been laid waste and depopulated by the war of 1675. On the restoration of peace with the Indians, many who had claims and estates here returned to repossess them. Richard Wharton, desirous of establishing a manory, procured the right of Mr. Purchas from his heirs † and also the claim of his partner in the patent, Geo. Way, ‡ whose heirs also appeared to claim their estate.

With these claims, and desirous of *an enlargement*, he met the Indian Sagamore of the Androscoggin tribe in the Fort at Pejepscot. Here he concluded a bargain, and the Indians ex-

* His widow Elizabeth Purchas married John Blancy, of Lynn, Mass.; both signed the deed.

† This Fort of Sir Edmond Andross, stood near the foot of the falls on the south side of the river. An attempt to blow it up was made by the Indians by a subterraneous passage under the Fort. When Fort George was built the location was removed to a ledge of rocks. Mr. Sullivan in his Hist. of Maine page 178, is entirely mistaken in asserting that there were stone forts erected on the north side of the Pejepscot and at Maquoit.

‡ Eleazer Way gave the deed, who resided at Hartford, Ct., who stiles himself son and heir of Geo. Way of Dorchester in the county of Dorset, with in the Kingdom of England.

ecuted a deed to him July 7, 1684, which was not only *delivered here on that day, but four days subsequently, at the uppermost falls of the Androscoggin river.** John Shapleigh of Kittery, heir of Nicholas Shapleigh, had previously given a deed to him of Harpswell, Merriconeag and Sebascodiggin Island.† These claims being made out in all the forms of law, and all covered by the Warumbee deed, he went to England to procure a Patent for a Manory. But he died before it was completed, a copy of a draft of the Patent signed "Popples" is in the Library of the Maine Historical Society.‡ Wharton died in England, insolvent. His administrator Capt. Ephm. Savage, sold the whole tract to Thomas Hutchinson, John Wentworth, Adam Winthrop, John Watts, David Jeffries, Stephen Minot, Oliver Noyes, and John Rusk in equal eighths, the consideration being 140£. John Wentworth resided in Portsmouth, N. H., the others all lived in Boston, Mass. These persons were styled the Pejepscot Proprietors. Their Records with many of their papers are deposited with the Maine Historical Society.

In continuing our progress up the Pejepscot river, and over the falls on either side of the island, and winding along upward, the explication of the name of Pejepscot is both apparent and appropriate. Three miles above are ripples, but so inconsiderable as to be hardly worthy of notice, as they would afford little or no obstruction to the passage of boats. The banks of the river are high as we pass up about four miles, when we come to rapids, wide and full of cragged rocks, and which were always impassable. Here is an important carrying place, not only to pass the rapids on the way up the river, but to go to an Indian settlement two or three miles easterly, *on Sabbattus' river*. This river makes the outlet of a pond of the same name,

* See copy of Deed among Pejepscot Records. † See Pejepscot Records.

‡ See Pejepscot Papers.

about eight miles distant, and which enters the ancient Pejepscot in these rapids. The Indian route to Canada was by way of this pond. At the carrying place there was once an English trading house, the remains of which have been visible within the memory of some of our aged men, who have recently passed away. This trading establishment was a great annoyance to Mr. Purchas, intercepting his trade with the Indians. He attempted to have it removed, by calling on the aid of Phillip Lewis, Mr. Munjoy, and Mr. Joslyn,* who went with him to remonstrate against its continuance, for the reason that the territory and privilege were his own. If Capt. Weymouth and Geo. Popham took this river in their excursion up the Sagadahock in 1606-7, they could not probably have gone further than this place. And indeed it may have been here where Capt. Gilbert had a parley with the Indians, and went a league distant from the shore to their settlement. This place would be not far from forty miles by the river from the entrance of the Sagadahock. These falls have been called the Ten Mile Falls, being that distance from Pejepscot falls.

In proceeding further, the river continues crooked, interspersed with islands and some rich intervals. About six miles above, are ripples, which are passable with boats, except at very low water. Two miles above, we come to a very important branch of the river called the Little Androscoggin. Here ends the Pejepscot river of ancient times, and at the falls above commences the Androscoggin of old. These falls have recently been called the 20 Mile Falls, often Harris' Falls, and sometimes Lewiston Falls, but by the Indians, Amityonpontook. At these falls there were formerly great abundance of salmon. It was probably near these falls on the south bank, that Col.

* Phillip Lewis and George Munjoy were respectable inhabitants of Falmouth, and Henry Joslyn a distinguished magistrate of the Province, resided at Black Point, Scarboro.—[W.]

Church halted and encamped the first night after leaving the Fort at Pejepscot falls, Sept. 13, 1690. The continuance of the river upward from Amityonpontook was uniformly the Androscoggin or Ammoscoggin or Ameriscoggin. The name has been variously spelt, both by the Indians and English.

In proceeding up the river, we pass sundry small ripples, falls, and islands, the banks occasionally high, with now and then intervals, which are overflowed in times of freshets. After going up, pursuing various courses, about twenty-five miles, we arrive at Rouameuo, a large ancient Indian settlement, which, with their planting grounds covered about five hundred acres of land.* This was the head quarters of the Androscoggin tribe. Here they had erected a chapel, and a catholic priest resided among them. They had a Fort which was taken by Col. Church and demolished Sept. 14, 1690.

The land on both sides of the river for a dozen miles or more was called Roccamecco, and by other names which might have been only some of the diverse ways of spelling the same name.† About 12 miles or more above the village, now Jay point, are the Great Androscoggin, or Ammoscoggin Falls, the largest on the river; it was said of them, that a person could cross the river by passing under the sheet of falling water. About these falls which have been in modern times, sometimes called "Pen-necook falls," there once resided a small tribe from the Peene-

* From the Dep. of Wm. Lithgow in the Library of the Maine Historical Society, it would seem on the authority of Capt. Joseph Bean, who resided among the Indians some years at Roccamecco as a prisoner, that both sides of the river were called Arrockaumecook—that Arrockauegan meant a hoe, —a name given from the fact that there were their planting grounds.—He further states, that the waters above in the upper part of the river were called Aurconganuntacook, which is probably of the same import with the name of Androscoggin.

† See Dep. of John Dunlap, James Walker and als in Library of Maine Historical Society.

cooks who had migrated from the Pennecook, of N. H. Mr. Farmer, in his "Book of the Indians," makes mention of this fact, and some of the circumstances relating to their migration.

These tribes living about the upper portion of this river were near neighbors of the Piguachet and Ossipees, and were in habits of frequent intercourse with them and the Pennecooks of N. H., and knew less of the tribes residing down the river some 60 or 70 miles. This upper portion of the river was frequented by our New England men,* who were occasionally engaged in scouting for the Indians between the years 1675 and 1700 by way of the Piguachet country, while they were entirely ignorant of the country below on the river, and called the river above by no other name than Androscoggin. Those who reached the lower part of the river by the sea coast, had always called that part of the river Pejepscot; but the English in their written deeds and instruments have often called the whole river, the Androscoggin—as the Kennebeck has supplanted the Sagadahock—so has the Androscoggin the Pejepscot.†

* Mr. Allen in his Biographical Dictionary under the article Warumbee—considers the Warumbee deed as extending no further than the upper falls in this place; but with how much reason the reader may judge, especially when he considers that Mr. Purchas claimed only a few miles around his settlement at Pejepscot—which would not compare with Mr. Whartons idea of a Manory. The Indian deed was for an *enlargement* on Purchas' right, and far westward from Purchas' western boundary. The Indian deed covers what was before obtained of Purchas' heirs and Shapleigh's as well as the enlargement. This was judiciously done and saved a good deal of subsequent trouble as will be seen by the Indian treaties, where they acknowledged Wharton's title and deny that they had sold on the Kennebec.

† See Peter Rogers Deposition and other printed accounts.

ARTICLE VI.

1.

GRANT TO RICHARD WHARTON, JUNE 10, 1686.*

“DRAUGHT OF A GRANT DESIRED BY MR. WHARTON OF PEJEP-
SCOT IN NEW ENGLAND, 10 JUNE 1686.”

James the Second by the grace of God King of England Scotland, France & Ireland, Defender of the Faith &c To all to whom it may concern Greeting. Whereas Richd. Wharton of Boston in New England Esq. hath been an Humble Suitor unto Us, to confirm unto him & his Heirs forever, divers Lands at or near Pejepscot in the Province of Mayn within Our Dominion of New England in America, together with divers Lands Islands & other places Adjacent, lying upon & between the rivers of Kennebeck, Androscoggin & Casco Bay, within Our said Province of Mayn, formerly granted by the Councill of Plymouth, in the reign of Our Royall Father of blessed Memory unto Thoms. Purchase, late of Pejepscot in the said Province of Main & George Way of Dorchester in the County of Dorsett within Our Kingdom of England, which said Lands and Islands have been in the Occupation and Possession of the said

* We add as a pertinent appendix to Mr. McKeen's paper, the grant drawn for Richard Wharton, but which his death rendered abortive; and certain depositions illustrative of facts stated in the paper.

Thom. Purchase & George Way for near sixty years, & lately by the severall Heirs of the said Purchase & Way; and by sundry Indian Sachems formerly Owners & Proprietors of the said Lands, Sold & conveyed unto the said Richard Wharton & his Heirs forever. Know yee therefore that of Our especial peace certain knowledge & meer motion. We have given granted & confirmed & by these presents for Us, Our Heirs & Successors, do give grant & confirm unto the said Richard Wharton His Heirs & assigns, *all & every part & parcell of Land near Pejepscot*, together with all other Lands Islands Rivers & other places adjacent *lying upon & between ye sd rivers of Kennebeck Ambrosecoggan & Casco Bay* in the said Province of Main, within Our Dominion of New England, & all other Lands & Islands whatsoever, which have at any time before the Date of these presents by the said Tho. Purchase & George Way, or by either of them or by the Heirs of the said Purchase & Way or either of, them been sold & conveyed unto the said Richard Wharton his Heirs & Assigns; and all other Lands whatsoever lying within the said Province of Main, which ye sd Richard Wharton hath at any time heretofore lawfully purchased of Nicholas Shapley or any other prson whatsoever with all Creeks Havens & *Harbours thereunto belonging, together with all Woods Trees Lakes & Rivers*, also all Mines & Ore of Gold Silver precious Stones Tin Lead Copper Sulpher brimstone, or any other metall or minerall matter whatsoever, with all & singular other profitts benefitts & commodities at any time growing coming happening arising or accruing within the said Lands or Islands or any part or parcell of them.

To have & to hold possess & enjoy all & singular the aforesaid Lands & Islands & every part of them, with the rights members & appurtenances thereunto belonging, to the proper use benefit & behoof of ye sd Richard Wharton, his Heirs

& Assigns forever, pay yearly unto Us, Our Heirs & Successors Six Beaver Skins, & also yielding unto Us, Our Heirs & Successors the fifth part of all Royall Mines of Gold & Silver that shall be found gotten & obtained in yr aforesd Lands or any part or parcells of them ; And We do make ordain & constitute the aforesd Lands & premises One entire Mannor forever, hereafter to be called by the name of the Mannor of

Also We do for Us, Our Heirs & Successors, lease ordain and constitute the said Richard Wharton his Heirs & Assigns, the true Sole & lawfull proprietors of the sd Mannor & premises aforesaid, and all & every the Limits & Coasts thereof ; & yt it shall & may be lawfull for the sd Rich.d Wharton his Heirs & Assigns, to hold & keep within the aforesaid Mannor, as often as to them shall seem meet & convenient Court Leets & Courts Barron ; and to have use and receive such power Jurisdiction & priviledges as are ordinarily and accustomedly had used & exercised by Lords of Mannors within this Our Kingdom of England ; And further we do for Us, Our Heirs & Successors give & grant unto the said Rich Wharton his Heirs & Assigns, & to all other Our Subjects that shall hereafter be Inhabitants & planters, of or in ye sd Mannor or any of the premises, free licence & liberty for the bringing Landing & unloading or otherwise disposing of all the Wares Merchandize profitts & Commodities of the said Mannor or any of the premises both by Sea & Land, either by themselves Servants Factors or Assigns, in any of Our ports within Our Kingdom of England, & Ireland, or any other of Our Dominions, paying only such Subsidy's & Duty's as Our naturall Subjects of this Our Realm shall or ought to have, & no other ; And to have & enjoy all such Liberties, freedom & priviledges for as concerning the exporting the same, without payment of any more customs or duty's, and for having againe of the impost in such manner & like beneficiall sort as any of Our Natural Subjects of this Our

Realm shall then have & enjoy ; Provided always That this Our grant or any thing therein contained, shall not restrain any of Our Subjects of this Our Realm or any other of Our Dominions, from fishing on the coast or in any Salt Waters Havens or Creeks, or from Salting & drying their fish & drying their netts upon the shore of the sd Mannor, nor to restrain any of the Planters & Inhabitants from fishing in any fresh Water River within the said Mannor for the necessary supply & use of themselves & family's ; And further We will, & by these presents for Us, Our Heirs & Successors, do grant unto the said Richd Wharton his Heirs & Assigns, That these Our Letters Pattents or the inolment of them, shall be to all intents & purposes, firm good effectual & sufficient in the Law ; against Us, Our Heirs & Successors, & shall be always intended, reputed & taken as well according to the true meaning & intent as to the words of the same, most benignly favourably & beneficially, to & for the sd Richard Wharton His Heirs & Assigns. In Witness whereof We have caused these Our Letters to be made Pattents. Witness Our Self at Westminister the In the first year of Our Reign &c.

At the Councill Chamber at Whitehall Sept. 9, 1685.

The Right Honble. The Lords of the Committee for Trade & Plantations having read the inclosed draught for a grant presented by Mr. Wharton to be pass'd for confirmation of Lands in New England, desire Mr Attorney Generall to consider the same & and to report his opinion thereupon.

WILLIAM BLATHWAYT.

I have considered of this grant or confirmation & do conceive, there not any thing therein contained unfitt for his Majesty to grant, and as to the Lands therein contained it amounts only to a confirmation of such Lands he is already seized of by purchase

Signed

R. SAWYER
1st. May 1686.

PLANTATION OFFICE WHITEHALL July 21, 1732.

The foregoing papers are true Coppies from the books of this Office. POPPLE.

Richard Wharton died in London in May 1689, leaving a widow, an elder son William and five daughters by his two wives. One of the daughters married a Cotta of Boston, the others remained unmarried. Mr. Wharton held a large estate in Boston and was highly esteemed. He was the son of Lord Wharton and died insolvent.

2—DEPOSITIONS.

When Mr. Wharton took his deed of Mr. Purchas's heirs, we may well suppose that he would collect what evidence he could find to prove that his grantors had a title to the land at Pejepscot. I suppose the following affidavits were taken for this purpose. They appear to have been taken the same year of the date of Mr. Whartons deed.

JOHN REDING about 30 years, maketh oath, that ever since the Deponent can remember Mr. Purchas lived at Pejepscot and that he had heard his Father say, that for many years he lived upon Mair point, by sufferance of Mr. Purchas, and his said Father had served him in sundry employments ; and that the land both sides of Androscoggin river for many miles, and down Kennebec river as far as Merrymeeting and to Maquoit in Casco Bay were the said Mr. Purchas'. And the Deponent saith that about three years before the Indian war the Deponent was employed with Mr. Lawson and others upon the salmon and sturgeon fishing below the falls near Mr. Purchas' home, and that they saved in about three weeks about 39 bbls of Salmon, besides what they spoiled for lack of salt, and about 90 kegs and many bbls of Sturgeon, and that if they had been fitted with salt, and apt and skilful men, they might have taken

abundance more, and your Deponent saith by report of Indians and others at Androscoggin Falls upon the same river, there is much better fishing for Salmon, and that this river is accounted the best salmon river in all the Eastward parts of the country. In coram

Veria Copia

S. BRADFORD GOV.

As Attest John Raymond Not. Pub.

FRANCIS NEALE Gent Deposeth that about 30 years since he went to live near Casco Bay & that Mr. Thomas Purchase then lived at Pejepscot in a fair stone house, and as the Deponent was informed had there lived for many years and had been one of Sr Ferdinando Gorges Commrs & a Justice of the Peace for the Province of Maine & that he had often heard that Mr. Purchase seated himself and settled that Plantation by vertue of an Ancient Patent or Grant from the King or Councill of Plymouth to Mr. George Way of Dorchester and the said Mr. Purchase ; and that by consent when Mr. Purchase came over, committed the said Patent to one Francis Ashley & that his Duplicate or copy was burned in Mr. Purchase's house at Pejepscot many years before the Depont. came into that country as he is informed ; And this Mr Purchase claimed by said Patent down the river near thirty miles, the Depont. being present with him as a Witness when he demanded possession of some Land w'ch Mr Lake & Major Clark improved which were at least Twenty miles from Mr Purchase's dwelling house, but how far Mr Purchase claimed up Damrose Coggan river above the lower falls, the Depont. knows not, but that Mare point & Maquoit were claimed by & reputed Mr Purchase's. further the Depont. saith that about thirty years since when the Depont. came into these parts Mr Purchase was then Magistrate, *Justice of Peace* and was so for many years before, as he is informed, & so continued till the Massachusetts took part of said Province into their Jurisdiction, and that he never heard

that either Sr. Ferdinando Gorge, Mr Righy nor any of their Agents or Commrs. or other Pattentees nor the Colony of the Massachusetts ever disturbed or disputed Mr Purchase's right to any of the Lands afore said. And the Depont. saith that he hath had greatt intimacy with Mr Purchase for many years and that Mr. Purchase gave the Depont. to understand that he had been servant to King Charles the first of blessed memory about the beginning of his Reign, & gave the Depont. a ccopy of the Commmissn. by which he held his place, which, that Depont. being then Recordr. put upon record.

Francis Neale personally appearing before us & made Oath to the truth of what is on the other side written & also to what is on this side.

Boston Nov. 17, 1683.

JOSEPH DUDLEY

NATHL. SALTONSTALL

assistants of his Maj. Coll.
of the Massachusetts.

RICHARD COLLICUT aged about Fourscore years, Testifies upon Oath that it is about thirty five years since he first knew Mr. Thomas Purchase & that ever since during his life he was well acquainted with him, & that ever since the Depont. knew the said Purchase till the late Indian war broke out, which is about eight years since, the said Mr. Purchase lived at a place called Pejepscot, and many years before as the Deponent understood both by information & the improvements & settlement made by the said Purchase, who possessed and claimed a very large portion or tract of land, lying on both sides Androscoggin river & upon the outward side of Kennebec river as far as a place called Merrymeeting, and that said Mr. Purchase's Land reached to and was bounded by Casco Bay, Maquoit being within his bounds; and by common fame he said Purchase possessed said Lands by vertue of an ancient Grant or Patent from the King or Councill of Plymouth, made to Mr. George Way of Dorchester in the Kingdom of England & himself; and the said

Deponent further Testifies that he rather believes the same because said Purchase hath told him that when he came from England, he left the original Patent or Grant there ; and above six years since the Deponent brought said Mr. Purchase from the eastward to Boston in his vessel, from whence he took passage *quickly after for England, as he said, purposely to look after and secure said patents ;* And the Deponent saith that he hath known Mr. Purchase a *Magistrate or Commr.* for *Sir Ferdinando Gorge*, & afterwards for Mr. Rigby when he claimed part of the Province of Main, & although the Deponent. was a constant trader in these parts from the time he first knew Mr. Purchase till the late Indian war, yet he never heard or understood that either Sir Ferdinando George, Mr. Rigby, or Mr. George or any of their Agents or Comm'rs or any other person ever disturbed Mr. Purchase in his possession or claimed or disputed his right in the said Tract of Land. Taken upon Oath in Boston New England, Nov. 21st. 1683.

	before us	JOHN RICHARDS }	Asst'ss
Vera Copia		SAML. NOWELL }	
as Attests			
JOHN HAYWARD Not. of Pub.			

PHILIP LEWIS aged about Thirty seven years maketh oath that the Depont. hath lived ever since he can remember, and as his Parents informed him was born at Casco in the province of Main and that ever since that Depont. can remember, Mr. Purchase lived at Pejepscoot in said Province and was accompted Proprietor of a large territory reaching to Merrymeeting in Kennebec river to Maquoit in Casco Bay, and many miles up Androscoggin river on both sides, and that he this Depot. was present with said Purchase & Mr. Joslyn, and Mr. Monjoy, when they went up the said river Ten or twelve miles above Mr Purchase his House, where a Trading house was then building, which Mr Purchase forbid ; and that Depot. saith that he hath heard his Father say that he lived with said Mr. Purchase

at Pejepscoot many yrs. before the Depont. was born, and the Depot. saith he never heard or knew that Mr. Purchase his title was ever disputed or questioned but that he continued in quiet and peaceable possession till the late Indian war; And the Depont. saith that the said Andross Coggin is reputed the best river for Salmon and Sturgen in New England, and further saith not.

December 5th. 1683

Vera Copia

Jus. Cor'me S. BRADSTREET Govr.

As. Attests

JOHN HAYWARD Not. Pub.

THE INDIAN PEREPOLE'S DEPOSITION.

I Perepole of Lawful age testify and say that the Inden Name of the river was *Pejepscook*: from Quabacook what is now called Meremeeting bay up as far as amitgonpontook what the English call Harrises falls and all the river from Harrises falls up was called ammoscongong and the Largest falls on the river was above Rockamecook about twelve miles, and them falls have got three Pitches, and there is no other falls on the river like them and the Indens yousd to catch the most Salmon at the foot of them falls, and the Indens yousd to say when they went Down the river from Rockamecook and when they gat Down over the falls by Harrises they say now come Pejepscook



Lincoln ss. July 19th 1793 then personally appered the above Named Perpole and after being carfully examined & Duly cautioned to testify the truthe relataing to the cause wherein this Deposition is to be used made solem oath to the truth of the above Deposition by him subscribed taken at the Request of Josiah Little and to be used on an action or plea of the case where in the Commonwealth is Plaintiff and Josiah Little is Defendant to be heard and tried at the Supream Judicial Court Next to be holden at Halowell within the sd County of Lincoln and for the Countys of Lincoln Hancock & Washington the second tusday Next foloing the forth tusday of June Next the cause of taking of this Deposition is that the Deponent Lives more than thirty miles from the place of trial the attorney General was not Notified and was not present at the Caption hereof, taken and sealed up before me.

WILLM REED Just of the Peace.

ARTICLE VII.

TO HIS EXCELLENCY

* JONATHAN BELCHER, ESQ;

CAPTAIN GENERAL AND GOVERNOUR IN CHIEF IN AND OVER
HIS MAJESTY'S PROVINCE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS
BAY IN NEW-ENGLAND.

TO THE HONOURABLE HIS MAJESTY'S COUNCIL.

AND THE HONOURABLE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, IN GENERAL COURT
ASSEMBLED AT BOSTON.

THE PETITION OF RICHARD FRY OF BOSTON.

Humbly Sheweth,

THE late great Piece of Justice done unto your most humble Petitioner, in dismissing the High Sheriff of *York's* most unreasonable and unjust Petition, imboldens me to lay before you the present great Hardships and Sufferings I labour under: And knowing the Justice and Wisdom of this Great Assembly, flatters me with great Hopes and Expectations of having my Desires and Requests granted. I am now confin'd in his Majesty's Goal at the Suit of Mr. *Samuel Waldo* of *Boston*, and *Thomas Westbrook* of *Falmouth*, Esq; for *Seventy Pounds Sterling*, obtained against me at the last Superiour Court held

* Gov. Belcher was born in Boston 1682 H. C. 1699, appointed Gov. Nov. 29, 1729, arrived in Boston Aug. 10, 1730, superseded by Gov. Shirley 1741. Gen. Reg. 3. 281.

at *York*. Your most humble Petitioner in fact faith, that for want of one Writing or Instrument, under the Hand of Mr. *Samuel Waldo* of *Boston*, which was taken away from your Petitioner by *Abraham Tyler*, the Under-Sheriff for the County of *York*, under Colour of an Execution from Mr. *Samuel Waldo* of *Boston*, and hath taken and converted the said Writing or Instrument to his own Use, to the great Damage of your Petitioner. Your most humble Petitioner further observes, It has been always the Wisdom of this great Assembly to reward all those that have any ways served this Province, with Rewards and Favours. Your Petitioner indented with Mr. *Samuel Waldo* in the Year 1731 in *London*, to have built within ten Months after my Arrival in *New-England*, a Paper Mill. Your Petitioner arrived in *New-England* in the Year 1731, and waited four Years wholly at his own Expence, till such Time as the said Mills were built. Your Petitioner, willing to promote the Good of this Country, drew a Plan for sundry Sorts of Mills to be built, which was across *Presumscot* River in *Falmouth*; which Scheme the said *Waldo* and *Westbrook* came into, and built the said Mills. And your Petitioner sent for one Mr. *John Collier* from *England*, which took the Lease of the said Mills at *Two hundred Pounds* Sterling *per Ann.* for twenty one Years. Your Petitioner was to pay *Sixty four Pounds* Sterling *per Ann.* for twenty one Years, for the Paper Mills. And the said *Samuel Waldo* and *Thomas Westbrook* confessed before Capt. *Greenwood*, Mr. *George Cradock* and Mr. *Brandon*, Merchants of *Boston*, that they held and owned in the Township of *Falmouth*, Fifteen thousand Acres of Land, and that one Acre with another was *Three Pounds* more in Value for the Improvement of these Mills. But the said *Waldo* and *Westbrook* not content with their Improvement of *Two hundred and sixty four Pounds* Sterling *per Ann.* and the vast Improvements of their Land, they

coveted the Improvement of all the Mills, and paid Mr. *John Collier Six hundred Pounds* for his Lease, the said *Collier* finding what Sort of Men he had to deal withal, sold them his said Lease. The said *Waldo* and *Westbrook* offr'd your most humble Petitioner *Five hundred Pounds* for the Loan of my Lease but I would not comply with their most unreasonable and unjust Request: So they have entred into a Combination with the Deputy-Sheriff of *York*, *Abraham Tyler*, under colour of an Execution hath violently entred my Mills, and have converted all my Substance to their own Use, and have committed my Body to *Boston Goal*. Your most humble Petitioner in fact saith, he is not indebted one Farthing either to *Samuel Waldo*, *Thomas Westbrook* or *Abraham Tyler*, but the said *Waldo*, *Westbrook* and *Tyler* have proceeded contrary to all Law, Justice, Reason or Equity now subsisting in the Christian World. Your most humble Petitioner prays to have Leave to bring his Writ of Review to be tried in the County of *Suffolk*, at the next Superiour Court to be held in *August*, against the said *Samuel Waldo* and *Thomas Westbrook*: The Reason is, because I am confined in *Boston Goal*, and my Witnesses are in *Boston*. Your Petitioner further prays, for his great Improvements in this Province, and his leaving his own Native Country, and his great Charges in coming over and waiting four Years at his own Expence. (And there is no Member of this Honourable House but must know the keeping a Family in a pretty genteel Manner, four Years, must amount to a large Sum.) Your humble Petitioner prays to have a Tract of the Waste Lands granted him, belonging to this Province; which in time may be serviceable to his *New-England* born Son, *James Brook Fry*: Which said Son GOD in his good Providence hath given to your Petitioner in these his great Troubles and Afflictions. Your most humble Petitioner leaveth all his Desires and Requests to the great Wisdom and Order of this great and august Assembly. RICHARD FRY.

ARTICLE VIII.

A LETTER FROM DR. FRANKLIN.

THE ORIGINAL FROM WHICH THE FOLLOWING LETTER IS PRINTED, IS NOW IN THE ARCHIVES OF THE MAINE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. WE ARE NOT AWARE THAT IT HAS EVER BEEN PUBLISHED. IT POSSESSES SUFFICIENT INTEREST, AND IS SO CHARACTERISTIC OF ITS AUTHOR, THAT WE DEEM IT ENTITLED TO A PLACE IN OUR PUBLICATIONS.

The address is as follow—

“To be forwarded
by the first post.”

Jonathan Williams Esq.

“16.”

Merchant. Boston.”

PASSY, April 13, 1785.

DEAR COUSIN,

I received your letter of Decem. 16 relating to Jonas Hartwell. I had before written to our Minister at Madrid, Mr. Carmichael, requesting him to apply for the Release of this Man. Inclosed I send his Answer, with Copies of other Papers relating to the Affair. The Simpleton will be discharged, perhaps after being a little whipt for his Folly, and that may not be amiss. We have here another New-England-Man, Thayer, formerly a Candidate for the Ministry, who converted himself lately at Rome, and is now preparing to return home for the purpose of converting his countrymen. Our Ancestors from Catholics became first, Church of England Men, and then refined into Presbyterians. To change now from Presbyterian-

ism to Popery, seems to me Refining backwards, from white sugar to brown.

I have written to Dr. Price of London, requesting him to make a choice of proper Books to commence a Library for the Use of the Inhabitants of Franklin. The Books will be sent directly from thence.

Jonathan and his Family are well. He expects to be with you soon. I continue very hearty, and well except my Malady of the Stone, which however is hitherto very tolerable. My love to Cousin Grace, &c. and believe me ever

Your affectionate Uncle,

B. FRANKLIN.

P. S. April 14. I send enclosed a bill drawn by Mr. W. Vernon, Jun'r on his Father for . . . Livres which I request you would receive and deliver to my Sister.

JONA. WILLIAMS ESQ.

ARTICLE IX.

PAPERS RELATING TO INDIAN TROUBLES IN MAINE 1702—1704, FROM
COPIES OF RECENTLY DISCOVERED DOCUMENTS FURNISHED
FOR PUBLICATION BY I. WINGATE THORNTON, ESQ.
OF BOSTON.

1. A LETTER FROM JOHN WHEELWRIGHT TO GOV. DUDLEY, AUGUST 4, 1702.
2. LETTER FROM CAPT. CYPRIAN SOUT HACK TO GOV. DUDLEY, MAY 10, 1703, GIVING A JOURNAL OF HIS CRUISE ON THE COAST OF MAINE.
3. SAME TO SAME MAY 17, 1703.
4. LT. GOV. PARTRIDGE'S COMMISSION TO CAPT. THOMAS PARKER, AUGUST 12. 1703.
5. LETTER FROM SHADRACK WALTON TO GOV. DUDLEY FEB. 24. 1704.

DOCUMENTS.

N o . 1 .

“ WELLS August 4th, 1702.

May it Please your Excellency,

AT my hearing of your Excellency's Returne from the Eastward to Piscataqua the Last Week, I imediately went thither to waite on youre self theire, but your quiet dispatche from thence Prevented me of that opertunity, which mackes me bould to give your Excellency the trouble of these lines. Sr: I understand that the Indians at the Eastward Vearey Redily Professed Greate fidelity to your selfe and the English nation with Great Promises of Peace and frendship, which Promises So Longe as it may stand with theire owne Interest I believe they may keep and us Longer, theire teachers Instructing them that theire is no faith to be kept with Heriticks sutch as they account us to be, themselves allso being naturialey deseaitfull Like theire father hom they serve. Indeed Sr: I Cannot have Charity for them to believe what they say, I having Experienced so mutch of theire horable deseaitfullness in the Last war upon many of theire treaties and articles of Peace, so that I cannot but apprehend oureselves that live in these remote Parts of the Countrey and being fronteres but to be in Great dainger, and Considering that we have war Proclaimed with the french who are not so far from us but that they may without any great difucalty send out an army against us, eaither with or without the assistance of oure pretended frend Indians. This

towne being the nerest to the Enemy and the farthest from any help or Relief, we Cannot but apprehend oureselves to be in Great dainger and espesialy at this season of the yeare, our occasions Calling us genireley from hom to get our hay and Corne Secured, oure Inhabitants doth theirfore Pray that your Excellency woulde assist us with sum men twentie or thirtie or so many as your Excellency in Wisdom may think fit; my humble Request to youre Excellency when at Saco was that you woulde Please to Grant me the Liberty of a Garrison where I nowe Live which then your Excellency did not resolve. I still Pray for the same with submission, and desire youre Excellencies Resolution in that mater, to which I shall Reddily Submit with onely Informing youre Excellency that if I must remove into the middle of the town I must Leave that Little Estate I have to maintaine my family with and Carey a Large family wheire I have but little to maintaine them withall, Praying your Excellencies Pardon for these rude lines, I remaine ever to be your Excellencies most humble servant at all Comands.

JOHN WHEELWRIGHT."

"To

His Excellency Joseph Dudley, Esqr.
 Captain General and Governour
 in Chief in and over the
 Province of the Masethusets
 Bay in New England : &c."

No. 2.

"CASCO BAY MONDAY Maye the 10: 1703.

Sr. this morning at 4 Clock I came to Saille being Dissatisfied in my Dreme Last Night & Turned up the bay with in 2 Milles of Copones Island the wind at ESE Very Strong Gale & Much

Raine & this wind I have had 3 Days to Geather with Raine & foage Soe I could not Pessead Estward. Sr. att 7 Clock in after Noone Came a board of me from Majr. March one Newman Master of a Sloop that was taken this morning at Copones Island a bout 9 clock in morning by 2 Indians connews being 3 french men & 3 Indians—Newman & his men being a Shore att Woork they shott one of his men Ded, this they Carred awaye they Plundered the Sloop of all Provisions & Closs & bid the Said Newman Goe Downn to Casco fort with his Sloop which he Did. 2 hours After Came a Nother Sloop by the Said Island, Whear the french & Indians ware but they Said Nothing to Them but came Down to Casco fort.

Sr. I have had servall Indians on board of Mee Sence I have benn hear & I have showed Them the Prisners & the Goods they Took from the french & Indians Estward & all the hole intenc of my Voyage & they one & all ware Very well Statfied [satisfied] the Govft. should Take Soe much care of Them.

Sr. at 9 Clock Night I came to Saille & want Dounn to fort & went a Shore to Majr. March 11 Clock at night to Agree about Same Matter to fih the Ded man ofe at 2 Clock at mor[n]ing I came ofe being a Violent storm at ESE & much Raine.

11 Instance 4 Clock this morning I took Newman Sloop & one Shallope & Major March & Our 35 men on board of them & Soe Came to Saille and Turnned up Bay for Copones Island the small vissells for Showell watter & the Galley to Gard them.

Sr. hear is one Indian a Shore which we are Sending to the Sagmores to Signefie what has happned & to Give us a mett-einge forthwith.

Pleass yr. Excellency.

My sentiment of this Accion is that these 3 franch men & 3 Indians Came a Perposs from the Estward to Ballance what Capt: Chadwall had Committed in those Parts which the Majr :

& I shall no in a Small Time : & I shall imbrass the first Winde & Watter to Saile Estward & I shall Give yr Excell: acct: of all my Prossedengs by all opp'ts Soe I most affectionately Kiss yr. Excellency hand and Rest!

Yr. Verrey humbl and Ready Servitor

[to Gov. Dudley.]

CYPRIAN SOUTHACK."

N o . 3 .

HONOURABLE.

Sr. the 11 Maye at 2 clock After Noone we Gott ofe the Dedman from Cosines Island & No Sine of aney franch or Indians about the Bay at 7 Clock After Noone Came Down to forte & the next mo[rn]ing we buearred the man at Our heep of of Stones.

Sr. Sence I Rett [wrote?] to yr Excellency I have had Sume Discours with Newman Mr. of the Sloop Taken & one of the franchmen Took him by the hand & said what Shear brouther Captain I am a Captain as well as you : & by the Discription Newman Gives me of him Chadwell Sayes that itt is the Captain of the Barke they Burnt at Passamaquaddy & Sume of his men.

Sr. Chadwell farder says that when he Tock the Barke the Captain & five franch men & 2 Indains Gott a Shore in to the woods, Which I believe to bee Same men that took Newman.

Sr. the 15 Instance at 4 clock After Noone came in to this Port a Marblehead Shallop this mo[rn?]ing from Saccadhaook haveing Layiue Wind bound their 14 Days & that he had not sen aney franch or Indians all the Time they ware their : Nor heard of aney but that all the Inhabtunces their ware Very well haveing a Shallape their a fishing & Every Day up Kenneback River a Gunning but See no body.

Sr. Pray Pardon me I am of the mind Since the Govt. of Port Royale have been at soe Great Charge in Getting in all the Indians from Shanctio, Menness & Cape Salles & all the Placess Agesant [adjacent?] & in C[l?].oathing of them In Expection of the English Attacking Port Royall, but now finding by the English Prisoners that their is no such Attempt to be made [illegible] of the mind that in Mounth of June hee will send sume of those Indians this sid the baye to Due us Sume Mischiefe: but they cann not come in to yr Excellency. Govferment with Outt the Knowlage of Estrenn Indians.

Sr. Magrs. March & I shall Give the Estrean Indians Such a Charge in Givenn Due Information to yo'r Excellency of aney Strang Indians or franch that shall come in to yr Excellency Govfint. or Ells they all bee come Gilty.

the weather have Been soe bad that wee have had no Indians Down as yett but expect them in 3 Days Time: they are Very busey in Planting.

Sr. No More but Come faire weather I shall bee Sailling.

Yor. Excellency faithfull Servitter,

CYPRIAN SOUTHACK.

Casco Bay, Monday Maye the 17: 1703
from on board the Maj'tys ship Proviance
Galley att 6 Clock This Morning."

"For his Excellency Joseph Dudley

Captain General & Governr. in

Chief of Her Maj'tys Proviance

Massachusetts Bay &c.,

'For her Majty's Especial Servess

He, Newman or Norton.

Just now a fair Wind & am Salling

Sr. Yours

C. S.

N o . 4 .

Pro : New Hampshire : In New Engl'd.

[Seal]

Whereas this day we have Rec'd information that Cases fort is besett Black point taken Severall Families Destroyed Att Winter harbor & Wells and alsoe a Sloop taken at Kennibunk by the French & Indian Enemies.

By the Honourable William Partridge Esq : Lieutenant Governour & Commander in Chiefe in & Over Sd Province,

To Thomas Packer Greeting : Pursuant unto the Power and Authority Granted Unto me by the Gracious Majesty Queen Anne" &c. &c. "I Doe by these presents constitute and appoint you the Sd Thomas Packer to be Captaine of forty Volunteers (Souldrs) which shall be put on board the Sloop called the four frends Daniel Wear Master, you being Carefull and Deligent" &c. &c. "and you are forthwith to goe on board sd. Sloop with your Volenteers and to make the best of your way to Casco Bay and Use your Endeavour to speak with Capt. March and know how it is with him, alsoe to call at black point and know how it is that Garrison, as likewise at Winter harbor & Wells Relieveing all our frends that are in Distress according as you may be able, and If you meet with any french Vessell or french men take them prisoners or kill or destroy them Either by Sea or Land and if any Indians opose you take them alsoe prisoners or kill or Destroy them Either by Sea or Land as you shall see Occasion : Given under my hand" &c. "at Portsmouth the 12th August" &c. 1703.

By the Lt. Govr. Com'and

WILLIAM PARTRIDGE.

CHA : STORY, Sec."

Gov. Partridge sent a copy of the above to Gov. Dudley with this note "What Errors your Excellency sees in the comission or the management of affaires may be advised off or over looked for what ever I doe is [illegible] zeal." William Partridge.

No. 5.

NEW CASTLE, Feby. 24th 1704.

“May Pleas yor Excelency,

This day I Reed yo'rs of the 21st Concerning the armes which ware for the men that went to the West Endies. Sr the men that Returned home and yt ware continued in the Service have not any armes of there own and there was seaven broken and Lost over board on board of the man of war in the West Indies, the others I have and I would pray yor Excellency to Lett me know wheather them must be taken from the men that are now in Service to Send with the other and I will be Cearfull in sending by the first opertunity, if soe would pray yor Excelency to order me whare they shall [be] Recruted with other armes.

As soon as I returned from waiteing on yor Excelency I Repaired to Neashawanak and have continued there till this day, the twenty third of this month, the army Returned and have not discovered any Indians since they went they have been att the fort but judge that there has not been any Indians there this Winter. the ten Indians that belongs to my Company have disired that they may have leave to goe home for a fortnights Time to see there familys and they will Return att the fortnights End and bring Ten more with them if yor Excelency see fitt Soc—I would pray yor Excelency to Informe me wheither they may have Liberty or not.

Tis the generall thoughts of the people hear that the Indians will be down after the army in a short time, and if yor Excelency think convenient and please to Impower me to Comand the forces in the province of Main I will muster them, only leave in soe many as is convenient for keeping the Garrisons till I Return and to march in to the woods to Endeavor to ambush the Indians which with Gods Blessing doubt not but may doe good Service, altho I have acted in Major Cuttlers post by an

ordr sent to Lt. Coll. March, have noe Commission tho the other officers know nothing to the contrary not anything further att present but ask yor Excelency pardon for this Long Epistle and ascribue yor Excelency's most humble and

Obedient Servant

[to Gov. Dudley.]

SHA'D. WALTON.

ARTICLE X.

CHIEF JUSTICE SEWALL, the author of the following memorial, had probably the most influence of any man of his day, in Massachusetts. He was born in England in 1652, came with his father to this country in 1661, graduated at H. C. 1671; he was appointed a judge of the Superior Court in 1692 and Chief Justice 1718, which office as well as that of Judge of Probate, he resigned in 1728, and died Jan. 1, 1730. He was at the time of presenting the following memorial, a member of the Council, which office he held from the adoption of the 2d Charter 1692, until 1725.

A MEMORIAL

RELATING TO THE

KENNEBECK INDIANS.

THAT my often speaking the same things, may not be graminous; I humbly offer my Sentiments about sending a Military Force against the *Kennebeck* Indians, in Writing.

It is Resolved that the Government has sufficient Reason to prosecute the *Eastern Indians* for their Rebellion. But I am humbly of Opinion, that sufficient Enquiry has not been yet made, Whether the Government has done all that is necessary on their part, to prevent a Rupture.

At the Conference of his Excellency with the Sachems, and Chief Men of the *Eastern Indians* at *George-Town* on *Arrowsick* Island, *August*, 9, 1717. The Indians shewed a

great Reluctancy against Erecting Forts higher up the River ; and against the arrival of a Multitude of New Inhabitants ; lest they should prove unable heartily to embrace them. They also desired the Running of a Line between the *English*, and them ; and made some Proposals on their part, which were rejected : but no Proposals for fixing Boundaries, were offered to them.

Without doubt, Boundaries are necessary for the perservation of Honesty and Peace among those that border one upon another. This is evident from the Law made for the Renewing of them between Townships once in three Years time, successively ; and the penalty of Five Pounds inflicted on those, who shall neglect their Duty herein.

The Royal Charter gives a good Account of the Errand of *English* Christians into this New World, in the Words following ; ——— “ And to dispose of matters and things, where-
“ by Our Subjects, Inhabitants of Our said Province, may be
“ religiously, peaceably, and civilly, governed, protected, and
“ defended ; so as their good Life, and Orderly Conversation,
“ may Win the *Indians*, Natives of the Country, to the Knowl-
“ edge and Obedience of the only True GOD, and Saviour of
“ Mankind, and the Christian Faith : Which His Royal Majesty,
“ Our Royal Grand-father, King *Charles* the First, in His said
“ Letters Patents, Declared was His Royal Intention, and the
“ Adventurers free Profession, to be the principal End of the
“ said Plantation.

By this Momentous clause in our Charter, the Government is Obligated, and excited, to doe what in them lyes, to Recover the Aboriginal Natives from their Heathenisme, and Antichristianisme.

Our Blessed Saviour's Method of Conversion was, To Heal the Bodies of Men and Women, in order to His entire, and Eternal Salvation of them. This constrains me to think, that

it is Necessary to state and settle plain and lasting Bounds between the *English*, and the *Indians* ; that so the Natives may have a certain and establish'd Enjoyment of their Own Country : and that the *English* may have DEUS NOBISCUM Legibly embroidered in their Banners.

The History of the War between the *Israelites*, and their Brethren the *Benjamites*, is very awfull. The *Israelites* had a vast Army ; Four Hundred Thousand Fighting Men ; the *Benjamites* had only Twenty Six Thousand, and Seven Hundred : And yet the *Benjamites* (the blameable causes of the War) Slew Forty Thousand Men of the *Israelites*.

Omne prius tentandum est—————

And if, at last, we should be provoked to goe against our Neighbours, the *Kennebec* Indians ; 'twould be convenient for this Government first to sit down, and count the Cost. Many Thousands of Pounds have been already expended on this Controversy. If the War proceed, and be prospered ; the *English* may, probably, drive the *Indians* from their ancient Habitations : Yet 'tis improbable the *English* should slay them, or take them Captives. In all likelihood, the Survivours will fly away to *Canada*. And if a War should happen between *Great Britain*, and *France* ; these Fugitives would solicit the Assistance of the *French*, in returning to their Country (which they are very fond of) though it should be never so much to the Loss and Damage of the *English*.

So that I am humbly of Opinion, 'Twould be most Honourable, and most Profitable, for this Province, to perswade the *Kennebeck* Indians to be our Dependents and Friends, by Really convincing them, it is their True Interest so to be ; as indeed it is.

Which is humbly submitted to his Excellency the Governour, the Honourable Council and Representatives, in General Court assembled.

Per SAMUEL SEWALL.

BOSTON ; *September, 8th. 1721.*

ARTICLE XI.

JOHN GYLES'S STATEMENT OF THE NUMBER OF INDIANS.

THE following article is the copy of a paper which appears to be original. It is written in an ancient hand and the body of the paper and signature are alike. If not an original, it is a very old copy, and is filed in a different hand writing, as follows, "Capt. Gyles account of ye No of Indians in each tribe 1726."

Capt. Gyles was son of Thomas Gyles, Esq. who was a large land owner at Pemaquid in this state, and who was commissioned Chief Justice of the Co. of Cornwall, as the territory was called which included Pemaquid, by Gov. Dongan under James, Duke of York, afterwards king of England. The father was killed in the attack on Pemaquid by the Indians in 1689, and his son John, his wife and two daughters were taken captives. John remained in captivity over eight years; he was released and landed in Boston in 1698. He afterwards was employed by government in their intercourse with the Indians during many years. He superintended building the fort at Brunswick in 1715, which was called Fort George, and of which he had the command. In 1725 he was appointed commander of the important military post on St. George's river. In 1736 he published an interesting narrative of his captivity, which was republished by Saml. G. Drake Esq. of Boston in 1846, in a work called "Tragedies of the Wilderness," embracing many narratives of captives among the Indians.

Capt. Gyles was living at Roxbury Mass. in 1753 aged 73. He says at the close of his narrative above referred to, "I have had the honor to serve this province under eight commanders in chief, Governors and Lt. Governors, from the year 1698 to the year 1736 : and how much longer my services may continue, I submit to the Governor of the world."

Capt. Gyles in his memoirs, gives the following account of his family : "The flourishing state of New England, before the unhappy eastern war, drew my father hither, whose first settlement was on Kennebec river, at a place called Merrymeeting Bay, where he dwelt for some years ; until, on the death of my Grand parents, he with his family returned to England to settle his affairs. This done, he came over with the design to have returned to his farm : but on his arrival at Boston, the Eastern Indians had begun their hostilities. He therefore began a settlement on Long island. The air of that place not so well agreeing with his constitution, and the Indians having become peaceable, he again proposed to settle his lands in Merrymeeting Bay : but finding that place deserted and that plantations were going on at Pemaquid, he purchased several tracts of land of the inhabitants there. Upon his highness the Duke of York resuming a claim to those parts, my father took out patents under that claim, and when Pemaquid was set off by the name of the County of Cornwall, in the Province of New York, he was commissioned Chief Justice of the same by Gov. Dongan. He was a strict sabbatarian, and met with considerable difficulty in the discharge of his office, from the immoralities of a people who had long lived lawless. He laid out no inconsiderable income, which he had annually from England, on the place, and at last lost his life there."

W.

NUMBER OF INDIANS.

No^{ber} 24, 1726 Memorandum of ye No of Indians in each tribe from 16 years of eage—

Viz. Ersegontegog No 20.

Mamereguenet is chieff

tho many vicetors from

author tribes reside their

Womenog 30.

Rewenawondo is chieff

tho several author Indians

reside their at present, yt

moved from Narangawock.”*

St. John's river 100.

or theire abouts

Sarne Ent'r† Madwichig

is chieff

Pesmaquady Indians 30.

Assoquad is chieff

Machies 10.

Takemeg is chieff

Penobscot 130.

or their abouts

Awenemwet Entr† Wenog-

genet is chieff

Narangawock* 40.

Toxsos is chieff

‡Amasaguanteg 5.

John Hegan is chieff

* Norridgegwock,

† Interpreter.

‡ Amerriscoggin or Androscoggin.

*Paquakig
Edewancho is chieff

24.

pr John Gyles Entr.†

389.

* Pequaket or Piquachet.

† Interpreter.

ARTICLE XII.

INDIAN TREATIES.

AMONG the documents in the library of the Maine Historical Society, are the several treaties made with the Eastern Indians, by the colony of Massachusetts, between the years 1717 and 1753. These are contained among the Pejepscot papers, and were used in the numerous controversies, which for many years occupied our courts, in the establishment of the title of the Proprietors claiming large tracts of land on the Androscoggin river, under the propriety of that name. They are printed in the small quarto form, and it is now rare to find them. They are more valuable from the fact that the originals of several of them are not now to be found in the public offices of Massachusetts. In order to use the printed copies at the trials referred to, it became necessary to show that the originals could not be found or were destroyed. Several of these printed copies have entered upon them the certificate of that old and venerable Secretary, John Avery, whose name in our early days, we heard so many times from the pulpit, connected with thanksgiving and fast proclamations. The certificates run as follows.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

Secretary's office, Boston June 29, 1796.

This may certify whom it may concern, that I have made diligent search in the said Secretary's office of the said Com-

monwealth for the foregoing treaty and conference with the Penobscot and other Eastern Indians and for the record thereof, and cannot find such Treaty or Conference or Record thereof : but believe the same hath been lost or consumed by fire.

JOHN AVERY, Secretary."

This certificate is on the treaties of 1717, 1727 and 1732 : on those of 1749 and 1752, is the certificate of the same Secretary, that they are true copies from the record.

We believe it to be within the scope and objects of our Society to preserve and give publicity to documents like these ; which throw a strong light upon an exceedingly interesting portion of our history, and present to us with dramatic form and effect, the wants and grievances of the aboriginal inhabitants of our territory, and the mode of treatment of those who gradually encroached upon their rights, their property, and all that was dear to them.

Their hunting grounds were narrowed, their fishing places reduced in number and importance : they were pursued as wild beasts through their own forests, and debased by the corruptions, without partaking of the blessings of civilized life, until at last there was no room for them in a country over which, they had once roamed, free and unmolested, lords of the eminent domain.

This no doubt was in the order of Providence, and conformable to the experience which has passed along the line of history from the earliest records written by the hand of nature upon the solid crust of our globe, to the latest revolution of a state. Civilization was to occupy and improve the earth : and the greatest good of the greatest number was to be the rule of its advance. This law of society is now in progress. W.

The Rev. Mr. Smith, minister of Falmouth, in his interesting Journal, published at Portland in 1849, notices the meetings for the several treaties which were made at that place.

GEORGE TOWN

ON ARROWSICK ISLAND, AUG. 9th 1717.

ANNOQUE REGNI REGIS GEORG II MAGNÆ
BRITANNIÆ &C. QUARTO.

A CONFERENCE OF HIS EXCELLENCY THE GOVERNOUR, WITH THE SACHEMS
AND CHIEF MEN OF THE EASTERN INDIANS.

HIS Excellency being Arrived here in His Majesty's Ship the Squirrel, the Indians sent a Message to him from *Puddle-stones-Island*, (where they were assembled) Desiring to know when it would be his Excellency's pleasure that they should attend him.

HIS Excellency told them at Three a Clock this Afternoon, when he would order the Union Flagg to be displayed, at the Tent Erected near Mr. *Watts* his House, And ordered a British Flagg to be delivered to the Indians for them to wear when they came, in Token of their Subjection to His Majesty King GEORGE.

At the Time appointed, the Flagg being set up, the Indians forthwith came over, with the British Flagg in their headmost Canoo.

HIS Excellency being seated under a large Tent (Erected for the occasion.) Attended by *Samuel Sewall* Esq; *Penn Townsend* Esq; *Andrew Belcher* Esq; and *Edmund Quincey*

Esq; of the Council of the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*. And *Samuel Penhallow* Esq; *Mark Hunking* Esq; *John Wentworth* Esq; *Shadrack Walton* Esq; and *Richard Wybird* Esq; of the Province of *New-Hampshire*: and several other English Gentlemen. Eight Indian Sagamores and Chief Captains, Namely *Moxus*, *Bommazeen*, *Waundagumboit*, *Wiwurna*, and *Queguaroomanit* of *Kennebeck*. *Querenebuit* of *Ponobscut*. *Adeawando*, of *Pegwackit*, and *Sabbadis* of *Ammarecoggin*, Approached and made their Reverence to his Excellency, who was pleased to give them his Hand. And then directed that *Capt. John Gyles*, and Mr. *Samuel Jordan* Interpreters of the Indian Language should be Sworn to be faithful in that Service, and Judge *Sewall* administred to them an Oath accordingly. And his Excellency was pleased to make a Speech to the Sagamores, &c. which was deliberately Recited and Interpreted to them. And is as follows, *Viz.*

Interpreter. Tell the Sachems, ‘That notwithstanding the
‘ great Fatigue and Danger of this Expedition, yet to comply
‘ with my own Word, and their Desire, I am now come to see
‘ them, and am very glad to find so many of them in Health.

Tell them, ‘That I find by the Records of His Majesty’s
‘ Government of *New-England*, which I have now the Honour
‘ to be Intrusted with, that there have been many Treaties be-
‘ tween the English Government, and them, as there was occa-
‘ sion: And that the last Interview was at *Piscataqua* about
‘ four Years ago, and that then my very worthy Predecessor,
‘ Governour *DUDLEY* accepted their Submission, and Rat-
‘ ified all former Treaties and Agreements with them; and that
‘ he gave them all possible Assurances of Justice, Friendship,
‘ Protection, and fair Commerce and Dealing upon their Fidel-
‘ ity, Peace and Obedience to the Crown of *Great Briain*; and
‘ that I shall Build on that Foundation.

Tell them, ‘That since that good Treaty was made, the

‘ Crown of *Great Britain* is happily Descended to His Most
 ‘ Excellent Majesty KING *GEORGE*, and for ever Estab-
 ‘ lished in His Royal Protestant Family, which GOD be Prais-
 ‘ ed, are many. That it is in the Name and by the Command
 ‘ of KING *GEORGE*, that I am now speaking to them, and
 ‘ that they may, and should Esteem it as an Instance of the
 ‘ King’s great Favour, that I have so soon visited them.

Tell them, ‘ That there is a very good agreement between
 ‘ KING *GEORGE*, and His Neighbours, more especially
 ‘ the *French Nation*, who have a Just and Great Esteem for
 ‘ His Majesty, and are very desirous of His Friendship, and
 ‘ Peace with Him : And that His Majesty’s Subjects at home
 ‘ and abroad account themselves, very happy in His Majesty’s
 ‘ Government, for that, It is Wise, Just and Kind ; His Majesty
 ‘ consulting the common Welfare of His People, as to their *Re-*
 ‘ *ligion, Civil Liberties, Trade*, and every other Thing.

Tell them, ‘ That this Great, Good and Wise Prince KING
 ‘ *GEORGE*, is their KING, as well as Ours, and that there-
 ‘ fore we look upon them, and shall always Treat them as fellow
 ‘ Subjects ; and that they must likewise remember at all times,
 ‘ that they are KING *GEORGE*’s Subjects, under His Al-
 ‘ legiance and Protection, and they must by no means hearken
 ‘ to any contrary Insinuations, that they will always find them-
 ‘ selves safest under the Government of *Great Britain*.

Tell them, ‘ That KING *GEORGE*, and the *British Na-*
 ‘ *tion*, are Christians of the Reformed Protestant Religion ;
 ‘ That the great and only Rule of their Faith and Worship, and
 ‘ Life, is contained in the BIBLE, [the Governour holding one
 ‘ in his hand] here in this Book which is the Word of GOD
 ‘ (*Sachems*) is contained our Holy Religion ; and we would
 ‘ gladly, have you of the same Religion with us, and therefore
 ‘ we have agreed, to be at the Charge of a Protestant Mission-
 ‘ ary among you, to instruct you, and this is the Gentleman

‘ [shewing Mr. *Baxter* to them] And I hope also in a little
‘ Time, to appoint a Schoolmaster among you to teach your
‘ Children, and that I hope and expect that they Treat this Pro-
‘ testant Missionary with all affection and respect, not only for
‘ the sake of the King’s Government, but of his own Character,
‘ He being a minister of *Jesus Christ* our only Lord and Sav-
‘ iour, who will Judge them and us at the last Day.

Tell them. ‘ That the English Settlements that have lately
‘ been made in these Eastern Parts, have been promoted partly
‘ on their accounts, and that they will find the benefit of them
‘ in having Trade brought so near them, besides the advantage
‘ of the Neighbourhood and Conversation of the English, to
‘ whom I have given strict Orders, that they be very just and
‘ kind to the Indians, upon all accounts, and therefore if at any
‘ time, they meet with any Oppression, Fraud, or unfair Deal-
‘ ing, from the English in any of their affairs ; let them make
‘ their Complaint to any of my Officers here, and then I shall
‘ soon hear of it, and take speedy and effectual care to do them
‘ right. Or if upon any great occasion, they chuse to send any
‘ of their Body to me directly they shall be very welcome. I
‘ shall always be ready to protect and assist them, For I would
‘ have them look upon the English Government in *New-En-
‘ gland* as their great and safe Shelter.

Tell them, ‘ That if they have any thing fit, or reasonable to
‘ ask of me, at this time, they shall be very welcome to lay it
‘ before me, and I shall give it all due consideration, and that I
‘ expect an Answer from them to what I have said.

Tell them, *Interpreter*, ‘ That in Token of my great sincerity
‘ ty and affection to them, and as an earnest of my future Jus-
‘ tice and Kindness to them, I here give my Hand to their
‘ Sachems, and Chief Captains.

Then his Excellency taking an English, and an Indian Bible
in his Hand, bid the Interpreters tell them that he gave them

those Bibles, and left them with Mr. *Baxter* their Minister, for their Instruction, whenever they desire to be Taught. The Minister will reside here, or hereabouts, and so will the School-master to Instruct their Children, when they have a mind to send them.

Then his Excellency Drank King GEORGE'S Health to the chief Sagamore *Moxus*, which he, and all the rest Pledged.

Wicurna stood up, and said he was appointed to speak in the Name of the rest.

Governour, Go on.

Wicurna, We are very glad of this Opportunity, to see your Excellency, when the Sun shines so bright upon us ; and Hope the Angels in Heaven rejoyce with us ; We have been in Expectation of this favour ever since we received your Excellency's Letter in the Winter.

We are not now prepared to answer what you Excellency has said to us ; But shall wait on your Excellency again to Morrow.

Governour, It is well : At what time ?

Wicurna, We desire his Excellency to Appoint the time.

Gov. Let them come about Nine a Clock, when they will see the Flag set up. I will give them an Ox for Dinner, and let them send some to Kill, and Dress it.

Wi. We are very thankful to your Excellency, for some of us have had little to eat for these two Days.

Then the Indians took leave and withdrew.

Aug. 10th. 1717.

The Eight Sachems, and chief Captains that Attended Yesterday appeared again with some other Principal Indians accompanying them.

Wi. It is a great favour of GOD we have this Opportunity to wait on your Excellency, and we have our Answers ready.

Gov. Let them Speak.

Wi. We have done with the Treaty at *Piscataqua* ; and now proceed to a new one.

Gov. They Ratify, and Confirm former Treaties.

Wi. Yes, We do.

His Excellency Ordered the Principal Articles of their Submission at *Piscataqua*, to be Read and Interpreted to them : And then Ask'd them, Whether they did remember & acknowledge them ?

And the Indians Answered, they did.

Wi. We have considered what his Excellency said Yesterday, and the first thing was for Love and Unity ; and we admire it exceedingly. And believe it pleases GOD. And hope your Excellency will endeavour it shall be so.

Gov. I assure them of it, If they carry themselves suitably, with Duty and Allegiance to KING GEORGE.

Wi. We hope all hard thoughts will now be laid aside, between the English and Us, and that the Amity will be hearty.

Gov. Very well.

Wi. We are well pleas'd that his Excellency is Commander of *New-England* ; and that altho' He is lately Arriv'd from *England*, He is Acquainted with the Affairs of *New-England*, and hope all things will be well.

Gov. Tell them if they behave themselves well, I shall use them kindly.

Wi. We have had the same Discourse from other Governours, as from your Excellency : and we have said the same, to them ; Other Governours have said to us that we are under no other Government but our own.

Gov. How is that ?

Wi. We Pray leave to Speak out. Your Excellency was pleased to say that we must be Obedient to KING GEORGE, which we shall if we like the Offers made us.

Gov. They must be Obedient to KING GEORGE, and all just Offers and Usage shall be given them.

Wi. We will be very Obedient to the KING, if we are not Molested in the Improvement of our Lands.

Gov. They shall not be Interrupted in the Improvement of their Lands ; and the English must not be Molested by them in theirs.

Wi. We are pleased with the liberty your Excellency gives us, of making Mention of any wrong we have suffered.

Gov. They must Desist from any Pretensions to Lands which the English own.

Wi. We Pray leave to go on in order with our Answer.

Gov. Let them go on.

Wi. If any wrong happens to us we will not avenge our selves, but apply to your Excellency for Redress. If any Foreign Indians come upon us, We shall Acquaint your Excellency, but hope by our Young Men to defend our selves.

Gov. If they want help our Young Men shall Assist them also.

Wi. If any Quarrel happens & blood should be shed, We will not avenge our selves, but apply to your Excellency. We Return Thanks to your Excellency for your favour in offering us Succours, & if there should be any Disturbance we shall not Complain without real proof, nor for any frivolous matter.

Wi. This Place was formerly Settled and is now Settling at our request : And we now return Thanks that the English are come to Settle here, and will Imbrace them in our Bosoms that come to Settle on our Lands.

Gov. They must not call it their Land, for the English have bought it of them and their Ancestors.

Wi. We Pray leave to proceed in our Answer, and to talk that matter afterward. We Desire there may be no further Settlements made. We shan't be able to hold them all in our Bosoms, and to take care to Shelter them, if it be like to be bad Weather, and Mischief be Threatned.

As to the Ministers Instructing us :

All People have a love for their Ministers, and it would be

strange if we should not love them, that come from GOD. And as to the Bibles your Excellency mentioned, We desire to be Excused on that Point. GOD has given us Teaching already, and if we should go from that, we should displease GOD. We are not capable to make any Judgment about Religion.

Your Excellency was not sensible how sick we were Yesterday to see the Man of War ashore, We were so faint we could not Speak out with strength, and we are now very glad the Ship is well.

We are very glad to wait on your Excellency, and to tell you, That we sent our Young Men early this Morning, to see if the Ship was well, and were very glad to hear she was.

Gov. Tell them, I accept their respects for His Majesty's Ship, and if the Ship can help them at any time, It shall be ready to do it.

W. We shall be very glad when we have concluded, that your Excellency may have good Winds, and Weather, and get safe down this River, and home.

Gov. Tell them they must be sensible and satisfied that the *English* own this Land, and have Deeds that shew, and set forth their Purchase from their Ancestors. And we will not be molested in our Improvement of them, And they shall not be molested in the improvement of the Lands that belong to them.

Tell them also, That Complaints are made to me that some of them have violently taken things from some of the English, as the Meat out of their Pots, and other things which is contrary to the Law of GOD and Man, and that they had forbid the English Planting on their own Lands, and that the Night before last they had killed some of the Young Cattel belonging to the English, (which indeed they had first informed of, and desired forgiveness) all which is contrary to their Articles.

W. We desire time to consult.

Gov. They may have it, but tell them I expect to see them

again at Three a Clock, with a positive Answer about the Lands. And that they should always Muzzle their Dogs, when they come upon the English Lands where their Cattle are.

Wi. We are very thankful that your Excellency gives us leave to consider, and shall attend your Excellency at the time appointed with our Answers, for it is not a jesting matter we are now upon.

3 a Clock in the afternoon.

Wi. We are willing to cut off our Lands as far as the Mills, and the Coasts to *Pemaquid*.

Gov. Tell them we desire only what is our own, and that we will have. We will not wrong them, but what is our own we will be Masters of.

Wi. It was said at *Casco* Treaty, that no more Forts should be made.

Gov. Tell them the Forts are not made for their hurt, and that I wonder they should speak against them, when they are for the security of both, we being all Subjects of King George.

King GEORGE builds what Forts he Pleases in his own Dominions, and has given me Power to do it here, and they are for their security as well as our's, and the French do the like, They build what Forts they please, and all Kings have that Power, and the Governours they appoint to do the same.

Wi. We can't understand how our Lands have been purchased, what has been Alienated was by our Gift.

His Excellency hercupon ordered a Deed of Sale of Lands on *Kennebeck River*, made by Six Indian Sagamores, to *Richard Wharton*, should be opened and exhibited to them, which was done and partly Read, and Interpreted to them.

Wi. As for the West side of the *Kennebeck River* I have nothing to say, but am sure nothing has been Sold on the East side.

Gov. I expect their positive Answer and Compliance in this

matter, that the English may be quiet in the Possession of the Lands they have purchased.

Wi. We don't know what to think of new Forts built.

Gov. I have spoke to that fully already, and told them they are for our mutual defence.

Wi. We should be pleased with King GEORGE if there was never a Fort in the Eastern Parts.

Gov. Tell them that wherever there is a new Settlement, I shall always order a Fort, if I think it proper, and that it is for the security of them and us, and so do the French. Are any People under the same Government afraid of being made too strong to keep out enemies ?

Wi. We are a little uneasy concerning these Lands, but are willing the English shall possess all they have done, excepting Forts.

Gov. Tell them we will not take an Inch of their Land : nor will we part with an Inch of our own.

Wi. We shall have Fishing and Fowling wherever we will ?

Gov. It is freely consented to, and they are assured of it.

Then the Indians rose up at once & withdrew, in a hasty abrupt manner without taking leave, and left behind them their English Colours, returning to their Head quarters at *Puddle-stones-Island*.

And in the evening brought to His Excellency a Letter from *Sebastian Ralle* their Jesuit, Dated the 17th of *Aug.* 1717. Wherein he says, that Governour *Vaudreville* had written to them, that when he was lately in *France*, he enquired of the King of *France*, whether he had in any Treaty given away the Indians Lands to the English, and that the French King told him, he had not, but was ready to succour the Indians, if their Lands were encroacht upon. Which his Excellency read and rejected as not worthy of his Regard. And the Indians return'd.

August 11th, 1717.

His Excellency went on board the Squirrel Man of War, and Ordered the Fore-top-sail to be loosed. Whereupon a Canoo with two *Indians* hastened on board, & acknowledged the rudeness & ill Manners they were guilty of Yesterday, and Pray'd that they might see his Excellency again.

His Excellency told them they should if they quitted their unreasonable Pretensions to the English Lands, and Complied with what he had said, but not otherwise. Which they promising to do, His Excellency Appointed to meet them at Six a Clock. And the Indians Desired they might have the British Colours again; which were given to them, and they returned.

And at the time appointed the Sachems, and Principal Men came over with the British Colours, leaving behind them *W-vurna*, because (as was said) he had behaved himself so improperly Yesterday.

And they Appointed *Querebennit* their Speaker.

Quer. We are very sorry for our rude Carriage Yesterday, and Pray it may be forgiven. As your Excellency said if any thing should happen amiss, it should be rectified.

Gov. 'Tis well.

Quer. It was agreed in the Articles of Peace, that the English should Settle, where their Predecessors had done; And we agree to those Articles & Confirm them. And Desire the English may Settle as far as ever they have done. And then Presented His Excellency a Belt of *Wampum*. And said we Desire to live in Peace.

Gov. Tell them, if they don't begin the Quarrel they shall have no occasion from us.

Quer. We desire that by the favour of GOD, we may always live in Peace and Unity.

Gov. We Pray the same.

Quer. If any of our People should happen to be out in Cold and Stormy Weather, we desire the English to shelter them.

Gov. As long as they behave themselves well kindness shall be shewn them.

Quer. We shall always do the same for the English, and GOD Almighty hears us say it.

Gov. It is doing like Christians.

Quer. What I have said GOD Almighty hears, and presented another belt of *Wampum*.

Gov. We say the same, what is done is done in the presence of GOD.

Gov. Tell them I hear more Complaints of some of them, that they have Interrupted the English in their Affairs, Taken the Meat out of their Pots &c. I expect that there be no more such Miscarriages: If any of our People should do so to them they should be punish'd severely.

Quer. We Pray supplies may be sent us.

Gov. Tell them that the Traders here shall supply them.

Gov. Ask them, What they want most.

Quer. In the Winter all necessaries are wanting, especially Provisions and Ammunition.

Gov. Tell them the Traders shall have order to supply them with what they want, at reasonable Rates.

Quer. We should be glad of one Trading House that may serve us all.

Gov. There shall be a place or 2, or 3, when I go home appointed, where they shall be supplied.

Quer. Mr. *Minot* is a good natur'd Man, and pleases us well.

Gov. There shall be here, and in other places supplies of Trade.

Quer. We Desire that Interpreter *Jordan* may be near us, to Represent to your Excellency any thing that may happen.

Gov. I Desire no better Man.

Quer. We should be glad of a Smith here, to mend our Guns.

Gov. Here is one that has work'd for you and Complains he is not paid for it.

Quer. As to that I don't know, but it is a long time before he will do our work, and then he won't do it well.

Gov. If you take care to pay for your work, I shall Endeavour you shall have a good Lock-Smith.

And tell them, that I thank them for their Present.

His Excellency Directed the following Instrument to be drawn up, and annex to the Articles of their Submission, made at *Piscataqua*: which was Read, and Interpreted to them Paragraph by Paragraph by Interpreter *Jordan*, (Capt. *Gyles* having been ordered to his Command of the Fort at *Brunswick* Yesterday.)

And they all readily & without any Objection Consented to the whole.

August 12th, 1717.

Twenty of the Sachems, and Principal Men Sign'd & Seal'd & Deliver'd the said Instrument to his Excellency as their Act; being Witnessed by several English Gentlemen, and several of the Principal Young Men of the Indians. It is as follows, *viz.*

George Town on Arrowsick Island in His Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay, in New-England, the 12th Day of August 1717. in the Fourth Year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord GEORGE, by the Grace of GOD of Great Britain, France & Ireland, KING, Defender of the Faith, &c.

We the Subscribers being Sachems & Chief Men of the several Tribes of Indians belonging to Kennebeck, Ponobscot, Pegwackit, Saco, and other the Eastern Parts of His Majes-

ty's Province aforesaid, having had the several Articles of the foregoing Treaty distinctly Read & Interpreted to us, by a Sworn Interpreter, at this time, Do Approve of, Recognize, Ratify & Confirm all, and every the said Articles, (excepting only the Fourth & Fifth Articles, which relate to the Restraint, and Limitation of Trade & Commerce which is now otherwise managed.)

And whereas some rash & inconsiderate Persons amongst us, have molested some of our good fellow Subjects the English in the Possession of their Lands, and otherwise ill-Treated them, We do Disapprove & Condemn the same, and freely Consent that our English Friends shall Possess, Enjoy & Improve all the Lands which they have formerly Possessed, and all which they have obtained a Right & Title unto: Hoping it will prove of mutual & reciprocal Benefit & Advantage to them & us, that they Cohabit with us.

In Testimony, and Perpetual Memory whereof We have hereunto set our Hands & Seals, in behalf of our Selves, & of the several Tribes of the Indians, that have delegated us to appear for, and Represent them the Day & Year aforementioned.

This Affair being finish'd, several Sachems Desired as it suited them, that Supplies might be sent to *Winter Harbour, Casco, Macquoit, Rowsick, Small Point*, and a Sloop with Supplies to *Penobscot*; which his Excellency told them he would gratify them in. As also that People should not hunt the Fowl which floats.

Mug. Complain'd he had left *Fifteen Shillings*, with Capt. *Lane*, and that he would not restore it to him.

And they Desired that Capt. *Lane* might be directed to use them better, or some other Person sent in his room.

Sarumbamet Complained that Mr. *Nowel* had imployed him to procure for him an English Young Woman, a Captive, prom-

ising him *l.* 20 if he succeeded, and *l.* 10 if he attempted, and did not succeed, and that he had Endeavoured it without success, and said *Nowel* refuses to comply with his bargain.

To all which his Excellency Replied that he would take care that Right should be done them.

Then all the Sachems & Chief Men came with great respect & offered his Excellency their hands; one of them declaring that they Desired the Peace might continue as long as the Sun & Moon should endure.

And his Excellency ordered them a Present of some Provisions & Ammunition, which they accepted very thankfully, and Pray'd that their Young Men might be allowed to come over, and give his Excellency a Dance, which his Excellency allowed of.

BOSTON; Printed by *B. Green*, Printer to his Excellency the GOVERNOUR & COUNCIL: And sold by *Benj. Eliot*, at his Shop below the Town-house. 1717.

NO. 2.

THE
CONFERENCE

WITH THE EASTERN INDIANS, AT THE RATIFICATION OF THE
PEACE, HELD AT FALMOUTH IN CASCO-BAY, IN
JULY AND AUGUST, 1726.

FALMOUTH, IN CASCO-BAY, July 16, 1726.

HIS Honour WILLIAM DUMMER Esq ; Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief, in and over His Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*, with a Quorum of His Majesty's Council of said Province, Arrived here this Day, A Number of the Gentlemen of the House of Representatives, and others, attending the Lieut. Governour, to receive the Ratification of the late Treaty of Peace from the *Eastern Indians*.

On the 21st Currant, His Honour received a Letter from *Wenemouett*, Sagamore, Dated at *St. George's*, July 19th, 1726, in the words following, *Viz.*

GREAT GOVERNOUR,

This Day we saw Your Express sent to Capt. *Gyles*, wherein you say you expect to meet us at *Casco-Bay*, but we insist on meeting at *Pemaquid*, by reason that *Casco* is so far, and it's

now a very busy time with us, and we pray you would Condescend to us in meeting us there, and we will without fail meet you there ; by reason you insist on our now meeting, we can't have only our own Tribe, but we rather Choose to have those of *Canada* &c. with us, through whose means we have been hindered meeting you 'till this time, We desire your Answer with all Dispatch, and are now waiting here for the same : And least the Vessel thro' Contrary Winds should be detained, we have sent a Canoo with two Men, who will bring us your Answer with all speed : We Salute You Great Governour, and are your Friends, &c.

his

 Wenemouett Sagamore.
 Mark.

Which being Communicated to His Majesty's Council, they were of Advice, that the following Letter should be wrote in Answer thereto, *viz.*

FALMOUTH, July 21st, 1726, at Five a Clock Afternoon.
 Wenemouett, Chief Sachem,

This Day at Three a Clock Afternoon, we received such a Letter from you by the Schooner, in Answer to Ours, as we could not have expected, because contrary to your Engagements in your Treaty ; You say you expect us at *Pemaquid*, under pretence of it's being a busy time, and the Difficulty of coming hither, you ought to have order'd your Business to Comport with your Engagements : We have been waiting here some days in Expectation of meeting you, to Ratify and Confirm the Peace according to the Articles Stipulated and Agreed on at *Boston* last Winter. Capt. *Sander's* who carries this Letter will tarry Three Days, and on his return you may if you please (by God's Permission) have safe Conduct & Passage hither with him, with as many as can be Accommodated on

Board the Sloop, fully prepared to Ratify the Articles agreed on, which is what we justly expect, having not failed of a Punctual and Honourable Compliance of what was engaged on our part ; we bid you heartily farewell. WM. DUMMER.

Which Letter was } JOHN WENTWORTH,
Signed } P. MASCARENE.

Which Letter was accordingly Express'd per the Sloop *Merry-meeting Thomas Sanders* Master.

On the 23d. the aforementioned Indians came hither, and waited on the Lieut. Governour, with a Message from their Sagamore *Wenemouett*, That they were sent to know whether His Honour was Arrived here or not. The Lieut. Governour Acquainted them that the Lieut. Governour of *Piscataqua*, and Major *Mascarene* from *Nova Scotia*, the same Gentlemen that were at the Treaty at *Boston*, were now with him here to receive the Ratification of the Treaty from the *Indian Tribes* : That he had received the Letter from *Wenemouett* their Sachem, and had wrote an Answer thereto per Capt. *Sanders*, but least that should miscarry, he would send a Copy of it by them : And they having refreshed themselves, and received Necessaries for their Return, were Dispatched about Six of the Clock that Evening.

On the 29th, *Wenemouett*, the Chief Sachem, with a Number of his Principal Men, & others, arriv'd in Capt. *Sanders* Sloop, and on the 30th the Conference for the Ratification of the Treaty was entered upon, and Concluded the Sixth of *August*, as appears by the following Pages.

ANNO REGNI REGIS GEORGII MAGNÆ BRITANNIÆ & C. DUODECIMO ET DECIMO TERTIO.

At a CONFERENCE Begun and Held at *Falmouth*, in *Casco-Bay*, *July 10th*, *Annoque Domini*, 1726, for the Rati-

fication of the late Treaty of Peace, had with the *Eastern Indians at Boston*, By and Between His Honour WILLIAM DUMMER Esq; Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief, in and over His Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay in New-England*, The Honourable *William Tailor* Esq; *John Wheelwright* Esq; *Elisha Cook* Esq; *Joseph Hammond* Esq; *Samuel Thaxter* Esq; *John Turner* Esq; *Thomas Palmer* Esq; His Majesty's Council of said Province being Present.

The Honourable JOHN WENTWORTH Esq; Lieut. Governour, and Commander in Chief of His Majesty's Province of *New-Hampshire in New England*, being attended by *George Jaffery* Esq; *Shadrach Walton* Esq; *Richard Wibird* Esq; of His Majesty's Council of said Province. And Major PAUL MASCARENE, Commissioned by the Honourable LAURANCE ARMSTRONG Esq; Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief of His Majesty's Province of *Nova Scotia, or L' Acadie*.

On the One Part,

And

WENEMOUETT Chief Sachem & Sagamore of the *Penobscutt Tribe*, *Espegnect* Second Chief of said Tribe, *Edgeremowit*, *Sousack*, *Seconkii*, *Cesar Moxis*, *Geneket*, *Decemando*, *Scowees*, *Guillean*, *Victor Martyn*, *Hassangk*, *Seauseen*, *Augustin*, *Stannezzes*, *Bartholomew*, *Francois Loron* Junr. *Francois Xavier*, *Louis*, *Paul Petteremenit*, *Hassang* Junr. *Arrexis*, Junr. *Pier*, *Sousack*, Junr. *Acteon*, Chiefs and others, of the said Tribe of *Penobscutt*, as well in behalf of the Tribe, as of all the other Tribes of the Indians, mentioned in the aforesaid Treaty, *Seguaron*, alias *Loron*, *Arrexis*, *Francois*, *Xavier*, *Meganamoumba*, Four Indian Delegates that Sign'd the said Treaty being also Present On the other Part.

Lt. Gover. Dummer. I Am very glad to see you here, You are all Welcome to *Casco*.

Indians. We come to wait on the Governour to know when

it will be his Pleasure that we should see him again, in order for the Treaty. The Business requires haste, and the Governour has been here a long time waiting; we want to have the Business over, that so we might get home again: All the Indians that are expected at the Ratification are now Arrived.

Lt. Gov. We will be ready at Three a Clock for the Treaty, in case you are ready, and it will suit you.

Indians. If the Governour will Fire a Great Gun when he is ready for the Treaty we shall know by that when to come off from the Island.

Lt. Gov. We will Fire a Gun, and hoist the Jack at the Mast-head of the Commodore, for the Signal when we are ready.

Indians. It is the desire of our Ancient Men that the Governour would give Orders that all the Vessels in the Harbour, and Taverns on the Shore, may be restrained from Selling our Young Men any Strong Liquor, which may prevent Mischief.

Lt. Gov. We approve very much of that, and shall give Orders accordingly.

Indians. We also desire that any Vessels that come in be restrained from Selling Drink to our Young Men, we wan't very much to get home, and desire the Business may be done.

Lt. Gov. How many Indians are there in the whole.

Indians. About Forty.

Lt. Gov. You shall be supplied with Provisions needful for you. Then the Indians withdrew.

POST MERIDIEM.

P R E S E N T

Lieut. Governour DUMMER, with His Majesty's Council of the *Massachusetts Bay*, Lieut. Governour *Wentworth*, &c. and Major *Paul Mascarene*.

WENEMOUETT, Chief Sachem &c. of the Indians: Capt. *John Gyles*, Capt. *Joseph Bane*, Capt. *Samuel Jordan*, who

were Sworn to the True and Faithful Discharge of their Office in Interpreting in the present Negotiation.

Lt. Gov. of the Massachusetts-Bay. Interpreters, You are now to Acquaint the Indians, that you have been Sworn well and truly and faithfully to Interpret in the Negotiation now depending.

Indians. We desire that Capt. *Jordan* may Interpret to us, because we understand him plainest, and the other two will stand by.

Lt. Gov. There is here Present the Lieut. Governour of the Province of the *Massachusetts Bay*, and His Majesty's Council of said Province, The Lieut. Governour of *New-Hampshire*, with several of His Majesty's Council of said Province, and Major *Paul Mascarene* from the Government of *Nova-Scotia* or *L' Acadie*, and we are come Pursuant to the Treaty of Peace lately had at *Boston*, and to receive the Ratification of the said Treaty from you. We are ready to Ratify the Articles of the Treaty on Our Part, and we suppose you are also ready to Ratify the same on your Part, and that's what we have to say now.

Loron. Speaker. The Lieut. Governour has mentioned the same thing that we are come for, The Treaty we had the last Winter so far as it was then finished, There are none but the *Penobscut Tribe* here at present, Others that we expected are not here at this Place, which is the Place the Government expected we should meet at, We sent Messengers to the other Tribes, and acquainted them of the time the Governour Appointed to meet, but being so soon, they are not yet come, we sent to the *Canada Tribes* to come over to the Treaty according to the Time appointed by the Governour, but they have not come, they have sent a Letter, and two Wampom Belts, one to the Governour, and one to the *Penobscut Tribe*.

Lt. Gov. Who do you mean by the *Canada* Indians.

Loron. We mean the *Narridgwocks, St. Francois & Wovenock* Indians.

Lt. Gov. What do you mean by giving an Answer to the *Canada* Indians Letter.

Loron. The *St. Francois* Indians as we have said sent to the Commissioners lately sent to *Canada*, and gave for Answer, that this Government should go to *Mount-Royal*, when we Treated with them, that so we should all be before Our Fathers.

Lt. Gov. What do you mean by the *Canada* Indians Letter, I never received any Letter of their's.

Loron. We mean the Belt that was sent.

Lt. Gov. Do you mean by the Letter any thing that was said at *Canada* before the Treaty was held at *Boston*.

Loron, Speaker. We mean only what was said at *Canada* this Spring, nothing before, When the Belt was sent to the Governour, meaning the *Canada* Indians Belt, there was Letters sent of the 30th of *June* & 1st of *July* from *Wenemouett* then at *St. Georges*, to desire that as the Governour was the furthest from the *Canada* Indians, that he would send an Answer to *Wenemouett*, that we may both joyn in the Answer to the *Canada* Indians as we were Brothers.

Lt. Gov. You may go on, I would have you to say, all you have at present to say.

Loron. We tho't when we sent the Letter and Belt from the *Canada* Indians, that we should receive an Answer to it for Our further Proceeding, but instead of that we received the Governour's Direction to meet him here for the Ratification of the Treaty. As to the first Motions of Peace when we heard of it from the Governour we were very glad of it, and were ready to join in the Peace, and made Proposals in order to effect it, and particularly about the Lands, and the *English* quitting the two Houses, viz. *Richmond & St. George's* which

the Government did not see cause to come into ; if they had we with the other Indians should all have come into a Peace before now, and there would be no Difficulty with the others ; not that the Houses should be removed at a great distance, but that the House at *St. George's* should be removed to *Pemaquid*, and that at *Richmond* to *Arrowsick*, for the Trading-Houses. As for the *Penobscut-Tribe* they are so careful that they will do every thing that is just, That there shall be no Breach or Misunderstanding for the future, but that the Tribes round about us might approve of every thing we do, it was further mentioned in the Treaty, that if any of the Tribes should rise or break up what was therein Agreed on, or lift up the Hatchet, we shall all joyn in Suppressing them, and so we now Agree. We have nothing further to offer now.

Lt. Gov. Besides what I mentioned at first, that the several Governments are come down to receive the Ratification of the Peace from you, There are Gentlemen here present from the Government of the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, to Prove the *English* Rights to the Land Eastward, pursuant to the aforesaid Treaty, so that you may perceive that we are come fully provided to make good the Treaty on Our Part, according to the Articles Agreed on. That is all I have to say.

Loron. We have no more to say to Night.

Lt. Gov. To Morrow is the Lord's Day, upon which we do no Business. On Monday we will give you an Answer to what you have said ; and we will Order the same Signal when we are ready as we did to Day.

Loron. To Morrow is our Sabbath-day, and we also keep the Day.

Lt. Gov. We will take a Glass of Wine, and Drink the King's Health, and then you may Retire.

Monday August, 1st. 1726.

Present as Before.

Lt. Gov. of the Massachusetts-Bay. What we have now to say is in Writing, I will give it the Secretary, who will read it to you, and you may have time to consider and give your Answer to it.

GENTLEMEN,

Before we proceed it is necessary that you give us a true and full Account why the *Narridgwock Indians* are not here, as you have engaged for them in the Treaty made at *Boston* which now lies on the Table : We have considered of what you said to us, at our meeting on Saturday last, and as to the Proposals of the *Narridgwock* & other Tribes, that the Treaty be held at *Mount-Royal*, we say that's its contrary to the Articles of Peace made at *Boston*, and therefore deserves no Answer, and you know that we always told you, that it was beneath the Honour of the *English Government* to Treat with the *Indians* in a *French Country*, and as to the Insinuations of the *Canada Indians*, that our Commissioners begun a Treaty there, it is not true, for our Commissioners were sent to Demand of the *French Governour* in the Name of *King GEORGE* not to assist the *Indians* in the War against us, and also to Restore all the *English Captives* in that Government, which they declared to the Governour of *Canada* as soon as they Arrived, and that they had no other Business in that Country.

As to the Two Houses you except against, you may Remember you were told at *Boston*, that *King GEORGE* had a Right to build Houses where he pleased within his Dominions, and we have not built any Houses on Lands in the *Eastern Parts* but what we have Purchased, and are ready to prove the Title, and that the Houses mentioned were not kept for Offence after the *Ratification*, but as they were most Conveniently Scituated in the Judgment of the Government of the *Massachu-*

*sett*s for Supplying the *Indians*, which we then concluded you had rested satisfied with, and you may depend that we shall not depart from that or any other of our Engagements: This is all we have to say to you at Present, if you desire it, it shall all be repeated to you over again.

Indians. We desire time to consider of what has been said, and we will make an Answer.

Lt Gov. It shall be allowed you.

Wenemouett. When the two first went to *Boston*, we had not full Power to act, & to do for the Tribes, but when *Loron* return'd from *Boston* to *Penboscuit*, then I sent a Young Man with him to *Arreraguntecook*, and they were all very ready to come into what the *Penobscuts* should do as to the Treaty, and we had full Power Delegated to us to act for the *Narridgwocks*, *Woenocks*, and *Arreaguntecooks* and *St. Francois*, but the reason of the *Narridgwocks* not coming in is altogether as new to us as it can be to you.

Lt. Gov. Did the Belt come from the *Narridgwocks*?

Wenemouett. No they had no Hand in it.

Lt. Gov. We expect you will send us word when you are ready with your Answer to what we have said to day.

Wenemouett. We will let you know when we are ready.

Lt. Gov. If there be any thing we can be serviceable to *Wenemouett* in he may have it, I see he is not well. For which he returned his Thanks to the Lieut. Governour.

Tuesday, August, 2d. 1726.

Present as before.

Lt. Gov. of the Massachusetts-Bay. I Am ready to hear what you have to say.

Loron. We will now give our Answer to what was said Yesterday. And first give the Reason why the *Narridgwock* Tribe is not here, we shall be very Plain, and tell the Truth and

nothing but the Truth why they are not here. We sent a Messenger over to the *Narridgwocks*, *St. Francois*, and *Winnocks*, for them to come over here to the Treaty, to hear what was said, when the Messengers were got to those Tribes they discoursed 'em and deliver'd their Message to come over here, but the *St. Francois*, *Winnocks*, and the *Narridgwocks*, made Answer that they would have the *Penobscutt* Chiefs with these Governments come over there to hear the Treaty, There were Six of the *Narridgwock* Indians came over to *Penobscutt* this Spring, they missed of the Messengers that were sent from *Penobscutt* to *Narridgwock*; then Two went back and Four staid till the *Penobscutt* Messengers return'd with an Answer from *St. Francois*, &c. with the two Belts; the Four *Narridgwock* Indians that tarried behind would have come here and have been present at the Ratification, but the Belts being sent occasioned their not coming, when the Belts came to *Penobscutt*, we had Advice then from the Governour of the Massachusetts of his coming down to the Ratification, and the Four *Narridgwock* Indians told the *Penobscutts*, to go on, and what ever they did was all one as if they were Present, and the *Narridgwocks* after that went to Canada.

Lt. Gov. Is this the last Account you have had of the *Narridgwock* Indians.

Loron. It's but a little while since they went away, and we have not heard from them since, The last Man that went away, when he went off he said he would go foremost to the *Arresaguntecook* Indians, & discourse 'em on the Message they have sent, expecting that the Government and the *Penobscutt* Chiefs will give an Answer also to the Belts as we are Brothers. This is what we Answer as to the First Part of what was said to us Yesterday. Now we proceed to make Answer to the Second Part of Yesterdays Discourse. Every thing of the Treaty is very plain to us, and there is nothing in the way excepting the

Two Houses ; in case they could be removed a little further in, as we mentioned Yesterday. The Governour was mentioning that he would Settle no Lands, but what good Rights & Titles might be set forth to, & in case the Lands were Sold, we have a Number of Young People growing up who never were Acquainted of the Lands being Sold, The Government is a Great and Rich Government, and if the Lands were Sold, they were Sold for a small matter, and Cost but little, and it would be but a small matter for the Government to make Allowance for them, and give them up.

Lt. Gov. What do you mean by making Allowance for the Lands.

Loron. We desire that no Houses or Settlement may be made to the Eastward of *Pemaquid*, or above *Arrowsick*; As for the *Penobscutt* Tribe in particular, we don't know that ever they Sold any Lands, That's all we have to say.

Lt. Gov. We shall be ready to make you an Answer to Morrow Morning at Nine a Clock, and shall Order the Signal to be made for you.

Wednesday August 3d, 1726.

Present as Before.

Lt. Gov. of the Massachusetts. We have Considered your Motion, That we would remove those two Houses on *Kennebeck* and *St. George's Rivers* a little further in, to which we Answer, That those Houses are on Lands Purchased by His Majesty's Subjects, which we are ready by Commissioners appointed by the Government of the *Massachusetts-Bay* for that Affair, to make evident to you, (altho' the *Narridgwocks* are not Present) by producing fair Deeds under the Hands of the *Sachems* of those Countrys for the same, as well as divers Treaties wherein you Allow'd and Confirm'd to the *English* all the Lands formerly Possessed by them, which Commissioners are here present for that Service, Those Lands being for a long time since Purchased by His Majesty's Subjects, (and the

Property Vested in them, the Government cannot Disclaim them;) And now as you have assured us, that you very well know all the Articles of the Peace which was made at *Boston*, and that you are ready to come hither to Ratify them, so we are also ready to receive the said Ratification, and now expect that it shall be done accordingly. We have no more to say, but to demand of you what *English* Captives you have ready to Exchange, Pursuant to an Article of the Treaty on that behalf. We have said what we have to say now, and will take a Walk out for a little time if you desire it, and give you an Opportunity of advising one with another here.

Indians. We thank the Governour, We are the smallest in Number and we will walk out, we can best bear the heat of the Sun, and the Indians accordingly retired.

POST MERIDIEM.

Loron. We have been tho'tful of, and Consulted what was said to Day and now will give Answer to it. We understood the Governour was tho'tful why the *Narridgwock* Indians were not here, We are also tho'tful, It is a Hindrance, so far as we should be glad they should be sent for again, We are of Opinion if they should be sent for they would appear here forthwith, the reason why we mention this is because we would be very careful in what we do in our Proceedings, that none should break in upon our Proceedings, we should be very sorry if any thing should happen amiss as to what we have done, we are not knowing that any are design'd or intend to break our Treaty, but we are very tho'tful and Concern'd that none shall do it. We insist upon the removal of those two Houses which was mentioned last Winter, we again make mention of them now, and if they were removed there would be no difficulty among the Tribes. We can't find any Record in our Memory, nor in the Memory of Our Grand-Fathers that the *Penobscutt* Tribe have sold any Land, As to the Deeds mentioned last Winter,

made by *Medoccuranda* and *Shepscut John* they were not *Penobscutt* Indians, one belonging to *Mechias Medockewondo*, the other towards *Boston*, If we could find in reality that the Lands were Purchased of the right Owners, we should not have insisted upon it, nor have opened our Mouths, we would not pretend to tell a Lye about it, for we know that God will be angry with the Man that tells a Lye, We do not remember of any Settlements at *St. George's*, we remember a pretty while, and as long as we remember, the Place where the Garrison stands was filled with Great Long Grown Trees. As to the mentioning of Prisoners as we told you last Winter, we had not one in our whole Tribe, so we say now, we have not one Prisoner in our Tribe, if we had we would have bro't 'em in long before now, All the Prisoners we took as we took them they were return'd to *Boston*, or sent to *Canada* to the French, and those that are among the French we have no Command of; We mention it over again, that if we had any Prisoners we should have brought 'em in long ago, for we understand it that the Peace was Concluded at the Signing the Articles almost a Twelve-month ago, All the Controversy now is about a small Tract of Land, which is but a Trifle, and all is finished excepting that, which is a Trifle. We have nothing further to offer now.

Lt. Gov. What do you mean by having the *Narridjwocks* sent for, and that they would be here if they were sent for, Are they within Call do you know?

Indians. We believe if they were sent for they would be here some time this Summer, we know where they were left.

Lt. Gov. Where do you suppose the *Narridjwock* Indians are now.

Loron. We suppose they are at *Arreseguntecock*, *Wewoonock*, or *Saint Francois*, scattered among them Tribes.

Lt. Gov. The Committee for Claims are here, ready in the

Presence of all the Governments here Assembled to set forth the Titles of the *English* to the Lands in the Eastern Parts of this Government.

Then the Committee made a Beginning to shew the Deeds of the *Sagamore's* to the Lands about *St. George's River*, and after some time spent therein, the Indians desired to refer the further Proceedings of that matter to some other time, when they would take an Opportunity to consider it.

Thursday, August 4th, 1726.

Present as Before.

The Committee for Claims per the Lieut. Governour's Permission, had a Conference in the fore part of the Day with the Tribe, when they set forth the *English* Titles & Claims to the Lands in the *Eastern Country*, which may more particularly appear by the said Committee's Report. After which the Conference was proceeded in, *Viz.*

Lt. Gov. of the Massachusetts. You have been with the Committee this Morning, and I trust they have given you Satisfaction concerning the Lands in Dispute, and may be assured that you shall always have equal Justice with His Majesty's *English* Subjects in all Points, when ever any Difficulty shall arise concerning the Property of Lands or any other Matters. We have waited long eno' already for the *Narridgwock* Indians, in order to their coming to Ratify the Treaty that you have made for your Selves, and others your late Confederates, wherein you oblige your Selves to bring them in, or joyn your Young Men to reduce them to Reason. We now justly expect the Ratification, and accordingly tender the same to you now.

Lieut. Gover. Proceeded. Inasmuch as I see you are not all here Present by a considerable Number, I expect you all appear to Morrow Morning, and be present at the Ratification, and what has been said shall be repeated to you if you desire it.

Indians. We understand it very well.

Loron. We have been tho'tful of what has been said to us this Morning respecting the Lands, as well as what the Governour has spoken to us at this time concerning the Articles. We suppose you can't bring to pass what we have been proposing concerning giving way. We reckon the Governour was the first mover in bringing forward the Peace, and having a good Settlement among us, now we think we shall go beyond and further than ordinary to effect a good Understanding, As to the House at *St. Georg'es*, which lies at our Door as it were, we submit that it shall be a Truck-House, and that no other Houses be built there or thereabouts, but that that House remain as a Truck-House for the *Penobscut* Tribe. We desire Brothers as we have so good an Understanding together that there be no other Houses built there, unless it be by Purchase or Agreement, The Neighbouring Tribes have already told us that we should go on with the Treaty with good Understanding and Courage, and settle every thing, That if a Line should happen to be Run, the English may hereafter be apt to step over it, so that every thing they desire may now be Settled Strong. We are in hopes, Brothers, that what we have offered is to your Acceptance, This is all we have to say now.

Lt. Gov. Do you agree to bring over all your People with you to Morrow Morning to Sign the Articles for the Ratification, if you do, I shall then say to you, all I have to say in Answer to what you have now said.

Indians. We reckon we are all ready for the Ratification now.

Lt. Gov. What I shall have to say to you to Morrow will not be New, I have said almost the same to you already which I shall say to Morrow, but if you desire to have my Answer now you shall.

Indians. What the Governour pleases.

Lt. Gov. I shall then put you in mind of what I told you

just now respecting the Settling the Lands at *St. George's-River*, and that is, that you shall have equal Justice in all Points with the Subjects of His Majesty King GEORGE, either in Controversies respecting the Property of Lands, or any other Matter whatsoever, we don't suppose that any Gentlemen that come to produce or offer Claims of Lands there shall be their own Judges, but it shall be determined by Lawful Authority, wherein the Indians shall have the Benefit of the Law, equal with any Englishman whatsoever, and this you may be assured of, for we don't expect a Peace to last on any other footing than that of Justice.

Indians. We are very well pleased with what is said.

Lt. Gov. This is all that can be said to your last offer, and I should desire no more might be said to me, if it were my own Case.

Indians. For want of that there has been Misunderstandings.

Lt. Gov. I hope it will never be so again, and I trust it won't, and that is the mind of the whole Government of *New-England*, we hope this will be a better and more lasting Peace, than ever was made yet, and that it will last to the End of the World.

Indians. We hope it will and rejoice at it.

Lt. Gov. Some Gentlemen have been in doubt, whether you have rightly understood me, in what has been now said to you, That is if there should be any Dispute or Controversy hereafter, between the *English* and you respecting the Titles or Claims of Lands, and after a fair and lawful Tryal, if the *English* cannot make out and prove their Titles to the Lands Controverted, they shall disclaim them, but if the *English* can make out their Titles, then the *Indians* shall disclaim the Lands so Controverted.

Indians. We understand it very well, and agree to it, that it shall be so, the Controversies we understand are to be Determined by Impartial Judges, and disinterested Persons appointed for that purpose, to do equal Justice.

Lt. Gov. It is very well, I expect you to Morrow to ratify the Articles, and take a Dinner with me.

Friday, August 5th, 1726.

Present as Before, And a Considerable Number of Gentlemen &c. Attending.

Lt. Gov. of the Massachusetts. The Articles of the Treaty shall be distinctly read, and faithfully Interpreted to you.

While the Articles were in Reading, Immediately after the Article respecting Trade, the Indians by their Speaker *Loron*, acquainted the Lieut. Governour that they had been told the Prices of Goods would be raised when the Ratification was over.

The Lieut Governour answered them, that they might be assured, that the Goods always were, and still should be, bought with ready Money, and that the Government would not make any new Advance on their goods, and for a Proof of it, they would always be sensible and find that the Government would supply them Cheaper than any other People whatsoever, That they are Acquainted with the Nature of Markets, that they are sometimes higher and sometimes lower.

After the Articles were read, and the Interpreters had finished, *Loron* made a second motion, and informed the Lieut. Governour, that it had been reported that the Articles of Peace which were delivered to him, and the other Delegates at *Boston*, were not of the same Purport with those they Deposited and left in the Hands of the Government, and therefore desired that an Exchange might be made of the Articles they carried with them to *Penobscut*, with those left in the Hands of the Government, in order to their being Enabled to confute such Reports: Which was readily granted them by the Lieut. Governour, to the apparent Satisfaction of the whole Tribe. The Articles being Interpreted to the Indians, the Lieut. Governour asked them whether they thoroughly understood them.

Indians. We perfectly understand them all.

Lt. Gov. It is Necessary to write the words of the Ratification before you Sign your Names.

Indians. May we not have a copy of the Conference.

Lt. Gov. You shall have a Copy of it, as soon as it can be prepared.

The Ratification of the Treaty which is endorsed on the Original Articles was read over Distinctly and Interpreted to the Indians in the Words following, *Viz.*

We the Underwritten WENEMOUETT Chief Sachem & Sagamore of the *Penobscutt* Tribe, and Others the Chiefs, with the rest of the said Tribe now Convented having had the within Articles of Peace Distinctly and Deliberately Read over and Interpreted to us.

DO BY THESE PRESENTS in a Publick and Solemn manner, as well for Our Selves as for all the within mentioned Tribes, from whom we are Delegated and Fully Impowered, RATIFY AFFIRM and CONFIRM All and Singular the within written Articles of Peace To HIS MOST SACRED MAJESTY KING GEORGE, and that the same and each of them be, and shall Continue and Remain to be, in full Force Efficacy and Power to all Intents and Purposes whatsoever. DONE and CONCLUDED at *Falmouth* in *Casco-Bay*, before His Honour WILLIAM DUMMER Esq, Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief of His Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New England*, and His Majesty's Council of said Province. The Honorable JOHN WENTWORTH Esq, Lieut. Governor of His Majesty's Province of *New-Hampshire*, and several of His Majesty's Council of said Province, and Major PAUL MASCARENE, Delegated from His Majesty's Province of *Nova Scotia* or *L'Acadie*, and the several Gentlemen that Subscribe hereto.

WITNESS Our Hands and Seals the Fifth Day of *August*, in the Thirteenth Year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord GEORGE, By the Grace of GOD of *Great Britain, France*

and *Ireland*, King, Defender of the Faith, &c. *Annoque Domini*, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty-Six.

Indians. We suppose the Governour intends to Ratify the Articles he Sign'd to us at the Treaty.

Lt. Gov. Yes I will Ratify them under my Hand and Seal when you have finished. Do you understand what has been Now Read, and Consent to it.

Indians. After some Consultation, We understand it well and Consent to it, and then WENEMOUETT the Chief Sachem with the aforementioned Chiefs and Others, set their Hands and Seals to the Ratification.

Saturday, August 6th, 1726.

Present as Before, And a Considerable Number of Gentlemen and Others Attending.

Lt. Gov of the Massachusetts. I am now come to Ratify and Confirm the Instrument which I gave to you at the Signing the Articles of Peace, I have already Endorsed the Ratification on that I keep by me, and if you will give me Yours, the Secretary will Endorse the same thereon, which was accordingly Done, and is in the words following, *Viz.*

By the Honourable WILLIAM DUMMER Esq :

Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief of His Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New England*.

Whereas WENEMOUETT the Chief Sachem of *Penobscut*, with Others His Chiefs, and the rest of said Tribe, Convented at *Casco-Bay* the Fifth Day of August 1726. Having Solemnly and Publickly Ratified the Treaty of Submission made at *Boston* the Fifteenth Day of December last, and delivered the same to me, which I have accordingly Accepted. I do hereby Ratify and Confirm all the Articles in the within mentioned Instrument.

Given under my Hand and Seal at Arms at *Falmouth* in *Casco-Bay*, the Sixth Day of August, in the Thirteenth Year

of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord GEORGE, By the Grace of GOD of *Great Britain, France and Ireland*, KING, Defender of the Faith, &c. *Annoque Domini*, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty Six.

WILLIAM DUMMER,

By Command of His

[L. S.]

Honour the Lieut.

Governour.

John Wainwright,

Clerk of the Council.

The aforesaid Ratification was Signed in the Presence of a Considerable Number of Spectators, Gentlemen and Others, who Subscribed as Witnesses, and then Deliver'd to the Indians.

A Copy of the said Ratification was Endorsed on the Instrument Lieut. Governour *Wentworth* gave the Indian Delegates at the Signing the Treaty at *Boston*, and Publickly Executed by him in the Presence of the before mentioned Witnesses who also subscribed.

Lt. Gov. The Instrument that Major *Mascarene* gave you at the Signing the Treaty in Behalf of the Government of *Nova Scotia* or *L'Acadie*, will be Ratified and Confirmed to any persons you shall send on your behalf to the Governour at *Annapolis-Royal*.

In Behalf of the Government of the *Massachusetts* I shall make you some small Presents. I am very much Disappointed when I come to see the Things which I designed to make a Present of to you, for they are not so good as I expected, but soon after (it shall please GOD) I arrive at *Boston*, I shall see the Great Court, to whom I shall heartily recommend you as good Friends, Confederates and Neighbours, acquainting them of your ready and chearful compliance with your Engagements in ratifying and confirming the Articles of Peace made at *Boston*, which doubtless will have a proper consideration, and therefore I shall be very glad then to see you the Chief Sachem WENE-

MOUETT, with two or three of your Principal Men attending you at *Boston*.

Then His Honour Ordered the Presents to be delivered. And proceeded, There were two of your Young Men sent to *Canada* last Year, in the Service of this Province, I would see them, that I might make them a Consideration for their Trouble & Loss of Time in performing the Message, upon which only one of them, viz. *Loron's* Son appeared, the other the Sachem said was left at *Penobscut*, the Lieut. Governour taking two fine Firelocks in his Hand, [presented one to him that was present, the other His Honour delivered to the Chief Sachem *Wenemouett*, desiring of him that it might be given to the other Young Man.

Lt. Gov. I design to Confer with you on Monday next to Consult the common Good, so that there remains nothing further at present but to Rejoyce with one another.

Loron. We make bold to mention to the Governour, one thing, that when we were at *St. George's* we desired a Vessel to bring us here, so as we are now short of Canoes, we desire the Governour would supply us with a Vessel to carry us back again.

Lt. Gov. I will take care that a small Vessel be provided to carry you back.

Indians. We are very thankful to the Governour. What place does your Honour appoint we should Rejoyce at.

Lt. Gov. Upon the Rising Ground before us at the Point.

The Conference was concluded this Day with Publick Rejoycing accordingly.

CONFERENCE CONTINUED.

Tuesday, August 9th. 1726.

Present the Lieut. Governour and Council of the *Massachusetts*, And Major *MASCARENE*.

WENEMOUETT,)		
Chief Sachem with)	Capt. <i>John Gyles</i>)	Interpreters.
the other Indians.)	Capt. <i>Saml. Jordan</i> ,)	

Lt. Gov. We should have seen you sooner, but a great deal of our Time has been taken up in preparing a fair Draught of the Conference so far, and comparing it with the Minutes, our own particular Business has not hindered us from seeing you before.

Good Friends, Whereas the Articles of Peace now stand Ratified and Confirmed on your part, for and in behalf of your Selves and Others the Tribes of the *Eastern Indians*, particularly made mention of in the aforesaid Articles, so that you and we ought to go about our Necessary & Lawful business, without the least hazard or danger from one another, touching Our persons or Estates, and a friendly communication kept up and perpetuated among us: But inasmuch as the *Narridgwocks* and other Tribes, did not personally appear at the late Solemn & Publick Ratification, We justly fear that the Inhabitants on the Frontiers will be in a great measure retarded, and put by from improving their Lands & Estates there on that Account, until the aforesaid Tribes do personally manifest their Approving and Consenting to what you have so Wisely & Maturely done for them.

We cannot therefore part with you without letting you know that it will greatly tend to your Good as well as our Peace & Quiet, to remove all suspicion of Mischief on this score, that the Beneficial Ends proposed by us all may be fully effected, and by the Blessing of GOD out of the power of any ill-minded

Person to break in upon the same : We do therefore strenuously urge, that you let us know what steps you intend to take with those Tribes, and that you resolutely pursue and bring to pass what we now move to you, & justly expect your punctual and ready compliance therewith.

Loron. As to what the Governour was mentioning in the first part of what he has now said, that the Inhabitants on the Frontiers will be afraid of making Improvements, it is also so with us, we are concern'd since we have not seen them. We could make Answer to the Governour's Speech now, but we will consider of it till the Afternoon, and shall then be more particular in our answer.

Lt. Gov. We will take care of Provisions for your Dinners.

POST MERIDIEM.

Loron. We will now mention to the Governour what the thoughts of the Chiefs are. The Governour was mentioning unto us to day that he would have us to say what we proposed to help those persons that would be uneasy in the Frontiers, upon account of the *Narridgwocks*, &c, not being present at the Ratification; Its the Nature and Custom of the Indians, whenever they send a Letter or Belt to any Nation, to expect an Answer to their Letter : when any of us write a Letter, we expect a full answer to the contents of it, altho' the Subject-matter thereof is not liked, we desire the Governour to mention what answer he designs to send in answer to the Belt, or that he would say if he desires it that we would express our answer to it. We mention this because we understand it that the Belt was sent to us both, and therefore propose that the Governour would make an answer first to it if he could.

Lt. Gov. A proper Answer from you to what I said to you in the Morning will contain an Answer to the Belt.

Loron. The Matter would be more weighty if the Governour would begin in the Answer.

Lt. Gov. I am ready to hear what your propose in order to joyn in the Answer to the Belt.

Loron. We will now make our Answer to the Tribes at *Arresegunteccook*, and our Answer unto them is as follows, *Viz.*

We say Brothers, we are not able to make you an Answer to your Belt, wherein you sent for us, because the time is past for our *Ratification* of the Articles of the Treaty, We say Brothers, We wonder you should desire us to come over into that Country to Treat, which is a place where we have no being. This Country is the place where we belong to, and where the Treaty was begun, and where we think it ought to have been carried on. This is what we have to say in Answer to the Belt.

Lt. Gov. We will take it into consideration, and desire you would give us an Answer to what we said in the Morning.

Loron. We have nothing further to propose, we shall have a Great Meeting in a little time, and shall agree what to say further to the *Arresegunteccooks*.

Lt. Gov. So far as you have spoken I take to be a proper Answer for you to make as to the Belt. I desire now you will say what Measures you propose to take, whereby the Inhabitants on our Frontiers may be made easy and safe notwithstanding the *Narridgwocks* &c. did not personally appear to Ratify the Articles of the Treaty, agreeable to what I said in the Morning.

Loron. As to the Inhabitants on the Frontiers, we would have them be very careful, and as soon as we return home it shall be our first Care to send to all the Tribes, that there is a Peace made.

Lt. Gov. Will you lay your Commands and Injunctions on the other Tribes for that purpose as far as you are able.

Loron. We will do our utmost to oblige 'em to live peaceably towards us.

Lt. Gov. Do you say you will resent it, if any Hostile Acts or Injuries should be committed against our people.

Loron. We will resent such Actions and joyn our Young Men with yours in such case and oblige them to be quiet and set down; We mean in Case any of the Tribes should rise against us, or resist us, we will take Effectual Means to set 'em down by Force. As to the first Treaty we reckoned our Selves obliged to this, but we account we are under much more and stronger Obligations to do it now, since the Engagements Our whole Tribe have taken upon 'em in Ratifying the Articles of the Treaty, and shall take Effectual Care that any such Persons be obliged to set down. Major *Mascarene* told us the Government of *Annapolis* would Ratify the Treaty if we would send any persons there on our behalf for that purpose, we don't suppose he is now going to *Annapolis*, but when he Arrives there we would pray him to take care that that Government would send a Vessel for us to go there to Ratify the Articles of the Treaty, because the Bay is too bigg for us to pass over in our Canoes.

Major Mascarene. I shall write to the Governour who is now at *Canso*, of your Desire, upon my Arrival at *Boston*, and doubt not of His Compliance therewith, a few of you will be sufficient to carry the Instrument I gave you at *Boston*, to be Ratified by the Lieut. Governour or Commander in Chief, and I don't doubt but that those that come will be made very welcome.

Loron. We have something more to offer. We observe that Capt. *Gyles* is weakly and sickly, and if he should be removed by Death, we desire that some body might be sent down to *St. George's*, to take care of the Trade, we think Capt. *Smith* a proper person, not but that we think Capt. *Gyles* behaves very well in the place; this we mention sides ways as it were. We have not heard any answer to our Letter about some Frenchmen killing some of our people a great way up in the country, we mention this because the Governour told us if any Mischiefs or Injuries should happen, we should Acquaint one another of it in

order for Redress, We heard the Frenchmen were in Prison at *Annapolis*.

The Lieut. Governour Acquainted them that he had received their Letter, and sent an answer to it, and then recited the contents of the Letter, and also His Answer to it, both of which were afterwards produced and shewn to the Indians, and then acquainted the Indians that he had endeavored by Examination and other means to make out some proof against the Frenchman mentioned in the Letter, and now under confinement, but could find none, yet he kept the said Frenchman a prisoner at the Castle, where he remained at our coming away from *Boston*. And upon the Indians desire that Justice might be done on him, it was answer'd by the Lieut. Governour, That His Majesty King GEORGE, by His Laws did not allow His Governours to meddle with matters out of their own Provinces, but that all such facts must be tryed in the Governments wherein they were committed, and this being said to be done, not in our Government, but in that of *Annapolis*, the Lieut. Governour said he would send the Frenchman back thither, where they might prosecute him, and that they would have a good Opportunity of doing it when they should go thither to receive the Ratification of that Government, to which the Indians replied they were fully satisfied and content that it should be so.

Loron. Are the Indian Prisoners at *Boston* in Health.

Lt. Gov. Yes they are all very well.

Loron. We desire to know whether it is expected that the *Penobscuts* procure any English Prisoners before the Indian Prisoners are delivered, we have before several times acquainted we have not One with us.

Lt. Gov. We expect you do your utmost Endeavour to have the English Prisoners Restored.

Loron. Is it expected we should buy the English Prisoners of the French?

Lt. Gov. How do you understand that Article in the Treaty?

Loron. As to the Articles we understand them fully, we have acquainted the Governour we have not one Prisoner in our whole Tribe, we know of none, when we go home we shall send directly to *Canada*, and acquaint them that we have made a Peace: The French *Indians* will then ask us presently, how many Captives have you brought away with you? We shall answer none. They will say, how does it look like a Peace, when you have not got the Captives?

Lt. Gov. What do you mean by sending them to *Canada*?

Loron. To *Arresegunteccook*.

Lt. Gov. As to what you say, that you shall tell the French *Indians* you have not got any of the Captives, I have not told you that I would not deliver up the Captives, I design you shall have them all, I mean all such as are in the Hands of the Government.

Loron. We speak Truly, we have no *English* Captives in our Hands, but we speak for the *Indians* for those that are any where afar off, their Eyes are looking upon us, and we would willingly satisfy them as far as we can.

Lt. Gov. I design the Indian Captives shall be set at Liberty when I go to *Boston*, and *Saccarexes* the Hostage shall also be set at Liberty.

There were several Persons Attending whose Friends and Relations are in the Hands of the French, who were Recommended to the Indians for their Assistance in getting them Returned home.

Loron. As the Governor has Offer'd that the Indian Captives shall all be Restored and none kept back, so we may say that we will make Search for any Captives that may be among the Tribes, and shall take care that they shall be Restored, and shall also do our utmost to get those Redeemed that are in the Hands of the French. We shall not forget it, we have given Our

Words, and repeated our Promises and Engagements, and our words are written down, and they will appear afterwards against us.

Thursday, August 11th, 1726.

Present as Before.

The CONFERENCE Contained in this and the Thirty-Five foregoing Pages,* was distinctly Read over and Interpreted to *Wenemouett*, Chief Sachem of *Penobscutt* Tribe, and the others of said Tribe present at the said Conference.

Whereupon the Lieut. GOVERNOR asked them, if they understood it, and whether it was rightly taken down.

The *Indians* Answered, that the Conference was rightly taken down, and not a word missing in it.

Which being done His Honour the Lieut. Governour to prevent Insinuations of any Ill-minded Persons, and for the more full Satisfaction of the Tribe of *Indians* now Assembled, Subscribed his Name,

WM. DUMMER.

And then delivered the same to *Wenemouett* Chief Sachem.

After which *Wenemouett* with * * * * written of his Principal Men Subscribed and Delivered the same to His Honour the Lieut. Governour.

Sachem
WENEMOUETT  Chief.
Mark.

By Command of His Honour
the Lieutenant Governour,

John Wainwright, Cl. Council.

* The Original is contained in Thirty-six Pages in Writing.

NO. 3.

THE
CONFERENCE

WITH THE EASTERN INDIANS AT THE FURTHER RATIFICATION
OF THE PEACE, HELD AT FALMOUTH IN CASCO-
BAY, IN JULY 1727.

FALMOUTH, July 11th, 1727.

HIS Honour WILLIAM DUMMER Esq ; Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief, in and over His Majesties Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*, with a Quorum of His Majesties Council of said Province, Arrived here this day, A Number of the Gentlemen of the House of Representatives, and others, attending the Lieutenant Governour to receive the further and more general Ratification of the late Treaty of Peace from the several afternamed Tribes of Eastern Indians.

Upon His Honour's Arrival he received the following Letters, one from the Chiefs of the several Tribes, and the other from Capt. *Heath*, by the Hands of Capt. *John* of *Nerridgewock* and *Squaduck* of the *Arresaguntacook* Tribe of Indians, *Viz.*

The Indians Letter is as follows,

RICHMOND-FORT, July 7th, 1727.

The Sun shines bright this Day, we fear God that made it, and Salute you with a Friendly Heart: You and the *Penobscot*

Indians sent for us, and we come to *Teuconick* in the Spring, The *Penobscots* afterwards sent to have us come to them, but we did not hear them.

We cannot come to *Falmouth*, having come thus far with great Difficulty, we hope you will let us see you at *Sagadahock* or *Arowsick*, where we expect our Brethren of *Penobscot* will also meet. This Message we send by Lapt. *John, Quinoise*, and *Squaduck*.

TOXAS X

JUMMAWAY X

ETSERRABOONET X.

Capt. Heath's Letter.

RICHMOND-FORT, July 7th, 1727.

Honourable Sir,

‘ While I continue in this important Post, shall at all times
 ‘ think it my Duty and Honour to consult his Majesties Service,
 ‘ the Interest of the Province, and not to Enterprize any thing
 ‘ unworthy of such thoughts, nor would I slip any Opportunity to
 ‘ inform your Honour of all Occurrences to the End the Indian
 ‘ Affairs may appear in a true Light, and your Instructions be
 ‘ the Rule of my Practice from Time to Time: With these
 ‘ views have wrote on all Occasions, and particularly on the
 ‘ 12th of *June* last to your Honour, and the 23d of the same to
 ‘ the Secretary with reference to the Conference now on foot, to
 ‘ which please to permit me to add on this Occasion, that though
 ‘ I esteem my self fortunate with the Indians in several respects
 ‘ cannot by any means as yet overcome their Obstinacy against
 ‘ going to *Falmouth*, as will appear by the inclosed Letter, in
 ‘ which they don’t assign every Reason for their not going, nor
 ‘ shall I as not being for the Service of the present Day, hope
 ‘ it may suffice only to say that these Indians are prejudiced
 ‘ against, and to a great Degree resolved not to meet at *Fal-*
 ‘ *mouth*, and in order to gild these Resolutions with specious
 ‘ Pretences, have sent some of their Chief Men to the *Penob-*

' *scots*, if possible to prevent their going to *Falmouth*, and tell
 ' me this Day that they have gained the Point, and expect to
 ' meet the said *Penobscots*, in this River to-morrow accordingly.
 ' Upon the whole, it appears to me that if the said *Penobscots*
 ' join the other Indians as above, they will complexly finally con-
 ' clude not to meet You at *Falmouth*, but if Capt. *Gyles* (in
 ' the Sloop sent from hence as mentioned in my last to the Sec-
 ' retary) can steer the *Penobscot* Indians to *Falmouth*, it seems
 ' as though these may follow, but with much reluctance. In my
 ' last to Your Honour I acquainted you that I thought the Indi-
 ' ans would readily meet you at *Arrowsick*, though they men-
 ' tioned this Place only in their Letter, which it may be observ-
 ' ed they have now come to, and I have no fear of a thorough
 ' Conference as I then mentioned, unless through a Disagreement
 ' in the preliminaries, and though the way is plain as yet. am
 ' very thoughtful least it should happen to come to such a critical
 ' Point, as that your Honour should be under a necessity either
 ' not to Treat, or (put off the Governour and) come to *Arrow-*
 ' *sick* which is somewhat likely if you return a peremptory Re-
 ' fusal to their Request of Meeting in this River, except you have-
 ' the *Penobscots* first with you at *Falmouth*, and if they are
 ' not arrived (as I would fain persuade my self they are) it may
 ' succeed well if you please lovingly to detain these Messengers
 ' a Day or two, to gain time so as to hear from Capt. *Gyles* ere
 ' you give an Answer, unless it please you to come to the Mouth
 ' of this River. The Indians wait, and I have time only to
 ' plead your Honour's Pardon if I have exceeded, and that I
 ' may Subscribe as in Heart I am Your Honour's

most Obedient humble Servant,

Joseph Heath.

Please to direct me whether I ought to continue Supplying
 these Indians with Provisions in Case of a Demur upon meeting
 at the Place your Honour thinks proper for the Conference.

Which Letters being communicated to His Majesties Council, they were of Advice the following Letter should be wrote in Answer thereto, *Viz.*

FALMOUTH, JULY 11th, 1727

GOOD FRIENDS,

I am this Day arrived from *Boston* at this place to receive of your Tribes a Personal Ratification of the late Treaty of Peace Ratified here by the *Penobsots* for you as well as for themselves, in which I do sincerely aim at the good of all your Tribes, and have no other view but to transmit by the help of GOD, a lasting Peace to your and our Children, and if any of our Brethren of *Penobsot* are with you I Salute them all, and desire them to come with you here, which Place I have chosen as the most suitable on all Accounts, and where I have provided all Accommodations both for you and my self, with the Gentlemen of the Government who are attending me here. Upon my Arrival I received your Message by Capt. *John* and *Squaduck*, and I Salute you all kindly, I observe you have come so far with Difficulty, and therefore I would see you at *Sagadahock* or *Arowsik*; to which I answer, if I had apprehended any Difficulty in your coming I would have made it more easy by providing a Vessel and Necessaries for your better Accommodation in your way hither, however to prevent any further Difficulty, I have now sent Capt. *Sanders* to Transport you here where I expect you, with whom by God's Blessing you may have an easy and safe Conduct and Passage. Here is also the Honourable *John Wentworth Esq*; Lieut. Governour of the Province of *New-Hampshire*, with His Majesties Council of that Province, and a Number of Gentlemen of that Government, and also Major. *Paul Mascarene* from the Government of *Nova-Scotia* or *L'Acadie*, One of His Majesties Council there, and Commissioned by the Honourable *Laurence Armstrong Esq*; Lieut.

Governour and Commander in Chief of that Province attending here on the Occasion aforesaid.

I bid you heartily Farewell.

WM. DUMMER,

Superscribed, To *Toxseus*, Sagamore of *Nerridgawock*, *Aussumowett* Sagamore of *Arresaguntacook*, *Woosszuraboonet* Sagamore of *Wowenock*. To be Communicated to the Tribes Assembled.

Per Capt. *John* and *Squaduck*.

July 17th.

Three Indian Messengers came Express to acquaint His Honour that the *Nerridgawock* and *Wowenock* Tribes were arrived, and designed presently to come and wait on His Honour, and for that end had sent them first to acquaint His Honour of their Arrival.

ANNO REGNI REGIS GEORGH MAGNE BRITANNIE &C. DECIMO
TERTIO.

At a CONFERENCE begun and held at *Falmouth*, in *Casco-Bay* July 17th, *Annoque Domini* 1727. for the further and personal Ratification (by the *Nerridgawock*, *Arresaguntacook* and *Wowenock* Tribes of Indians &c.) of the late Treaty of Peace had with the Eastern Indians at *Boston*, By and Between His Honour WILLIAM DUMMER Esq, Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief in and over His Majesties Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*, The Honourable *Wm. Tailer* Esq; *John Wheelwright* Esq; *Addington Davenport* Esq; *Thomas Fitch* Esq., *Joseph Hammond* Esq; *Samuel Thaxter* Esq; *John Stoddard* Esq; *John Chandler* Esq; and *William Pepperell* Esq; His Majesties Council of said Province being Present.

The Honourable JOHN WENTWORTH Esq: Lieut. Governour,

and Commander in Chief of His Majesties Province of *New-Hampshire* in *New England*, being attended by *George Jaffery* Esq; *Shadrach Walton* Esq; *Richard Wibird* Esq; of His Majesties Council of said Province. And Major PAUL MASCARENE, commissioned by the Honourable LAURENCE ARMSTRONG Esq; Lieut. Governor and Commander in Chief of His Majesties Province of *Nova Scotia* or *L'Acadie*.

On the One Part,

And

MOXUS Chief Sachem and Sagamore of the *Nerridgawock* Tribe, *Soussack* Second Chief of the said Tribe, *Nagiscoig* alias Capt. *John*, *Suequaunemaug*, *Pierre*, *Terramogus's* Son, *Wiworna* alias *Sheepscot Jo*, *Edaunteeno*, *Medockewando*, *Mendowett*, *Whawherett*, Chiefs and others of the said Tribe of *Nerridgawock*, *Auyaummowett*, Captain and Councillor of the *Arresaguntacook* Tribe, Brother to the Chief Sachem and Delegated by the said Tribe in his Brothers Absence, *Pierresongek*, *Loror*, *Backbaunumbawmett*, *Sabbatist*, *Stzaubauckaum*, *Maguowaudoek*, *Schowess*, *Squaduke*, *Baquaburur* alias *Nathaniel*, *Saaroom*, *Erremaneeseck Shawssseen*, *Praussoway*, *Suzack*, Son of *Beawando*, Chiefs and others of the said Tribe of *Arresaguntacook*, *Nemmadgeen* and *Woossauraboonett* Captains and Councillors, Two of the Chiefs of the *Wowenock* Tribe, and delegated by them, Accompanied by *Auwemmonett* the Chief Sachems Son, *Wenerramett*, *Paterramett*, *Saawerramett*, *Quinoise*, Chiefs, and others of the said Tribe of *Wowenock*, *Wenongonett* alias *Wenemowett*, Chief Sachem of the *Penobscot* Tribe, *Espeguheat* Second Chief of the said Tribe, The Four Indian Delegates, viz. *Saguaarum* alias *Loron*, *Arexis*, *Francois Xavier*, *Meganumbee*, with the underwritten Chiefs and others of the said Tribe, who were not present at the Conference last Year, viz. *Squaduke* alias Capt. *Lovis*, *Edowauhkenkti*, *Thomau*, *Omporowesk Tszauwanuet*, *Sabbattist*, *Abenquind*, *Erremaumeck*, *Parassowa*, *Thomau*,

Mamderroquid, Arexis Junr. Neektauacwitt, Joseph, Pauter-
ramew, Stawneseress, Junr. and the other Chiefs and others
of the said Tribe of *Penobscot*, attending.

On the other Part.

John Wainwright Esq: who was by commission appointed
Clerk to His Honour the Lieutenant Governour and Council in
the present Negociation, and Sworn to the faithful Discharge
of his Duty, officiated in his said Trust accordingly.

Capt. John Gyles	} Interpreters.
Capt. Joseph Beane	
Capt. Samuel Jordan.	

Lient Gov. Dunmer. I am glad to see you all here, you
are Welcome to *Casco*, I would have you all look cheerfully,
for we are all Friends.

Lt. Gov. Interpreters, Tell the Indians you are now to be
Sworn to Interpret truly and faithfully during the Conference
between us, and them, and then the Interpreters were Sworn
accordingly.

Wiworna of Nerridjawock. As your Honour was pleased
to say, you were glad to see us all here, so we say to you, we
are very glad to see you here. It is God's pleasure that we
should see one another, and we rejoyce at it. You sent two
Messengers to us Last Year, Arexis and Francois Xavier, to
come to see you, and we are come here accordingly, that is, the
Nerridgawocks and Wowenocks, The Arresaguntacooks are not
arrived, but we suppose they will come by and by, and on their
Arrival they will also come and wait on Your Honour.

Lt. Gov. I desire to know how many of your Two Tribes
there are here, that I may make the necessary Provisions for
Supplies.

Wiworna. Of the Nerridgawocks there are Forty in all.
and of the Wowenocks Fifteen.

Lt. Gov. I'll take care of Provisions for you, and I would

have each Tribe choose a Man to receive the Provisions, and let me have their names, that so there may be no mistake.

Wiworna. We desire there may be two Seals on Paper, one for each Tribe to be sent by the persons who receive the Provisions, which will prevent Mistakes.

Lt. Gov. I like it well, and it shall be so Ordered.

POST MERIDIEM.

PRESENT Lieut. Governour DUMMER, with His Majesties Council of the *Massachusetts-Bay*.

Lieut. Governour WENTWORTH &c. As in the Morning. And The several Tribes of Indians with Auyaummowett a Chief of the Arresaguntacook Tribe, and others of the said Tribe.

Lt. Gov. Dummer. Interpreters, Tell the Arresaguntacooks they are all welcome here, and bid them come forth, and I'll shake hands with them.

Auyaummowett. We are come to wait on your Honour to day, being the first day of our Arrival, which is according to our custom, we are not all got together yet, only some of our Elderly Men, the Young Men are not as yet come, we are very glad to see your Honour here, and the rest of the Gentlemen, and we look upon it, as though we see all the Gentlemen of *Boston* and *Piscataqua* here, this is all we have to say to day, we come now only to pay our Respects to your Honour.

Lt. Gov. We are very glad to see you.

Capt. *Nathaniel (Indian)* We desire the Interpreters would be very careful in Interpreting that they would not lean to one side nor the other during the Conference.

Lt. Gov. The Interpreters were Sworn in the Morning before us and the Tribes that were here then, that they should well and truly, and faithfully Interpret what should be said to them on either side during the Treaty.

Lt. Gov. How do your wives and children do, are they all well?

Indians. We thank your Honour, they are very well ?

Lt Gov. I am glad to hear it, you are all wellcome into this Country.

Indians. We had one Man taken Sick Yesterday.

Lt. Gov. Will you have a Doctor sent to him ?

Indians. We thank your Honour, we would have a Doctor if you please.

Lt. Gov. You shall have a Doctor to visit the Sick Man.

Indians. We are very thankful that it has Pleased God we are arrived in Safety, and that we Live to see the Faces of one another, and desire your Honour would let us know when you would see us that we may enter on Business.

Lt. Gov. I am always ready, and it shall be as soon as you will.

Auyaummowett. That is not with me, I have not the Command of that, but when your Honour pleases I am ready to enter on the Business you were pleased to send to us upon.

Lt Gov. It is very well, I shall let you know.

Wednesday, July, 19th, 1727.

Present as Before.

Lieut. Governour *Dummer*. Good Friends. It is very Acceptable to me and the Gentlemen of the several English Governments now Assembled to see so good an Appearance of the respective Tribes of *Nerridgawocks*, *Arresaguntacooks* and *Wowenocks*, and I make no doubt but you are come with honest Hearts and firm Resolutions Personally, and in a Publick Manner to Ratifie and Confirm the Peace, which the *Penobscots* not only for themselves but as Authorized by you, have with so much Industry and Faithfulness made and concluded. Since which the several Articles thereof have been communicated to you by the said Tribe, so that there now remains nothing but that you Personally manifest your consent by setting your Hands and Seals thereto (as the *Penobscots* have already done) and for

that end, the said Articles shall be distinctly Read over and faithfully Interpreted to you.

Auyauwomett. We have heard several Times of the Treaty, and we desire to hear it again.

Lt. Gov. It is very well, You shall hear it, I brought the Articles for that purpose.

The Articles were accordingly read and Interpreted, as also the Ratification of the said Articles made by the *Penobscots* for themselves and the other Tribes in *August* last, which is in the Words following *Viz.*

The SUBMISSION and AGREEMENT of the Delegates of the *Eastern Indians.*

Whereas the several Tribes of the Eastern Indians *Viz.* The *Penobscot*, *Nerridgawock*, *St. Johns*, *Cape Sables*, and other Tribes Inhabiting within His Majesties Territories of *New England* and *Nova Scotia*, who have been engaged in the present War, from whom we, *Saguaarum* alias *Loron*, *Arexis*, *Francois Xavier*, & *Meganumbee*, are Delegated and fully Impowered to enter into Articles of Pacification with His Majesties Governments of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, *New-Hampshire* and *Nova Scotia*, have contrary to the several Treaties they have Solemnly entred into with the said Governments, made an Open Rupture, and have continued some Years in Acts of Hostility against the Subjects of His Majesty King *GEORGE* within the said Governments.

They being now sensible of the Miseries and Troubles they have involved themselves in, and being desirous to be restored to His Majesties Grace and Favour, and to Live in Peace with all His Majesties Subjects of the said Three Governments, and the Province of *New York* and Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Rhode Island* and that all former Acts of Injury be forgotten, have Concluded to make, and we do by these Presents in the Name and Behalf of the said Tribes, make Our Submission unto

His most Excellent Majesty GEORGE by the Grace of GOD of *Great Britain, France and Ireland*, KING Defender of the Faith, &c. in as Full and Ample Manner, as any of our Predecessors have heretofore done.

And we do hereby promise and engage with the Honourable WILLIAM DUMMER Esq ; as he is Lieutenant Governour and Commander in Chief of His Majesties Province of the *Massachusetts Bay* and with the Governours or Commanders in Chief of the said Province for the Time being, *That is to say.*

We the said Delegates for and in behalf of the several Tribes abovesaid, Do Promise and Engage, that at all times for Ever, from and after the Date of these Presents, We and They will Cease and Forbear all Acts of Hostility, Injuries and Discords towards all the Subjects of the Crown of *Great Britain*, and not offer the least Hurt, Violence or Molestation to them or any of them in their Persons or Estates, But will hence forward hold and maintain a firm and constant Amity and Friendship with all the English, and will never confederate or combine with any other Nation to their Prejudice.

That all the Captives taken in this present War, shall at or before, the Time of the further Ratification of this Treaty be restored without any Ransom or Payment to be made by them or any of them.

That His Majesty's Subjects the English shall and may peaceably and quietly enter upon, improve and for ever enjoy all and singular their Rights of Land and former Settlements, Properties and Possessions within the Eastern parts of the said Province of the *Massachusetts Bay*, together with all Islands, Isletts, Shoars, Beaches and Fishery within the same, without any Molestation or Claims by us or any other Indians, and be in no ways Molested, Interrupted or Disturbed therein. Saving unto the *Penobscot, Nerridgawock*, and other Tribes

within His Majesties Province aforesaid, and their Natural Descendants repectively, all their Lands, Liberties and Properties not by them conveyed or Sold to or Possessed by any of the English Subjects as aforesaid, as also the Priviledge of Fishing, Hunting, and Fowling as formerly.

That all Trade and Commerce which hereafter may be Allowed betwixt the English and Indians, shall be under such Management and Regulation as the Government of the *Massachusetts* Province shall Direct.

If any Controversie or Difference at any time hereafter happen to arise between any of the English and Indians for any real or supposed Wrong or Injury done on either side, no Private Revenge shall be taken for the same but proper Application shall be made to His Majesties Government upon the place for Remedy or Redress thereof in a due course of Justice.

We Submitting Our selves to be Ruled and Governed by His Majesty's Laws, and desiring to have the Benefit of the same.

We also the said Delegates, in Behalf of the Tribes of Indians, inhabiting within the French Territories, who have Assisted us in this War, for whom we are fully Impowered to Act in this present Treaty, DO hereby Promise and Engage, that they and every of them shall henceforth Cease and Forbear all Acts of Hostility Force and Violence towards all and every the Subjects of His Majesty the King of Great Britain.

We do further in Behalf of the Tribe of the *Penobscot* Indians, promise and engage, that if any of the other Tribes intended to be Included in this Treaty, shall notwithstanding refuse to Confirm and Ratifie this present Treaty entred into on their Behalf and continue or Renew Acts of Hostility against the English, in such case the said *Penobscot* Tribe shall joine their Young Men with the English in reducing them to Reason.

In the next place we the aforementioned Delegates Do promise and engage with the Honourable JOHN WENTWORTH Esq; as

He is Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief of His Majesties Province of *New Hampshire*, and with the Governours and Commader in Chief of the said Province for the time being, that we and the Tribes we are deputed from will henceforth cease and forbear all Acts of Hostility, Injuries & Discords towards all the Subjects of His Majesty King GEORGE within the said Province. And we do understand and take it that the said Government of *New Hampshire* is also included and comprehended in all and every the Articles aforegoing excepting that respecting the regulating the Trade with us.

And further we the aforementioned Delegates do Promise and Engage with the Honourable LAWRENCE ARMSTRONG Esq; Lieutenant Governour and Commander in Chief of His Majesties Province of *Nova Scotia* or *L'Acadie* to live in peace with His Majesties Good Subjects and their Dependants in that Government according to the Articles agreed on with Major PAUL MASCARENE commissioned for that purpose, and further to be Ratified as mentioned in the said Articles.

That this present Treaty shall be Accepted Ratified and Confirmed in a Publick and Solemn manner by the Chiefs of the several Eastern Tribes of Indians included therein at *Falmouth* in *Casco Bay* some time in the Month of *May* next. In *Testimony* whereof we have Signed these Presents, and Affixed Our Seals. Dated at the Council Chamber in *Boston* in *New England*, this Fifteenth Day of December, Anno Domini, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty-five, Annoque Regni Regis GEORGIJ, Magnæ Britanniae, &c. Duodecimo.

Sig.

Sauguaarum



alias *Loron* [*L. S.*]

Sig.

Arerux  [L. S.]

Sig.

Francois  *Xavier* [L. S.]

Sig.

Mayanumbee  [L. S.]

Done in the presence of the Great and General Court or Assembly of the Province of the *Massachuestts Bay* aforesaid, being first Read distinctly, and Interpreted by Capt. *John Gyles*, Capt. *Samuel Jordan*, and Capt. *Joseph Bane*, Sworn Interpreters.

Attest J. WILLARD, Secr.

The Ratification of the aforesaid Articles made by the *Penobscot* Tribe, is Engrossed on the Original Articles in these words. We the under-written *Wenemouett* Chief Sachem and Sagamore of the *Penobscot* Tribe, and others the Chiefs, with the rest of the said Tribe now convented, having had the within Articles of Peace distinctly & deliberately Read over and Interpreted to us. Do by these Presents, in a Publick & Solemn manner, as well for our Selves as for all the within mentioned Tribes from whom we are delegated and fully impowered, Ratifie Affirm and Confirm all and Singular the within written Articles of Peace to His most Sacred Majesty King GEORGE and that the same and each of them be, and shall continue and remain to be in full Force, Efficacy, and Power, to all Intents and purposes whatsoever. DONE and concluded at *Falmouth*

in *Casco-Bay*, before His Honour WILLIAM DUMMER Esq; Lieutenant Governour Commander in Chief of His Majesties Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*, And His Majesties Council of the said Province. The Honourable JOHN WENTWORTH Esq; Lieutenant Governour of His Majesties Province of *New-Hampshire*, and several of His Majesties Council of the said Province, and Major PAUL MASCARENE, Delegated from His Majesties Province of *Nova-Scotia* or *L'Acadie*, and the several Gentlemen that Subscribe hereto. Witness Our Hands and Seals the Fifth Day of *August*, in the Thirteenth Year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord GEORGE, by the Grace of GOD, of *Great Britain, France and Ireland*, KING, Defender of the Faith &c. *Annoque Domini*, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty-Six. Signed by WEN-EMOUETT, Chief Sachem, and all the others of the Chiefs and others of the *Penobscot* Tribe aforementioned.

Auyaumowett. What we have heard from your Honour at present we shall take into Consideration 'till to Morrow, and then you shall hear from us; as for the Articles which have been read over to us, we have heard of them, but never heard them read so fully to us, and are very glad we have now heard of them, for we came for that purpose. As we are now sitting here before your Honour and see the Faces of one another, we say, This is the Place which GOD has appointed for us to see one another at, and as GOD is the Master of Prayer, we pray he would direct us all in the ways that may tend to Peace, and we desire your Honour would let us know and be so free as to hide nothing from us, and if we say any thing that is amiss or look like an affront, that you would let us know it that we may avoid it, and we shall be so on our part as to keep nothing back nor hide any thing from you in the Treaty, we ought to join heartily and be strong in the Affair, it is of great Weight and Moment, it weighs heavy. We have said.

Lt. Gov. I shall say nothing but what is exactly agreeable to the Articles of Peace, for that is what I design firmly to stand to, and if you will do the same, by the Help of GOD, all things will be well.

Auyaumowett. We shall answer your Honour to Morrow, if you will give us the Liberty of considering of it to Night.

Lt. Gov. I would now have you hear the other part, which I have Signed, because you will not be able to make your Answer so fully without it.

The Instrument His Honour Signed on the part of the *Massachusetts Bay*, which is in the Words following, was accordingly Read and Interpreted, *Viz.*

(	<i>Loc. Sig.</i>	)	By the Honourable WILLIAM DUMMER
(	<i>Prov. de</i>	)	Esq; Lieutenant Governour & Commander
(	<i>Massa Bay</i>	)	in Chief of His Majesties Province of the
(	<i>Nov. Ang.</i>	)	<i>Massachusetts-Bay in New-England.</i>

Whereas *Sauguaarum* alias *Loron*, *Arexus*, *Francois*, *Xavier* and *Meganumbee*, the Delegates from the Tribes of *Pennobscot*, *Nerridgawock*, *St. John's*, *Cape Sables*, and other Tribes of the *Eastern Indians* inhabiting within His Majesties Territories of *New England* and *Nova Scotia*, declaring themselves fully impowered thereto, have in the Name and behalf of the said Tribes Signed and Executed an Instrument of submission to His Majesty, bearing date the Fifteenth Day of this Instant *December*, therein firmly promising and engaging for Ever to Cease all Hostilities and Violences, and to live in Peace and Amity with all His Majesties Subjects.

I do therefore in the Name of His most Excellent Majesty GEORGE by the Grace of GOD of *Great Britain, France* and *Ireland*, King, Defender of the Faith &c. Receive and Recommend the said Tribes to his Grace and Favour, promising them the Benefit and Protection of His Majesties Laws in like manner as his English Subjects have and enjoy.

That all Acts of Hostility from this Government against the said Tribes, of Indians shall cease, and that a firm and constant Friendship and Amity shall hereafter be maintained with them.

That upon the Indians delivering up all the English Prisoners as they have engaged to do, all the Indian Captives within this Government shall likewise be set at Liberty.

That the said Indians shall peaceably Enjoy all their Lands and Properties which have not been by them conveyed and sold unto or possessed by the English, and be no ways molested or disturbed in their Planting or Improvement; and further that there be allowed them the free Liberty and Privilege of Hunting, Fishing, and Fowling, as Formerly.

And whereas it is the full Resolution of this Government that the Indians shall have no Injustice done them respecting their Lands,

I do therefore assure them that the several Claims or Titles, or so many of them as can be then had and obtained of the English to the Lands in that part of this Province shall be produced at the Ratification of the present Treaty by a Committee to be appointed by this Court in their present Session, and care be taken as far as possible to make out the same to the Satisfaction of the Indians and to distinguish and Ascertain what Lands belong to the English, in order to the Effectual Prevention of any Contention or Misunderstanding on that Head for the future.

That Commerce and Trade shall be carried on between the English and Indians according to such Directions as shall be agreed on by His Majesties Government of this Province.

That no private Revenge shall be taken by the English, but in case any person shall presume so to do, upon complaint and proof thereof, Justice shall be done the person agrieved.

In *Testimony* whereof I have Signed these Presents and Caused the Publick Seal of the Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* aforesaid to be hereunto affixed.

Dated at the Council Chamber in *Boston* this Fifteenth Day of *December*, Anno Dom One Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty-five. Annoq; Regni Regis GEORGIJ Magnæ Britanniae &c. Duodecimo.

WM. DUMMER.

By Command of His Honour
the Lieutenant Governour,
J. Williard, Secr.

Which Articles were Ratified by His Honour, and Engrossed on the Original in the Words following, *Viz.*

By the Honourable WILLIAM DUMMER Esq; Lieutenant Governour and Commander in Chief of His Majesties Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*.

Whereas WENEMOWETT the Chief Sachem of *Penobscot* with others His Chiefs, and the rest of the said Tribe Convented at *Casco-Bay*, the Fifth Day of *August* 1726, having Solemnly and Publickly Ratified the Treaty of Submission made at *Boston* the Fifteenth Day of *December* last, and delivered the same to me, which I have accordingly Accepted. I Do hereby Ratify and Confirm all the ARTICLES in the within mentioned Instrument.

Given under my Hand and Seal at Arms at *Falmouth* in *Casco-Bay*, the Sixth Day of *August*, in the Thirteenth Year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord GEORGE, by the Grace of God of *Great Britain, France, and Ireland*, King Defender of the Faith &c. Annoq Domini, 1726.

WM. DUMMER.

By Command of His Honour
the Lieutenant Governour,
John Wainwright, Cl. Coun.

[L. S.]

Thursday, July 20th, 1727.

Present as Before.

Auyaumowett. I Remember yesterday I mentioned to Your Honour it was a good Day with us, and we should endeavour to

hearken to one another, and I now shall Answer to what your Honour said, I have considered of it and shall now speak. I rose up in *Canada* resolved and forced my self to come here, and know what your Honour had to say; Yesterday I heard what your Honour had to say, I was determined at *Canada* to come, and now I am come to hear what you have said, and what your Honour has said to us I like very well, it is all pleasing to me, Every thing that lay in the way as a Stumbling Block we find was all cleared away before we came from *Canada*. I now declare to your Honour, as the Hearts of my Brethren are with you (making a Motion towards the *Penobscots*) so is my Heart also with you, As my Brothers Hearts who are here now are all with you, so is my Heart and the Hearts of all the Indian Tribes round about us.

Lt. Gov. It is very agreeable to me and the several Gentlemen of the English Governments now here to see you so Universally inclined to Peace. Are you ready to Sign the Articles of Peace to Night, or would you stay 'till to morrow.

Auyaumnowett. Our Hearts and Hands are ready now, but we choose to stay 'till to Morrow before we sign.

Loron. Good Friends, & Brothers, I have one thing to say; Yesterday was an Expression that all former Injuries should be covered and done away, now it is concluded and done indeed, Now we have heard our Brethren say what we have been thoughtful about for a Twelve Month. I have done.

Lt. Gov. I hope GOD will enable Us and you to keep this Peace for ever, and to Morrow we will bury the Hatchet with a Dance.

Loron. Since the Articles won't be Signed this Day, it won't be a Day of much Business, and if your Honour pleases some of the Young Men shall entertain us with a dance.

Lt. Gov. Inasmuch as the Weighty Affairs are concluded upon, I shall order the Signal to be made early in the Morning

that you may Sign the Articles, it will take you up a great deal of Time to Sign and the Witnesses that must Sign also, and when that is done we will consider of the more minute Affairs, and the remaining part of the day I'll spend in Diversion with you.

Friday July 21st. 1727.

Present as Before.

The Articles of Peace being laid open at the Conference, and in order to the Personal and Publick Ratification thereof by the *Nerridgawock*, *Arresaguntacook* and *Wowenock* Tribes of Indians, and sundry of the *Penobscots* who were not at the Conference last Year, the following Words were fairly Engrossed, and then read and faithfully Interpreted to the said Tribes, *Viz.*

The within written Articles Stipulated and Agreed on, as within mentioned by the within named Delegates, *viz. Sauguarum* alias *Loron*, *Arexus*, *Francois*, *Xavier* and *Meganumbee* being distinctly read over and faithfully Interpreted to Us yesterday at the Publick Conference & by Us well understood, and having fully & maturely considered the same WE the underwritten, *viz.* MOXUS Chief Sachem & Sagamore of the *Nerridgawock* Tribe, SOOSSAUCK Second Chief of the said Tribe, with the Underwritten Chiefs and others of the said Tribe for ourselves and behalf of the other Tribes, *Auyaummowett*, Captain and Councillor of the *Arresaguntacook* Tribe, Brother to the Chief Sachem and Delegated by the said Tribe in his Brothers Absence, with the Underwritten Chiefs and others of the said Tribe for our Selves and in behalf of the other Tribes, *Nemmadgeen* and *Woosszaurraboonett*, Captain and Councillors, Two of the Chiefs of the *Wowenock* Tribe and delegated by them, accompanied by *Auwemmonett* the Chief Sachems son, with the Underwritten Chiefs and others of the said Tribe for Our Selves, and in behalf of the other Tribes, Do by these presents in a Publick and Solemen Manner (the *Penobscot* Tribe

being present) for Our Selves and Our several Tribes respectively, Approve, Consent to and Ratify all and Singular the said Articles, and that the same and each of them shall be and remain good valid and binding upon Us Our Heirs and Successors respectively, to all intents and Purposes for ever. DONE at *Falmouth* in *Casco-Bay* the Twenty first Day of *July* in the Thirteenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George, by the Grace of GOD of *Great Britain, France, and Ireland*, KING, Defender of the Faith &c. and in the year of our Lord, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty Seven. And then the Articles were accordingly Ratified by Signing, Sealing and Delivering the same by the aforementioned *Moxus* Chief Sachem of *Nerridgauwock*, *Soossauck* Second Chief of the said Tribe with all the others aforementioned of the said Tribe, *Auyaum-mowett* Captain and Councillor of the *Arresaguntacook* Tribe, with all the others of the said Tribe aforementioned, *Woossaur-rabonett* and *Nemmadgeen*, Captains and Councillors of the *Wovenock* Tribe, with all the others of the said Tribe aforementioned, and also by those Chiefs and others of the *Penobscot* Tribe aforementioned, who were not present at the Conference the last Year.

Tuesday, July 25th, 1727.

Present as Before.

Lieut. Gov. Dummer. You are sensible how far I have performed the Article in the Treaty, respecting the Captives, that I have generously restored them, and now I justly expect the Performance of that Article on your Part.

¶ I have received Information from some of the English Inhabitants in these parts that they have sustained damage by your dogs, killing some of their Sheep and other young creatures, and therefore I think it necessary when you come into any English Settlements with your Dogs, that you take care to have them

Muzied, which may for the future prevent such Mischiefs and the ill consequences that may attend them.

It is now time that I acquaint you that I expect a full Account in Answer to the Message *Quinoise* and *Ogicksando* were sent upon respecting the English Persons who were taken and carried from *Kennebunk* last Fall.

The Indians soon after their Arrival by Message informed His Honour that by an Express from *Penobscot* they had received an Account by way of *Canada*, that the *Cape Sable* Indians had made a descent on *Placentia*, and destroyed Two Hundred English there. To which His Honour now Answered. *Viz.*

Lt. Gov. Dummer. I have considered of the Message you brought me the other Night by some of each of the Tribes Assembled, with the News from *Canada*, that the *Cape Sable* Indians had made a Descent on *Placentia* in *Newfoundland*, and killed a great many of the English, and although I don't give much credit to that Story, yet I think it is a proper Occasion to propose to you an Additional Article to the late Treaty, in order to deter that Tribe or any other Indians from violating the same so happily made by Us and the several Tribes of Indians who are Parties thereto (the due Observance of which being so much to the common tranquility and Happiness of all concerned) that upon any Hostility done or offered to be done by any Indians, The Tribes who have entered into, and Ratified the Treaty shall furnish and supply *Fifty* Indians with a Captain of their own, and the English *Two Hundred* and *Fifty*, and so in proportion a lesser or greater Number as the Occasion shall require, both the English and the Indians to be paid and subsisted by the English Government, and under the Conduct and Command of such a General Officer as the English Government may judge proper to pursue and reduce such refractory Indians by Sea or Land to live peaceably and quietly with their Neighbours, which by the Blessing of GOD may prove an effec-

tual Method to render us formidable to our Enemies, and thereby happily secure and perpetuate the Peace to Us, and to our Posterity ; and if any other Tribes of Indians shall make War upon any of the Tribes now entered into this Peace, in such case the English shall assist them at their cost and charge with the like proportion of Men as may be necessary. This is all I have now to say, and if you will go out and consider of it, and give me an Answer to it, I shall be ready to hear you on that or any other Affair you may have to offer.

Auyaumnowett. I am very thankful I have this Opportunity of seeing your Honour, and that we do see the Faces of one another in Health, and that we have so good an Understanding one with another, and that there may be nothing taken amiss, for we have heard nothing but what is agreeable ; what your Honour has proposed to us we will call a Council to consider of and then give you an Answer. I have something to say now to my Brother, Since we have had a good Understanding and shaken Hands in Peace, which is and will be known through the whole Continent, As I have shaken Hands with my Brother there is no doubt but that many Stories will arise on it, that your Honour as well as our Selves will be told Stories, but we desire it may have no ill Effect on either side for we are all as one. As we are here now in this Place where the Peace has been Concluded, we desire that nothing which may be spoken out of doors or transiently may be taken notice of, but let us mind what has been said *here* to one another in this Place where the Peace has been Concluded, this is what is to be observed, and what we desire may be, it is the Conclusion of the Peace.

Lt. Gov. You have spoken my mind exactly in what you have said.

Auyaumnowett.—After some Consultation among themselves he proceeded—We have had a thought of what your Honour has said, As your Honour has mentioned that if any Disturbance

should arise on either side that we should joyn to assist each other, We agree to it, and shall joyn with you accordingly if Occasion shall be, and Our Thoughts on this Matter, have been the same with your Honours.

Lt. Gov. That is certainly the way to keep the Peace.

Auyaummowett. As to what your Honour has said about the Captives, and the People taken at *Kennebunk* we have thought of that, As to the Captives it is true we have taken some, but when we have carried them home, it has not been above a Day or two before the French had them, and when the French had them and carried them to their Houses, it was all as one as if the English had them themselves, for the English and the French are Brothers. As to the People taken at *Kennebunk* there was a Boy brought to us, but it was all one with him as with the other Captives, he is in the Hands of the French as others were. We have something more to offer now.

Lt. Gov. You have forgot to give an Answer to what I mentioned about your Dogs.

Auyaummowett. We will speak to that presently. So far we have had a good Understanding in what we have said, I would say now further, I desire your Honour would have a thought as to *Pejepscot* and *Saco*, we shall have a great number of People come over here quickly, and we desire there may be a Sufficient Supply of Goods for us in each of those Places. I have one Word more on Account of the Lands we are owners of that is our Hunting Ground, we desire your Honour would take care that none of the *Mohegans* or others of the Southern Indians may be allowed to come into our Hunting Ground, or even to the Eastward of *Merrimack-River*, for therein they very much damage us, and take our Game from us, which we expect to get when we go a Hunting, but may otherwise be wronged herein, if care be not taken effectually to prevent those

Indians, and their coming among us may breed misunderstanding and be of very ill Consequence.

Lt. Gov. I will consider of this and what else you have said, and shall give you an Answer by and by, in the mean time, the Articles we have agreed to be added to the Treaty shall be entered on the Parchment, with the other Articles, in order to be Signed by us all afternoon.

Auyauummowett. As to what was said about the Dogs, we will take care that our Dogs shall be muzled whenever we come into any English Plantation: we desire our Affairs may be concluded as soon as possible, we hope to Day all may be finished.

Lt. Gov. We will do all we can to Day, and to Morrow shall shake Hands and Dine together, and after Dinner I shall have Sloops ready to carry you to your respective Homes if the Business be done.

Loron. I have something to say respecting Trade, Your Honour told us that in carrying on the Trade we should have every thing as Cheap as it was bought at *Boston*, and that we should have for our Beaver as much as it would sell for at *Boston*, that I should take notice of it, and observe as the matter was carried on; I observe this Spring that the Goods we Buy are Dearer, and the Beaver Cheaper than formerly, I shall say nothing but what is true, this turns out to our shame, when we told the Tribes how the Trade was to be carried on, and it proves otherwise, it makes us Lyars, there are a great many that talk to us in another Language (the *French*) and tell us this Trade is but for a little while, it is to draw us in for a small time and then it will fall, and we shall be laughed at.

Lt. Gov. Give me an Instance in what Particulars.

Loron. I instance, Two yards of Strouds were Sold for three Pounds of Beaver, now it is four Pounds of Beaver.

Lt. Gov. That does not make good what you have Asserted, but proceeds only on the Account of the Price of Beavers fall-

ing at the Market and not from any Rise on the Cost of our Goods, have you not always a Bill of Parcels of the Cost of the Goods you Buy, as well as an Account of the Price allowed for the Beaver, I desire you always would, and thereby you may know that what I say is true, I am surprised to hear what you say, the English Government scorn to raise one farthing on the true Cost of the Goods, and I will be bound to give you Ten for One if ever you can make out what you have now said. I was apprehensive last Year you might have some Difficulty in Understanding Trade, and therefore I told you then expressly that the Prizes of all Goods would be sometimes higher and sometimes lower at the Markets, and that no Body could help it. And then what was said to them at the Conference the Fifth of *August* last respecting Trade, was read and interpreted, which is in the Words following, *Viz.*

“ While the Articles were in Reading immediately after the
“ Article respecting Trade, The Indians by their Speaker *Loron*
“ acquainted the Lieutenant Governour that they had been told
“ the Prices of Goods would be raised when the Ratification was
“ over, The Lieutenant Governour answered them, that they
“ might be assured that the Goods always were, and still should
“ be bought with ready Money, and that the Government would
“ not make any New Advance on their Goods, and for a Proof
“ of it they would always be sensible and find that the Govern-
“ ment would supply them Cheaper than any other People what-
“ soever, that they are acquainted with the Nature of Markets
“ that they are sometimes higher and sometimes lower.”

Loron. We would Instance also in Powder, which has come higher to us lately than we had it ever before.

Lt. Gov. That cannot be wondered at when we consider the War that has lately been in *Europe* with the *Germans* and *Spaniards*, Powder was never known to be so high as lately it has been on that account. If there had been the least advance

on the Powder or any other Goods sent from *Boston* to the Truck Master, I should have been ashamed to have seen you here, but you may be assured there has been no advance at all, and you may prove that always by sending some Persons to *Boston*, to try the Markets, and I shall be glad if some of you will go with me now at my return to *Boston*.

Lt. Gov. Wentworth. I my self am very sensible of the late Rise of Powder a little while ago, I bought Powder at *Boston* for *l. 14. per Barrel*, and since that I have been obliged to pay *l. 19. per Barrel* for it.

Loron. We desire you would have some thought about the Truck Master that the Trade may be rightly carried on. The first Truck Master you sent to *St. Georges* we liked very well he managed very pleasing and agreeable to us, we liked Mr. *Mountforth* very well, we have nothing to say against Capt. *Gyles* at all, he is a Man that is agreeable to us.

Lt. Gov. Dummer. We have Advice that the Peace in *Europe* is concluded, and it is very likely powder will fall.

Auyaummowett. As your Honour was saying, you had a Vessel to carry us to *Kennebeck* River, we shall not have occasion for that, for as this is the place of the Treaty, so we are all here now, but when that is over we shall scatter some East some West, and all go different ways, so that we desire the things may not be sent to *Kennebeck*. I speak for my self and the *Arresaguntacooks*.

Moxus. We desire for *Kennebeck* River, that Capt. *Heath* may be continued to us.

Lt. Gov. We like him very well.

Loron. We shall be very glad to have a Gunsmith at *St. George's*.

Lt. Gov. You shall have one.

Auyaummowett. I had forgot that Article, we desire there may be a Gunsmith at *Saco*, and one at *Pejepscot* Fort.

Moxus. We desire a Gunsmith may be sent to Capt. *Heath's* Fort at *Kennebeck*.

Lt. Gov. You shall be Supplied.

Auyaummowett. I speak for the Indians at *Pejepscot* and *Ammerescogin*, we have formerly had experience of Capt. *Gyles* his good and faithful Services, we desire he may be appointed Truck Master at *Pejepscot*.

Lt. Gov. We must not rob one Tribe to serve another, we can't spare so good a Man from *St. Georges*.

Loron. We desire to know whether we must pay the Gunsmith that comes to *St. Georges* or whether the English Government will pay him.

Lt. Gov. We will take care that the Smith shall charge very moderately for all the work he does, and if he should offer to cheat you or make any extravagant demands for his work he shall be discarded, and to enable him to do the work cheap he will be Victualled at the Block House, at the charge of the Government.

Wenongonett. We were speaking a little while ago about Capt. *Gyles*, we like him very well, and desire he may be continued to us.

Lt. Gov. We wont rob you of Capt. *Gyles*.

Moxus. We take hold of Capt. *Bane* and fix him down at *Richmond* at *Kennebeck* River, we like him very well and would keep him.

Lt. Gov. It is very well.

Auyaummowett. We desire Capt. *Jordan* may have the care of the Trade at *Saco Fort* and be Truck Master there.

Lt. Gov. He is a very good Man.

POST MERIDIEM.

Present as Before.

The Additional Article Agreed to being fairly Engrossed with the other Articles was laid open, and distinctly read and

faithfully Interpreted to the Indians, and is in the Words following, *Viz.*

By the Parties to these Articles

The following Article is Unanimously and reciprocally agreed upon, for the most Effectual Preservation of the Peace, That if any Hostility shall be committed or offered to be committed by any Indians on any of the English Subjects, The Tribes who have entered into and Ratified the Treaty shall furnish and supply *Fifty Indians* with a Captain of their own, and the English *Two Hundred and Fifty*, and so in proportion a greater or lesser Number as the Occasion shall require, The Forces to be paid and subsisted by the *English*, and under the conduct of such a General Officer as the *English Governour* may judge proper, to pursue such refractory *Indians* either by Sea or Land, and compel them to live peaceably and quietly with their Neighbours ; And if any other Tribes of *Indians* shall make War upon any of the Tribes now entered into the Peace. in such Case the *English* shall Assist them at their own cost and charge with the like proportion of Men as may be necessary. DONE at the Conference at *Casco-Bay* this Twenty-fifth Day of *July* in the Thirteenth Year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord King GEORGE, *Annoq ; Domini 1727.* And then the said Article was Openly Signed and Delivered by His Honour WILLIAM DUMMER Esq ; Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief in and over His Majesties Province of the *Massachusetts Bay*, The Honourable JOHN WENTWORTH Esq ; Lieut. Governour and Commander in Chief in and over His Majesties Province of *New-Hampshire*, and Major PAUL MASCARENE Commissioner for the Government of *Nova Scotia*, and also by all the aforementioned Indian Chiefs and others of the several respective Tribes aforesaid.

Lt. Gov. In the Morning I acquainted you that I expected a faithful Account from *Quinoise* and *Ogicksando* of their

Errand concerning the Captives, taken from *Kennebunch*: since the Peace, and did not expect they would have been so backward in it, I also acquainted you that I had fulfilled my Obligation in returning the Captives of the several Tribes in Our Hands and that I expected the like from you, and now I must tell you the Answer I then received was no ways Satisfactory but trifling and Evasive, and that I do expect a better Account, and a just Compliance from you on that Article.

Auyauummowett. Your Honour said this in the Morning, I say now as I said then, I know nothing of any Captive only one Boy, and he is in the hands of the French, I told you when I first spoke that I came from Home as it were by Force and on a Message, I am not Master of those that are in the hands of the French but I will do my Endeavour that they shall be restored when I get back, and shall acquaint the Sachem with what has passed at the Conference, and I shall do what I can to have the Captives restored, I can't absolutely Promise they shall be restored, if I should not be able to effect it when I get home I should tell you a Lye, if I had one Captive in my hand or there were any with us there should have been no need of half these words, but the Captives should have been delivered up at once.

Lt. Gov. I believe you speak like an honest Man, but I am very much misinformed if there are not some among you that do know of English Captives that are in your hands, I desire you would consult among your selves, and give me a more full account to Morrow Morning.

Loron. I spake not so fully concerning the Trade at *St. George's* as I intended to do in the Morning, we desire Mr. *Mountfort* may be sent there. It is very strange to us that now the Truck Master is come away, the Door is fast, The Key is turned on the Lock, and we cannot get any thing now, nor can our Wives and Children get the Necessaries of Life. As

to *Pejepscot-Fort* and the Officer there, though the *Penobscots* know the prices of Things yet they are over-reached there by the Officer, and if we are, much more will the Indians that come down out of the Country, and know nothing of the Prices of Goods, but come to ask if there be a Trade, he says yes, and then tells them the Prices of Goods. There are Four Indians now sitting here that know the Truth of this, one of them is a *Penobscot* Indian.

The several Indians referred to acquainted His Honour of Things mentioned by *Loron*.

Loron. We don't speak this out of Displeasure, but only to inform your Honour that we have been thus imposed on, and that a Redress may be had.

Lt. Gov. I don't at all blame you for telling me your Grievances, though I am sorry you have Occasion for it, you do very well in telling me of it, and I would always have you to do so as often as you have Occasion. As to what you say respecting the Stores being shut up at *St. George's* that shall be remedied, and I'll see that no such thing shall be for the future, and as to what you say about Mr. *Mountfort* I shall consider of it when I get to Court. I am very sorry to hear you have been so imposed on at *Pejepscot* and shall resent it, and must remind you of my Caution formerly to you not to Trade with any private Person when you may be Supplied at the Publick Stores, however if you can't govern your selves in this Affair, I shall give Orders that the Officer shall not be allowed to Trade with you on any Account whatsoever, nor shall any Person under his Command be allowed to Trade with you on any Account. As to what you say in being imposed on, or over-reached in buying any thing at *Pejepscot*, I shall take care that some of the Gentlemen of the Council shall hear that matter to Morrow Morning, when your People will attend them, and shall order that Justice be done them on that head, and Three of the Council were appointed

accordingly, viz. *William Tailer*, *Addington Davenport*, and *Thomas Fitch* Esqrs; and Capt. *William Woodside* the Officer at the Fort at *Pejepscot* who was present was ordered to attend.

Lt. Gov. Interpreters. Turn to the *Arresaguntacooks*, and tell them I shall expect they come to morrow Morning prepared to give me a better Account of the English Captives.

Wednesday, July 26, 1727.

Present as Before.

Lt. Gov. I Acquainted you last Night that I expected to Day you should give me a better Account of the English Captives than what I have yet received, and I now meet you for that purpose.

Auyaummowett. Brethren, As you mentioned concerning the English Captives yesterday Morning, in the Afternoon, and now to Day again, I shall now go from this place, and I shall acquaint the Tribes of every thing that has happned, and shall do my Endeavour to get the English Captives back, but I would not have you think hard, I will do what I can, but I cannot promise certainly, I shall Endeavour to deliver up all the English Captives, those that have been there these Forty Years I will do my utmost Endeavour to accomplish this, and if I cannot succeed in the Affair I shall return back and acquaint you, but nothing shall be wanting that I can do to have the English restored.

Lt. Gov. This Answer is much the same with what I had last Night, it is trifling, and I insist that you give me a better Account, and that the Captives shall be forthwith delivered. I am informed there are several Captives now in your hands, and I suppose the Person that informed of this may be produced.

Auyaummowett. I am acquainted of Five Captives at *Arrasaguntacook*, there are some that are Married, and I can't say

any thing as to them ; there is one Woman at *St. Francois*, taken at *North Yarmouth*, and two Boys and two Girls taken at *Lamprey-River* or *Oyster-River* and *Cocheche*.

Lt. Gov. Where are they ?

Auyaummowett. All at *St. Francois*.

Lt. Gov. I desire to know who are their Masters.

Auyaummowett. The Men are not here, it is not our custom to mention any Bodies Name that is not present.

Lt. Gov. I did not give you Occasion to ask whose hands the Indian Captives were in, and I expect you give a direct Answer to that Question.

Auyaummowett. One Captive is in the hands of *Obwobwauncraway*, *Sabbatist* is the Master of Two, and *Mammarecguonau's* Squaw is Mistress of a Girl *Keeftakescoods* Squaw is Mistress of an old Woman.

Lt. Gov. Is the Boy taken from *Kennebunck* last Fall one of the Five you have mentioned.

Auyaummowett. No, He is among the French.

Lt. Gov. I expect that *Quinoise* and *Ogicksando* give me an Account of the Family taken at *Kennebunck*, they were sent on purpose on that Errand, and therefore I expect they come out in Person, and give an Account of what they know of that matter.

Auyaummowett. They learnt, that the Boy was among the *French*, and that is all they know about it, as they have informed me.

Lt. Gov. I expect they give the account themselves.

The Two Indians came out.

Lt. Gov. I now demand that you give an Account of your Proceeding on the Errand you were sent on from *Boston* last Winter, respecting the Family taken at *Kennebunck* in the Fall, according to your Promises to the Government by whom

you were fitted out, and for your performance of that Service you *Ogicksando* left your Son as a Pledge.

Quinoise. *Ogicksando* had the Misfortune to have a Wound in his Leg, and many other Accidents intervening hindred my proceeding on that Errand till we had an Account from the Indians we met, who informed us they were come to Ratify the Peace. I gave Capt. *Heath* the full Account of my proceeding in this matter, which I suppose he Communicated to your Honour by Letter. I heard when the Indians took that Family, the English pursued them very quick, and the Indians were afraid of being discovered, and so they kill'd three of the English, and the Boy they carried away.

Lt. Gov. When you went away from *Boston* you promised me to make what Discovery you could to bring back the Persons taken, if possible, or at least that you would give me the Names of the Indians that committed that Action, and what Tribes they belong'd to.

Quinoise. The Indian Names are, *Wauhaway*, *Paucaunaumpoijte*, *Acteon*, *Omborowees*, *Manneerhowhau*, *Pier*, *Sungehau-gundo*.

Lt. Gov. Of what Tribes were the Indians?

Quinoise. Some *St. Francois*, some *Wowenocks*, and some *Scatacook* Indians.

Lt. Gov. Of what Tribe was *Paucaunaumpoijte*?

Quinoise. Of the *Mohegans* formerly.

Lt. Gov. Since we have so far happily concluded the Peace, and you have informed me of these Captives, I desire and expect you give me an Account what Measures you propose to take for the effectual restoring the English Captives to their Homes and Relations again. I suppose *Quinoise* and *Ogicksando* have given an account according to the best of their knowledge.

Auyaummowett. As to what your Honour has mentioned

about having a good Understanding in the Peace, nothing shall be wanting to effect it on our part, and we hope the like from you, and if both of us join in this, there is no doubt but we shall mutually Enjoy the good Effects of the Peace, otherwise not, when I go back I shall acquaint the Tribes of all that has passed, and use my utmost Endeavours to restore the Captives, and doubt not but I may prevail to have them all restored when the Tribes hear what I shall say to them to inforce that matter. Your Honour has not given us any Answer to what we said about the *Mohegan's* hunting in our Ground.

Lt. Gov. I have not forgot it, I think it is a very reasonable Demand, and though they are not in this Government yet I shall write to the Governour of *Connecticut* in whose Government they dwell, and acquaint him of what you desire that he would restrain those Indians in their hunting accordingly.

Loron. We of the *Penobscots* desire that Capt. *Sanders* Sloop may be Appointed to carry us down to Our Country.

Lt. Gov. You shall have the Sloop to carry you down according to Your Desire.

N. B. " That at this Time at the Conference, the Representatives present desired the Lieutenant Governour to acquaint the Indians that the Government would satisfy any reasonable Charges they may be at in travelling backwards and forwards to restore the English Captives, upon their delivering such Captives into the Hands of the Government, and for the Encouragement of the Indians herein, that His Honour will please to acquaint them, that the Three Indian Captives now in the hands of the English shall be restored upon the Rendition of the English Captives as aforesaid.

Lt. Gov. I had all the Reason in Justice to expect that I should have had all the English Captives delivered up at the Treaty as I have delivered up the Indian Captives to you, and I suppose if you had been so sensible of the Nature of this

Affair before, as you are now you would have done it, but I still expect that your Chief AUYAUMMOWETT does his utmost Endeavour to have the English Captives restored according to his repeated Promises, and though I am not obliged by the Articles of the Treaty to do any thing herein, yet for your Encouragement to bring in and deliver up all the English Captives into the hands of the Government at *Boston*, I promise you that you shall have reasonable Satisfaction for your Time and Trouble in Travelling backwards and forwards in compleating this Matter, and further for your Encouragement I now promise you in the Name of the Government, that upon your delivering up all the English Captives as aforesaid, that you shall have three Indian Captives now in this Province delivered to you, who were Sold away by the Captors, and though they must be purchased of their Masters, yet I will engage they shall be delivered up upon the restoring the English Captives as aforesaid.

Lt. Gov. Wentworth. I promise the same on the part of the Government of *New Hampshire*.

Lt. Gov. Dummer. I do not intend by any thing that I have said that there shall be any Allowance made for the Ransom of the Captives, which I would have you be fully sensible of, but for your own Charges and Trouble only.

Auyaummowett. We can't give any other Answer than what we have already done, but we assure you we will certainly do our utmost Endeavours to have all the English Captives restored.

Lt Gov. Wentworth. I have a Small Present for you from the Government of *New Hampshire*, which is at the Stern of Our Vessel, and is ready for you if you'll call for it.

Lt. Gov. Dummer. Dinner is now ready and waiting for us, and we will go and refresh our selves, and the Secretary shall get a fair Draught of the Conference ready for Examination in

the Morning, that we may see it is rightly taken down, and then we will take our leave, and bid each other farewel in Peace.

Indians—by a General Consent—We have a right and full understanding of what pass'd at the Conference, the Matters have been often repeated to Us. We have been a long while from Home, and very earnestly desire we may be dispatched this Night.

Lt. Gov. Dummer. It is well, We will endeavour to get things in such a readiness that you may go away this Evening. When I get to *Boston* I shall order the Conference to be Printed, which will come out under thh Secretary's Hand, and Copy's thereof shall be forwarded you as soon as may be, for the use of your Tribes respectively; with which they all appeared to be very much pleased and fully satisfied.

His Honour with the Council and Gentlemen attending, together with the several Tribes, Dined Publickly under a Tent prepared for that purpose, and the Conference was concluded with Publick Rejoycings.

Thursday, July 27th, 1727.

The several Tribes being Assembled in a Publick Manner to receive of His Honour Lieutenant Governour DUMMER the Present from this Government, His Honour directed that the Committees Report on the Complaints of several Indians being Misused in Trade by Capt. *William Woodside*, of His Majesty's Fort *George*, at *Pdjepscot Falls* (as by the said Complaints made the 25th Currant appears) should be Read and Interpreted to the *Indians*, which was accordingly done, and is as follows, Capt. *William Woodside* being present, and hearing the said Report, *Viz. Falmouth, 26 July, 1727.*

Complaint being made to the Honourable the Lieutenant Governour by divers Indians, that they were over-reached, and hardly used in the Prices of Goods they bought of Capt. *Wil-*

liam Woodside, and thereupon we being Appointed to hear the Parties, and to examine and make an Estimate of the Value of said Goods, are of Opinion, that what is over-charged on each Indian Account ought to be Paid them by Capt. *Woodside*, or that upon their returning any of the Goods bought of him, which have received no Damage since they had them, he shall restore the whole of what they Paid him for such Goods, Particularly the Rings *Bartho* alias *Secretary* had of him, and one Half of the Gold Necklace *Toma* had. The respective Accompts are as follow,

Bartho alias Secretary bought of Capt. William Woodside,

One Stone Ring, 3 Stones at	l. 06 00 00.	Valued at l. 03 15 00.
One ditto, 1 Stone	05 00 00.	03 00 00.
One Plain Gold Ring	02 10 06.	01 15 00.
One pair of Ruffles of strip'd Muzlin	00 10 00.	00 10 00.
One Pocket Book 1 Sable	00 05 00.	00 06 00.
One Housewife 2 Sables	00 12 00.	00 06 00.
	l. 14 18 06.	l. 09 12 00.
Overcharged		l. 05 06 06.

Arramaumett bought of Ditto.

One Silk Check'd Shirt 2 yds & half for		
which he Paid 7 pound Beaver at	9s. l. 03 03 00.	Valued at 01 11 06.
	Overcharged	01 11 06.

Pier bought of Capt. William Woodside.

One shirt worn and darn'd,	l. 02 00 00	Valu'd at l. 01 05 00
One Course garlix ditto.	l. 01 10 00	l. 01 00 00
	Overcharg'd	l. 01 05 00

Toma bought of Ditto.

Half a Gold Necklace for which		
he paid 15 l. of Beaver,	l. 06 15 00	Valu'd, l. 05 00 00
One Silk Handkerchief, Two		
Silk Aprons, 12 l. Beaver.	l. 05 08 00	l. 04 08 00
	Overcharg'd,	l. 02 15 00
Overcharg'd in all		l. 10 18 00.

WILLIAM TAILER

ADDINGTON DAVENPORT

THOMAS FITCH.

His Honour then asked the said Capt. *Woodside* how he proposed to comply with the Committees Report in making Satisfaction to the Indians, to which he replied he was not just then in a Capacity to do it, but would make them Satisfaction on his return to his Post at *Pejepscot*, and gave them Notes of his Hand to pay to the several Indians the Sums particularly set to their Names in the said Report on Demand. Which piece of publick Justice was to the great Satisfaction of the several Tribes of Indians, as well as to the Numerous Company of the Spectators present.

By Command of His Honour
the Lieutenant Governour,
by and with the Advice and

Consent of the Council. JOHN WAINWRIGHT, Cl. Coun.

Upon His Honours Arrival at *Boston* He was pleased to Issue the following Proclamation, *Viz.*

By the Honourable
William Dummer Esq ;

Lieutenant Governour and Commander in Chief, in and over His Majesties Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England*.

A PROCLAMATION.

Whereas Articles of Submission & Pacification were entered into with this Government, upon the Fifteenth of *December*, 1725, by Delegates, in behalf of the *Penobscot* Tribe, and several other Tribes of *Indians*, which said Articles were on the Fifth Day of *August* following, before Me at *Falmouth*, in *Casco-Bay*, Ratified and Confirmed by the Chief Sachem, and other principal *Indians* of the *Penobscot* Tribe, in the Name of that and other Tribes ; And whereas upon My late Meeting with the Sachems, and other principal Persons of the Indian Tribes of *Penobscot*, *Arresaguntacook*, *Nerridgewock*, and

Wowenock, at *Falmouth* abovesaid, on the 21st Day of *July* last the said *Indians* did with great Readiness and Cheerfulness, and with apparent Marks of Sincerity and a good Disposition Ratify and Confirm the several Articles of the said Treaty of Submission and Pacification; And on the 25th of the said Month, for the better preservation of the said Peace, a separate Article was Agreed upon and Sign'd by Me in behalf of His Majesties Government of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, and the said Chiefs, and Principal Men of the Tribes abovesaid, for a Mutual Assistance to be given by each respective Party, and for the furnishing their several Quota's of Men, in order to Subdue and Repel any *Indians* that may Attempt to break the said Peace, or commit any Acts of Hostility against His Majesties Subjects or any of the *Indian* Tribes aforesaid:

I Have therefore thought fit, with the Advice of His Majesties Council to issue this Proclamation, That so all Persons within this Government may be duely Informed of the same; And I do hereby strictly Command and Require all His Majesties good Subjects to Live in Peace and Amity with all the *Indians* of the *Penobscot*, *Arresaguntacook*, *Nerridgewock*, and *Wowenock* Tribes, as also with the several other Tribes not herein particularly Named, for whom the Delegates aforesaid have Solemnly Transacted in the Treaty above-mentioned; and not to Commit any Acts of Violence or Hostility against any of the said *Indians*, or give them the least Trouble or Molestation; But on the contrary to afford them all necessary Comfort and Assistance, as occasion may require; And His Majesties Justices of the Peace, and all other Officers in such Places where the said *Indians* may resort, are Commanded to use their utmost endeavour, that no Wrong or Injury be offered to the said *Indians*, and that the good Laws of this Province be strictly observed and maintained in all Dealings and Transactions with them.

Given at the Council Chamber in *Boston*, the Third Day of *August*, 1727, In the Fourteenth Year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord GEORGE, by the Grace of GOD of *Great Britain, France, and Ireland*, KING, Defender of the Faith, &c.

By Order of the Honourable the
Lieut. Governour, by and with
the Advice of the Council,

W. DUMMER.

Josiah Willard, Secr.

GOD Save the KING.

¶ The limits prescribed for this volume will not permit us to insert the four remaining Treaties, which we had intended to publish. They may appear in a subsequent volume.





